

**Venezuela-British Guiana Boundary  
Arbitration. THE COUNTER-CASE OF  
THE UNITED STATES OF VENEZUELA  
BEFORE THE TRIBUNAL OF  
ARBITRATION TO CONVENE AT PARIS  
UNDER THE PROVISIONS OF THE TREATY  
BETWEEN THE UNITED STATES OF  
VENEZUELA AND THE HER BRITANNIC  
MAJESTY SIGNED AT WASHINGTON  
FEBRUARY 2, 1897. VOL 3 (OF 3)**

REPRODUCTION OF VOLS. 1 AND 2 (OF 3), NEW YORK,  
THE EVENING POST JOB PRINTING HOUSE, 1898



*Academia  
de Ciencias Políticas  
y Sociales*



EDITORIAL  
JURÍDICA  
VENEZOLANA

CARACAS, 2023

Editores: **Allan R. Brewer-Carías** and **Leon Henrique Cottin**

Portada: **Alexander Cano**

Imagen de portada: **Sello Postal emisión 1896**

ISBN: **979-8-88895-763-9**

Editorial Jurídica Venezolana, Caracas, Venezuela

<http://www.editorialjuridicavenezolana.com.ve>

Impreso por: **Lightning Source**, an **INGRAM Content** company para Editorial  
**Jurídica Venezolana International Inc.** Panamá, República de Panamá.

ISBN 979-8-89184-935-8



9 798891 849358

VENEZUELA-BRITISH GUIANA BOUNDARY ARBITRATION

---

CF

THE COUNTER-CASE

OF THE

UNITED STATES OF VENEZUELA

BEFORE THE

TRIBUNAL OF ARBITRATION

To Convene at Paris

UNDER THE

Provisions of the Treaty between the United States of Venezuela and  
Her Britannic Majesty Signed at Washington February 2, 1897

---

VOLUME 3

APPENDIX

PARTS 2, 3, 4, 5, 6 and 7

---

0

NEW YORK

THE EVENING POST JOB PRINTING HOUSE, 156 FULTON STREET

---

1898

1899, March 20.  
Transferred to the  
Law School from the  
College Library.

Acclipt. 8, 1899.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

---

VOLUME 3.

---

APPENDIX.

Part 2. Documents from Spanish Sources.....	1
Part 3. Documents from British Sources.....	167
Part 4. Extracts from various authors .....	219
Part 5. Documents from Diplomatic Sources.....	257
Part 6. Miscellaneous Documents.....	295
Part 7. Documents, whose originals were requested by Great Britain.....	329



## TABLE OF CONTENTS.—PART 2.

## DOCUMENTS FROM SPANISH SOURCES.\*

DATE.	SOURCE.	No.	SUBJECT.	PAGE.
1602, August 10.....	Don Diego Suarez de Amaya, Governor of New Andalucia.	1	Report on the discovery and conquest of El Dorado	1
1615, July 29.....	Council of the Indies.	2	Recommends appointment of a Governor of Trinidad, with instructions to drive the enemy therefrom.	5
1665, March 16.....	Case of Clemente Gunter.	3	Entering Orinoco without permission from Spain.	9
1680, February 15....	Governor of Guiana.	4	Order to take depositions of Dutch prisoners arrested on the Orinoco.	13
1680, February 15....	Pitri Dirgulian, a Dutch prisoner.	5	His deposition regarding capture of Dutch prisoners on the Orinoco.	13
1680, February 15....	Jan Endriguez, a Dutch prisoner.	6	His deposition regarding capture of Dutch prisoners on the Orinoco.	14
1680, February 15....	Guaray, an Arawak Indian prisoner.	7	His deposition regarding capture of Dutch prisoners on the Orinoco.	15
1680, February 15.....	Governor of Guiana.	8	Order, to the Dutchmen arrested on the Orinoco, to depart.	15
1711, July 7.....	Governor of Guiana.	9	Instructions to Lieutenant of Santo Thomé in case of invasion.	16
1711, September 18...	Certain officers of Trinidad.	10	Certificate of certain acts done by the Governor of Guiana.	17
1723, May 5.....	Don Antonio de la Pedrosa y Guerrero.	11	Report on the state of Guiana, with certain recommendations.	18
1725, November 24....	Governor of Venezuela.	12	Report on the condition of the Capuchin missions.	23
1729, May 18....	Governor of Trinidad.	13	Regarding the expulsion from Guiana of a French Bishop.	24
1729, November 16....	Bishop of Porto Rico.	14	Regarding the expulsion from Guiana of a French Bishop.	26
1730, January 13....	Bishop of Porto Rico.	15	Regarding the expulsion from Guiana of a French Bishop.	28
1730, April 26.....	Governor of Trinidad.	16	Regarding the expulsion from Guiana of a French Bishop.	29
1730.....	Bishop of Porto Rico <i>et al.</i>	17	Correspondence regarding the expulsion from Guiana of a French Bishop.	31
1732, October 31.....	Acting Governor of Guiana.	18	Instructions to prepare a ship to reconnoitre the alleged Swedish settlement at Barima.	37
1731, January 17.....	King of Spain.	19	Regarding the expulsion from Guiana of a French Bishop.	39
1733, February 8.....	Don Pablo Diaz Faxardo.	20	Plans and estimates for Padrasto castle, and location of gold and silver mines.	41
1735, March 23.....	Governor of Guiana.	21	Information as to the Caribe, the missions and the mines of Guiana.	42

\* These documents include not only those found in the archives in Spain but also such Spanish documents as are to be found in Venezuela itself and in the archives at Rome.

DATE.	SOURCE.	No.	SUBJECT.	PAGE.
1743.....	Governor of Guiana.	22	Report on gold and silver mines.	47
1755, April 20.....	Don Eugenio de Albarado.	23	Detailed description of life at the missions.	51
1756, January 29.....	Don José de Iturriaga.	24	Notice of projected <i>entrada</i> .	63
1758, April 11.....	Don José de Iturriaga.	25	Asks for supplies.	63
1758.....	Don José Solano.	26	Iturriaga's comments on the Dutch boundary.	64
1758, December 12....	Don José de Iturriaga.	27	As to boundary and new missions.	67
1761, February 26....	Fidel de Santo, Prefect of Missions.	28	History of the Catalonian Capuchin Missions.	68
1761.....	Joseph Diguja Villagomez.	29	Lists of towns, missions, etc., in [? Nueva Andalucia].	74
1764, May 4.....	Joachin Moreno Mendoza.	30	Friendly relations with Indians to be cultivated, etc.	77
1765, February 2.....	Joachin Moreno Mendoza.	31	Asks for 100 Indians for work on new settlement.	78
1765, April 17.....	Joachin Moreno Mendoza.	32	Asks for help and that road be built from Caroni to Angostura.	79
1769, July 6.....	Prefect of Catalonian Capuchin Missions.	33	As to visit to Barima in quest of Indian fugitives, etc.	79
1769, August 31.....	Fray Jayme de Puigcerda.	34	As to teaching Indians boys, etc.	81
1769, September 21....	Fray Joachin Maria.	35	Same.	81
1770, January 21.....	Fray Joachin Maria.	36	Letter for religious encouragement.	82
1770, February 26.....	Fray Bruno de Barcelona.	37	As to where and what supplies may be had.	83
1770, April 16.....	Fray Joachin Maria de Martorel.	38	Washing feet of savage Indians.	83
1770, April 28.....	Fray Joachin Maria.	39	Holy week in Hupata.	84
1770, April 28.....	Fray Bruno de Barcelona.	40	Washing feet of savage Indians.	84
1770, September 17....	Fray Bruno de Barcelona.	41	Praise of Centurian for his help to the missions.	84
1770, November 8....	Fray Bruno de Barcelona.	42	Conflict between civil and religious authorities.	85
1770, December 21....	Fray Joachin Maria.	43	Progress of <i>Santa Rosa</i> Mission.	86
1770, December 23....	Fray Joachin Maria.	44	Dispute between the Fathers.	86
1771, January 19.....	Fray Joachin Maria de Martorel.	45	Cattle in the Missions.	86
1771, February 20....	Fray Joachin Maria de Martorel.	46	Same and also as to fort on Faxardo Island.	87
1771, August 8.....	Fidel de Santo, Prefect of Missions.	47	Relations of Jesuit and Capuchin Missions.	87
1772, February 6.....	Fray Bruno de Barcelona.	48	Father Garriga's zeal and work.	88
1773, January 9.....	Fray Fidel de Santo.	49	More missionaries asked for; bad state of Jesuit Missions.	89
1773, July 5.....	Fray Jayme de Puigcerda.	50	Movements of Missionaries; death of Fray Fidel de Santo.	89
1773, July 31.....	Fray Jayme de Puigcerda.	51	Urges that missionaries formerly asked for be sent.	90
1776, March 16.....	Fray Bernadino de San Felice.	52	Rumor of a destruction of a mission, etc.	90
1776, September 10....	King of Spain.	53	Foreigners forbidden to visit, or cut timber in, Guiana.	91
1777, May 7.....	Fray Mariano de Sebadel.	54	List of Capuchin Missions.	91
1777, July 13.....	Fray Felix de Villanueva.	55	The new Governor, Rio Negro expedition, etc.	92
1777, July 14.....	Fray Bernadino de Verdu.	56	Drunkenness of Diez, Commander of Guirior.	92
1778, August 14.....	Governor of Caracas.	57	Relating to the uprising of the Indians of Guirior.	93
1779, February 1.....	Fray Benito de la Garriga.	58	As to Barcoleta and Upata; their founding, condition, etc.	94
1779, February 4.....	Don José de Avalos.	59	Regarding the appointment of Don José Felipe Inciarte to found towns in eastern Guiana.	95
1779, July 8.....	Fray Felix de Tarraga.	60	Mention of certain Spanish Missions.	97



DATE.	SOURCE.	No.	SUBJECT.	PAGE.
1780, March 9.....	Don José de Galvez.	61	Relating to the Commission entrusted to Don José Felipe Inziarte of founding towns in Eastern Guiana.	98
1782, January 8.....	Don José de Galvez.	62	As to permit to France to export mules.	98
1782, October 29.....	Fray Benito de la Garriga.	63	Extending Missions toward Cuyuni; to keep out the French; navigability of streams in the savannas.	99
1782, December 31.....	Governor of Guiana.	64	Arrivals and departures of vessels at Angostura.	99
1783, March 28.....	Treasurers of Guiana.	65	Acknowledging donation from the Indians.	104
1785, February 15.....	Capochin Fathers and Associated Judges.	66	As to founding a new ranch in the savannas of Cura.	104
1785, February 21.....	Intendant-General of Caracas.	67	Instructions as to the government of the missions.	105
1787, June 5.....	Fray Thomas de Olod.	68	As to the care of certain roads.	106
1787, December 9.....	Fray Mariano de Cervera.	69	As to an <i>entrada</i> at mouth of the Orinoco.	107
1788, July 10.....	Miguel Marmion, Governor of Guiana.	70	Report describing Guiana.	108
1788, July 10.....	Governor Miguel Marmion.	71	Fac-simile of a page of his report, showing original of the foot note in British Case, Appendix, vol. 5, p. 63.	146
1788, July 10.....	Governor Miguel Marmion.	72	Fac-simile of a page of his report, showing original of the foot note in British Case, Appendix, vol. 5, p. 67.	147
1788, November 9.....	Fray Buensventura de San Celonio.	73	As to forcible removal of certain Indian families.	148
1788, January 4.....	Governor Miguel Marmion.	74	Distrust of the Indians in the new settlement of Sacaupana.	148
1790, June 9.....	Governor Miguel Marmion.	75	Regarding inspection of lands at Cuyuni for construction of sentry box.	149
1791, June 4.....	Antonio de Ventura de Caracas.	76	As to conflict of civil and religious authority in founding missions.	149
1791, July 3.....	Fray Luis de Barcelona.	77	Same.	150
1791, August 3.....	Captain-General of Caracas.	78	Mentioning incidentally the construction of the fort on the Curumo.	152
1792.....	Ledger of the Royal Treasury of Guiana.	79	Three accounts relating to Spanish expenditures in Cuyuni and Essequibo in 1792.	153
1794, June 10.....	Spanish Ambassador at the Hague.	80	Forwarding account for maintenance of Spanish prisoners escaped from the French.	154
1799.....	Cash book of the Royal Treasury of Guiana.	81	Statement of account of the Military Commandant of the Cuyuni.	155
1799.....	Second Day Book of the Royal Treasury of Guiana.	82	Statement of certain military accounts of the Cuyuni.	156
1800, September 4.....	Commandant of Sacaupana.	83	Regarding seizure of American Frigate <i>Defiance</i> in the lower Orinoco.	158
1801.....	Court records, Guayana.	84	Complaint of Canacunama, an Arawak Indian, of assault and robbery.	159
1802, February 10.....	Governor of Guiana.	85	Regarding the proceedings had upon complaint of the Arawak Indian, Canacunama.	162
1816.....	Documentos para la Historia de la Vida Pública del Libertador.	86	Table of Missions of Guiana in the year 1816.	165
1842, May 11.....	Venezuelan Congress.	87	An act providing for a lighthouse at entrance to the Orinoco river.	165

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.—PART 3.

### DOCUMENTS FROM BRITISH SOURCES.

DATE.	SOURCE.	No.	SUBJECT.	PAGE.
1824, February 12.....	Lieutenant-Governor of Demerara and Essequibo.	88	Proclamation revising the militia laws and regulations.	169
1826, May 6.....	Court of Policy of Demerara and Essequibo.	89	Notice of division of the colony into parishes.	173
1830, June 5.....	Lieutenant-Governor of Demerara and Essequibo.	90	Appointment of Assistant Protectors of Slaves.	173
1830, June 26.....	Lieutenant-Governor of Demerara and Essequibo.	91	Appointment of Deputy Fiscal for the Capoey-Pomeroon District.	173
1834, January 28.....	Lieutenant-Governor of Demerara and Essequibo.	92	Notice of appointment of Justices of the Peace.	173
1834, November 6.....		93	Fees allowed for journeys and attendances at the Registrar's and Marshal's offices.	176
1838, September 1.....	Governor of British Guiana.	94	Description of British Guiana.	176
1844, March 27.....	Combined Court of British Guiana.	95	Extract from proceedings—debate on an estimate for the establishment of an Indian village.	178
1850, June 29.....	Combined Court of British Guiana.	96	Rearrangement of the Fiscal Districts of British Guiana.	185
1856, November 27.....	Governor of British Guiana.	97	Proclamation dividing the colony into districts and divisions.	186
1857, December 3.....	The Government of Venezuela.	98	Notice to the Governor of Demerara prohibiting entrance into Venezuela by the River Cuyuni.	188
1857, December 10.....	W. H. Holmes and W. H. Campbell.	99	Report as to an expedition to the Orinoco via the Waini, Barama and Cuyuni.	189
1857, December 26.....	James Shanks, Government Surveyor.	100	Report as to an expedition up the Mazaruni and Yuruari.	196
1857, December 31.....	Government of British Guiana.	101	List of wood cutting licenses and grants of occupancy.	200
1858, March 11.....	Government of British Guiana.	102	List of grantees in arrears of wood cutting licenses and grants of occupancy of Government land in Essequibo and Demerara.	202
1858, June 22.....	Governor of British Guiana.	103	Proclamation altering the boundaries of Essequibo and Demerara and creating new divisions of the Colony.	203
1868, December 31.....	Governor of British Guiana.	104	Proclamation dividing the Colony of British Guiana into Police and Fiscal Districts.	204
1873, July 11.....	Administrator of British Guiana.	105	Proclamation changing the Police and Fiscal Districts of British Guiana.	206
1883, December 31.....	Government of British Guiana.	106	List of grants of occupancy of Government Lands in existence in Demerara and Essequibo, Dec. 31, 1883.	207
1894, October 25.....	Combined Court of British Guiana.	107	Debate on a proposed road from the Barima river to the Cuyuni river.	209
1894-1895.....	Government of British Guiana.	108	Shipping statistics of British Guiana, 1894-95.	210
1894-1895.....	Governor of British Guiana.	109	Report on Construction of roads and railroads in the Northwest District and on the Cuyuni.	211
1897.....	Government of British Guiana.	110	Extracts from the Annual Report of the Government Land Department.	211

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.—PART 4.

## EXTRACTS FROM VARIOUS AUTHORS.

DATE.	SOURCE.	No.	SUBJECT.	PAGE.
1590.. . . . .	Father Joseph de Acosta.	111	Origin of domestic animals in America.	221
1806.....	George Pinckard, M.D.	112	Notes on the West Indies.	224
1809.....	Henry Bollingbroke.	113	Description of the colonies of Essequibo, Demerara, Pomeroon and Barbice.	230
1834.....	Lt. Col. Thomas S. St. Clair.	114	The Boundaries of Essequibo.	233
1836.. . . . .	Royal Geographical Society.	115	Instructions for Schomburgk as to his proposed expedition, with brief report thereon.	241
1862.....	Sir W. H. Holmes.	116	Short description of British Guiana, 1862.	246
1882 .....	Michael McTurk.	117	A journey up the Cuyuni in 1880.	247
1895. ....	Robert Tennant.	118	The gold industry of British Guiana, 1895.	251

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.—PART 5.

## DOCUMENTS FROM DIPLOMATIC SOURCES.

DATE.	SOURCE.	No.	SUBJECT.	PAGE.
1895, February 23.....	Earl of Kimberley to Sir Julian Pauncefote.	119	Enclosing memorandum read to the Ambassador of the United States dated February 20, 1895, as to what Great Britain is willing to submit to arbitration.	259
1895, March 20 ... ..	Earl of Kimberley to Sir Julian Pauncefote.	120	Giving the further information desired by the United States as to the differences between Great Britain and Venezuela.	260
1895, July 20 .. . . . .	Mr. Olney to Mr. Bayard.	121	Urging upon Great Britain full arbitration, and offering the good offices of the United States.	262
1895, August 8.....	Mr. Bayard to the Marquis of Salisbury.	122	Calling attention to statement in "The Statesman's Year Book" showing increase of 33,000 square miles of territory claimed for British Guiana between 1884 and 1886.	273
1895, November 26.....	The Marquis of Salisbury to Sir Julian Pauncefote.	123	Answering Mr. Olney's despatch of July 20, and setting forth Great Britain's position with regard to arbitration.	274
1896, February 3.....	Mr. Bayard to the Marquis of Salisbury.	124	Announcing the appointment by the President of the United States of a Commission to determine the true divisional line between Venezuela and British Guiana.	284

DATE.	SOURCE.	No.	SUBJECT.	PAGE.
1896, February 7.....	The Marquis of Salisbury to Mr. Bayard.	125	Acknowledging receipt of the above and offering to place at the disposal of said Commission any evidence at the command of the British Government, and stating that same is being collected.	285
1896, May 8.....	Mr. Olney to Mr. Bayard.	126	Enclosing letter from the President of the U. S. Commission on Venezuela-British Guiana boundary, asking for citations of authority for certain statements in the British Blue Book.	286
1896, May 16.....	Mr. Bayard to the Marquis of Salisbury.	127	Proposes to call upon his Lordship and communicate the above instruction in person.	288
1896, May 30.....	The Marquis of Salisbury to Mr. Bayard.	128	Enclosing memorandum of certain authorities and stating that a new Blue Book on this subject is soon to be issued. Will be glad to assist Prof. Burr in his researches.	288
1896, November 12.....	Richard Olney and Sir Julian Pauncefote.	129	Heads of proposed Treaty between Venezuela and Great Britain.	293

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.—PART 6.

### MISCELLANEOUS DOCUMENTS.

DATE.	SOURCE.	No.	SUBJECT.	PAGE.
1777, June 20. ....	West India Company (Zee-land Chamber).	130	Directs that, for security of the Colony, friendly relations with the Indians be cultivated.	297
1845, March 30.....	Venezuela and Spain.	131	Extract from Treaty of Peace and Recognition between Venezuela and Spain, signed at Madrid, March 30, 1845.	297
1859, May 5.....	Venezuela and Brazil.	132	Treaty as to Boundaries and River navigation, between Venezuela and Brazil, signed at Caracas, May 5, 1859.	298
1896, September 14. ...	Prof. George L. Burr.	133	As to Schomburgk's physical map and the Curumu post.	303
1897.....	Prof. George L. Burr.	134	As to the charter proposed for Essequibo and Demerara, by G. A. W. Ruysch, June 22, 1808.	304
1898, May 23.....	Venezuelan Minister of Foreign Affairs.	135	As to the Venezuelan, Brazilian and Guianan frontier.	304
1898, June 7.....	Venezuelan Minister of Public Works.	136	As to the Venezuelan, Brazilian and Guianan frontier.	306
1898, June 20.....	Dr. Rafael Seijas.	137	Notes and comments on the British Case.	309
1898, June 20.....	Dr. Rafael Seijas.	138	Notes and comments on the British Case.	317
1897, April 16.....	Davis Francis Turnbull.	139	Geographical description of the lower Orinoco.	323
1896, June 27.....	Eugenio J. Monge.	140	Limits of the Cuyuni savannas.	327

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.—PART 7.

DOCUMENTS, THE PRODUCTION OF WHOSE ORIGINALS WAS REQUESTED BY GREAT  
BRITAIN UNDER ARTICLE VII OF THE TREATY OF ARBITRATION.\*

DATE.	SOURCE.	No.	SUBJECT.	PAGE.
1785, June-July.....	Matheo Beltran, Commander of Revenue Boat.	438	Diary of journey from Santo Thomé to the Amacura, Barima, Waini, etc., and return.	331
1792, March 10.... .	Luis Antonio Gil, Governor of Guayana.	463	As to trouble with the Indians in Cuyuni.	336
1792, April 11.....	Don Pedro de Lerena.	464	Regarding flight of Indians from Cura and advising that Euro- peans or creoles be persuaded to settle in Indian towns.	338
1796, October 8.....	Intendent-General of the Army and Royal Treasury.	467	As to establishment of a Spanish town at junction of the Cuyuni and Curumo.	339
1796, October 14. ....	President-Governor and Cap- tain-General of Caracas.	468	As to establishment of a Spanish town at junction of Cuyuni and Curumo.	348
1810, October 14. ....	Don José Felipe Inciarte.	471	A table showing the number of Spanish troops under arms in Guayana and where stationed.	349

\* These documents here bear the same numbers as in the Case of Venezuela.



APPENDIX

PART 2

DOCUMENTS FROM SPANISH SOURCES





## No. 1.

**Letter from Don Diego Suarez de Amaya, Governor of Nueva Andalucia, to the King of Spain, dated August 10, 1602, enclosing copy of letter from Don Fernando de Oruña, Governor of El Dorado, to Suarez, as to the condition of the conquest of El Dorado, November 8, 1601.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo General de Indias" (Seville), Stand 54, Case 4, Bundle 9.]

SEÑOR:

Upon sending me to serve this Government, Your Majesty gave me instructions to report on the condition of the conquest of El Dorado, by the Governor Don Fernando de Oruña y de la Hoz. In compliance with Your Majesty's orders I gathered information from many persons who were acquainted with it and sent Your Majesty an exhaustive and accurate report of everything, sending in duplicate, first, second, third and fourth copies, so that one at least should not fail to reach the hands of Your Majesty. I ended by saying that, from the journey said Don Fernando was intending to undertake the summer following the date of my said letter, (which was last summer), the truth in regard to said conquest would be brought to light, as well as the deception, and that I should inform Your Majesty of the fact. This I now do, not only stating what I have heard from persons coming from the place, but also sending Your Majesty certain paragraphs, which I send enclosed, from the letters which said Don Fernando has written me.

He started last summer to continue his conquest and in search of the Dorado River, (which, it seems, can never be found,) leaving the city of the Arias depopulated, the reason why, I shall explain further on; and three times he attempted to cross some wild mountain ranges, beyond which, according to the information which he has received, lies the land so eagerly desired by him. Said ranges are rough, precipitous and lengthy, the lack of food there being the greatest impediment to any attempts to cross them, and the Indians who dwell in those regions being obliged to subsist on roots. Not being able to cross this mountain he travelled to other provinces, retreating to the city of Santo Thomé, there being no other in said provinces. From there he went to the Island of Trinidad, where he is at present, collecting a supply of certain things in order to return next summer in search of his conquest. As I am his nearest neighbor, (there being no other Government any nearer, as both this and the other formed one single government formerly), I have aided him as far as in my power, sending to him the strangers and adventurers who have come here. All this I have done to serve Your Majesty as is my duty.

From his own soldiers who have come here in search of necessaries for their subsistence, it has been learned that although they intend to undertake the journey in the coming summer, they are convinced beforehand they will only meet anew a disappointment in trying to find El Do-

**No. 1.**

rado and attempting a conquest. I shall report to Your Majesty on the matter.

The City of the Arias is one of the two that Don Fernando had settled; it is farther inland than Santo Thomé and according to all reports it is very fertile and suitable for cattle breeding and tillage and thickly populated by Indians who, being barbarians, conceived such a hatred towards the Spaniards that they preferred to leave their native country rather than to have intercourse with them, and they retreated so far that, in a radius of thirty leagues from that city, not one single Indian was to be found. The soldiers, being unable to support themselves without the aid of the Indians, were compelled to leave said site and to search for another, where they could rebuild said city, which has not been done as yet. May our Lord keep Your Majesty's life for as many long and happy years as may be needful for Christianity. From this Province of Nueva Andalucia in the City of Cumaná, on the tenth day of August, in the year one thousand six hundred and two.

Kissing Your Majesty's Royal feet, Your Majesty's loyal vassal and servant.

*Note:* There is on the back of this an order of the Council reading as follows:

"Examined on the tenth of March, six hundred and four. No action required. File with the papers of El Dorado." Here follows His Majesty's flourish.

I enclose copy of the letter of D. Fernando de Oruña to Don Diego Suarez de Amaya.

*[Copy of letter enclosed with above.]*

I have received two letters of Your Honor on my arrival in this city of Santo Thomé, one bearing date of October eighth and the other of July twelfth of this year, one thousand six hundred and one. I shall not fail to give Your Honor a complete and truthful report of all my actions up to this date.

From the city of the Arias I sent Captain Martin Gomez, with more than one hundred men and more than two hundred horses (the men armed and sufficiently supplied with amunitions and stores to fit out double their number), to go to and enter the provinces nearest the Rocks (*Peñoles*) where, according to accurate information which we possessed, he was to enter in order to discover the land that has given us so much trouble. Having left the Arias, at our command, at a distance of about fourteen leagues from it and at about twenty leagues off the Rocks, he arrived at the Province of the Panacayas, where there may be from five to six thousand Indians, and which is situated a short distance inland. Upon his arrival he had some skirmishes with the natives, notwithstanding their seeming overtures of peace. He was successful, but although he tried to gather information, he never was able to find out how to cross the rocks and mountains. I had instructed

## **No. 1.**

him to camp wherever he might find food until my arrival with the rest of the army and the apparatus of war which was large.

Now, in reference to not having clearer information concerning the advices we received, and lack of food, although he informed me of the fact, and sent thereupon a request that I should be there in four days, he ordered the camp raised, which, in a body, passed near the Arias. After I had left, at about one and a half leagues from Santo Thomé, I was informed of his retreat, which greatly displeased me. Seeing that I could not help the harm done, I determined to send the same Captain to the Chimera Indians, where I had been during the past summer, (they being well settled and having plenty of food) to see whether he might be able, through their territory, to cross the mountains which have always been impassable notwithstanding all our attempts. There were several mutinies and uprisings in the camp, as well as in this city, although some were punished. God was pleased to quell them all. Upon entering we found that the Chimeras Indians had left for the woods, having laid waste the country, the demon having ordered them to do so because we were to return through that place. On this account it was resolved to leave the horses and cows and to enter the mountains on foot to find out the path. While travelling through the ridges they were found to be well peopled for eight or ten miles with very belligerent Indians, who were given a good drubbing, wounding many and killing one man. Being unable to cross the ridge, they left well tired out, their horses being lean and exhausted, and there being twelve or fourteen wounded men. Notwithstanding all these disasters, and although the winter was coming on and more hardships would ensue, I followed on with the army and determined to leave the horses and go personally on this journey of discovery, following the mountain line closely by land and water, doing all that I could possibly do and bearing the brunt of the winter. I leave to your Honor, whose experience in the Indies is so great, the consideration of my plight. I went from this city of Santo Thomé for a distance of two hundred and thirty leagues without being able to find either a pass or juncture by which to cross, (the wealth and riches of the place being ever present in my mind) and I came out at the River Guanaima Cuchivero, where I found the land and ridge free from obstacles and so much information and news as I have never had before; but the land was so uneven and barren as not to afford the barest means of supporting life, which made it impossible for me to continue the journey unless at the cost of men's lives. Having been informed of another province where gold was plentiful, I went there, and found there, in short, throngs of native Indians, numbering about three thousand without counting those from the ridge; and opposite to them lies the River Barraguan, which, from this point on, opposite the hills, takes the name of Orinoco. It is said that they all have gold and that the land is rich in mines. Seeing the condition of the men, the samples of gold the natives wore and considering the information they imparted, I determined to stay with them

**No. 1.**

and to go to the city of Santo Thomé to obtain a supply of ammunition and order some clothing and equipment for the soldiers; I communicated with the Kingdom and with these provinces (?). I shall leave inside of four days for the place where the army was left, to see whether there are mines in that province, according to the information given us by the natives, and to settle (or rebuild) there the city of the Arias; because there is no doubt that from this place the soldiers may be readily equipped, and that if God has made this place and there is in it what has been always promised, I shall discover it. May God grant it for his holy service, as I cannot do any more than I am doing. I shall communicate to your Honor whatever may take place, and have instructed Captain Alejandro de Castilla, whom I leave in my stead, to report to Your Honor.

In reference to Your Honor's request to report on the depopulation of the Arias, what I have to say is that it was and is the best piece of land that I have ever seen in these Indies for cattle breeding and tillage (pasturage). In the first uprising they killed the Spanish *chapetonés* (Spaniards who come without passports to America), as Your Honor must be aware. Being so fertile, here the city of the Arias was founded. There was an uprising of the natives, who killed the Major; their punishment and seizure was seriously undertaken. By reason of the control exercised over them and the war made against them, the natives refused to sow the land or to come to the town, and by this means the Spanish were ejected from this province, famine being used as the worst kind of weapon, there being no remedy against it. And in view of the discovery, it seemed natural that people should be attracted there and to the City of Santo Thomé, as, should the discovery be made, everything could be restored, rebuilding said city of the Arias.

In reference to Captain Gerónimo de Campo, having noted what Your Honor wrote me in former letters, I was grieved to learn that Your Honor was offended. Upon his arrival from the Palisades I scolded and reprimanded him severely for it, and ever since I have felt that he was resentful and he does not respond as requested. I have told him many times to do his duty by sending his son-in-law to that Government and also to send another man to straighten up the things which he left there and so to win Your Honor's good graces. I think that his desire is to go home on account of the difference we had, as stated, by reason of his having displeased Your Honor. He even tries to induce some of my men to leave which would be against Your Honor's interest and cause me great inconvenience to maintain quiet in these provinces. I inform Your Honor of these facts so that, by reason of Your Honor's position, whatever may be deemed most convenient for His Majesty's service may be so ordered by Your Honor, who may also send me a helping hand, if so convenient, as I leave everything to Your Honor's will, asking Your Honor to employ all the means at Your Honor's command in regard to the aforesaid. May our Lord preserve Your Honor's life and my Lady's, Doña Catalina Bellata, whose hand I kiss.

## No. 2.

**Report of the Council of the Indies to the King of Spain, recommending the appointment of a person to govern the Island of Trinidad, with instructions to drive the enemy therefrom, dated July 29, 1615.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo General de Indias" (Seville),  
Stand 141, Case 2, Bundle 12.]

The Audiencia of the New Kingdom of Granada made a contract and agreement with Captain Antonio de Berrio respecting the exploration and settlement of the district called El Dorado. Among other things they gave him the government of those provinces for two lives, and his late Majesty was pleased to approve, and ordered the arrangement to be sanctioned in 1586; thereupon the said Berrio entered on the work and founded in the Island of Trinidad the town of San Joseph de Oruña, and inland that of Santo Thomé. He died in 1597, and was succeeded by Don Fernando de Berrio, his son, who made some attempts at settlement of little permanence or importance. After that the Council heard that he and all the settlers there lived in such license that they gave free entry at the ports to the enemy's warships of different nations with whom they openly traded, thus contravening the strict prohibition laid down by your Majesty. The result was serious loss and inconveniences, which may be imagined, besides many other excesses which they committed. And although the Audiencias of the Indies have been ordered by cédulas to send every five years to call for an account from the Governors who held their offices for life, this had not been done in the case of Don Fernando de Berrio; it was therefore thought right not to defer it any longer, and a commission was sent on the 23rd March, 1611, to Sancho de Alquiza instructing him to proceed thence to Trinidad in order to investigate the conduct of said Don Fernando de Berrio, his ministers and officers and find out all the faults and excesses of which they were accused and to prosecute any other parties who had been involved in said trade and other delinquencies. Having done so, said Don Fernando, on account of the charges brought against him was condemned to be deprived for life of the office of Governor and Captain General, according to the sentence given by the Council on twentieth of November of sixteen hundred and fourteen, whereby he was also condemned to other penalties; although, later on, taking into consideration certain just causes, which were submitted to Your Majesty for advice, while imploring Your Majesty's grace, Your Majesty was pleased to suspend the privation, at the same time forbidding him to enter into said Province without Your Majesty's consent, and thereupon he came to continue his case in this Court and remains here in Spain. In the meanwhile the Governor of Margarita, the Corporation of Trinidad, the Vicar thereof and Don Juan Tostado, who is governing the island on the nomination of Sancho de Alquiza and Antonio de Mexica, in whose charge he left that part of the Government called Guayana, write to your Majesty, in letters dated 1613 and 1614, that all those coasts are visited by great numbers of Flemish

**No. 2.**

and English ships who with the help of the Carib Indians, with whom they have made friends, are making some settlements, and that in particular they have three or four from the River Maranon to the Orinoco, where they are engaged in considerable tobacco plantations, and that, with the mouths of the two rivers which they have already taken, they are making themselves masters of the positions and products of the natives, and rob the friendly Indians, and do much other damage, to such an extent that if careful measures are taken to endeavour to stop all this, it may be feared that they will shortly make themselves masters of the whole of that territory which is better adapted for their tobacco farms and other plantations and undertakings than others in the Indies.

All these matters were considered and discussed very carefully at the Council, as well as the anxiety which must be caused by the fact that these enemies are making every effort to extend their possessions and strike root throughout the Indies wherever they can, in order to have farms and other trade, and while deriving great profit and advantage therefrom, do your Majesty and your vassals all the injury possible; and that from their presence there, further and greater evils might result, if they are aided by the Carib Indians, as they now are, and they be to windward of all the Indies, so that with quite a small fleet they could do very great damage, besides the fact that by allowing foreign nations so ill-affected to Spain to have settlements in territory which belongs to your Majesty, we suffer in reputation, and we are obliged to consider the remedy and the great need of some one to defend the Island of Trinidad, as there is only one Spanish settlement there, and that so small that there are not more than sixty men who can bear arms, so that it can be easily taken; and should the enemy fortify themselves in it, they would thereby cause great damage to the neighboring islands and to the mainland of Guayana and the New Kingdom; and that by different reports sent to your Majesty who ordered them to be sent to the Board it is seen how careful they are in carrying this into effect knowing how much they may profit by it. In consideration of all the foregoing and other reasons stated, the Council is of the opinion that, in the interest of Y. M.'s service there should be no delay in ejecting them from thence, depriving them of their towns and plantations, and punishing both them and the Carib Indians who aid them; and in order to accomplish this without considerable outlay of the Royal Treasury, without noise and without the trouble of sending at the present time, ships and soldiers to accomplish it, and in order that the Spaniards now residing there and the Christian Indians subjects of Y. M. may have a head to defend and govern them in peace and justice, as it is meet, it has been deemed convenient to appoint a person of satisfactory conditions, a soldier, having great experience and knowledge of the affairs of the Indies, to govern over said province in the service of Y. M. under the title of Governor and Captain-General, charging him particularly to place everything

### No. 3.

in the convenient and desirable good order, using for the same the greatest possible care and diligence. It is believed that a person of such qualities may accomplish this by the aid of his intelligence, the Spaniards that may be found at the place and the Christian Indians; and if, in view of this situation, he should inform that he needs the aid of a few soldiers he may then have them sent to him. Said person to go for the period of four years with a salary of three thousand ducats a year, two thousand to be paid by the Royal Treasury of Cartagena and the other thousand from the products of the land, it being understood that should there be none (products) this amount is not to be paid by your Majesty's Treasury. This is the most moderate salary that can be assigned to whomsoever may take charge of this service, and a promise could be made him that further compensation will be granted in accordance with the results and benefits derived from his acceptance and good government. The persons most appropriate to discharge this duty are the following:

Alonzo de Miranda, who, for the last twenty-eight years has done service on land and sea, and at the beginning of his career in the Kingdom of Sicily as a valiant soldier, sergeant and ensign. Upon the death of his captain he was placed in charge of the company and shipped with them in the galleys, and, when that of the King of Algiers was captured, he was the first man to board her, where he was grievously wounded in the face and right hand; he assisted in the capture of three galleys and other vessels and in the sallies made by the *Adelantado Mayor*; at that time he was in charge of all the artillery and in the capture of another English vessel he was also the first man to board her, taking the captain prisoner, who served Your Majesty with him, his ransom having been set at two thousand ducats. After this he was sent to serve in Lisbon with additional pay and continued enjoying the same in the Galleys of Spain until he was sent to the Indies with thirty crowns pay. Upon his return he met his father in this court in the year ninety-eight when he was the Attorney of the City of Soria before the Cortes. Upon the death of his father he, by virtue of the authority sent him, served that post until the adjournment of the Cortes, having received no compensation therefor. In the year six hundred and six he was appointed by Your Majesty, Governor and Captain-General of the Island of Jamaica for the term of six years: he only served a little over three years, having delivered said Island to the Duke of Veragua when he was put in possession of the State. Having disposed of his property in order to leave Spain and go in the discharge of his duties, believing it was to be for the six years mentioned in Your Majesty's appointment; as he did not serve more than half of the time he is very poor and in straightened circumstances awaiting Your Majesty's pleasure in this Court. In consideration of all this the Council has proposed him for several offices, finally for the one of Santa Marta which Y. M. was pleased to grant to Captain Francisco de Santander, ordering that that of Quijos should be given him and although he did not solicit it nor was he consulted on the

**No. 2.**

matter he has accepted it for obedience, notwithstanding that it is of less importance than those to which he is entitled. Now, he is proposed to Y. M. by the Council for this Government of Trinidad, his person being highly satisfactory and apparently the most suitable for the required work as it appears from his work in Jamaica where he armed at his own expense two vessels with which he ejected the enemies who went there to trade, devoting his care to this, making several public works for the benefit of said land, the report on his Government made by the competent judge having declared him to be an upright officer zealous in the service of Your Majesty.

Sancho de Alquiza has been in the service since the expedition of Phelipe Estroci to Terceiras (Azores). He went afterwards to England and upon his return he continued his services in the trade of the Indies where he was Captain of the Galleons in the Armada that set out in charge of Don Bernadino de Abellaneda and Marcos de Arámburu; he went as Admiral with the first assistance sent to Britain and subsequently conducted another to Havana, after which he was appointed by Y. M. Captain and Commander of Cartagena de los Indias, and returning to Spain on furlough after having discharged these and other duties satisfactorily, Y. M. was pleased to vouchsafe him the Government of the Province of Venezuela in the year six hundred and four where he discharged his duties until the year six hundred and eleven when his successor was appointed; then he was sent to the Island of Trinidad to inquire into the excesses and shortcomings of which Don Fernando de Berris and other residents were accused and having performed his duties and reported thereon he left for Cartagena where he is at present a resident.

Captain Diego Palomeque de Acuña has served during the last twenty years as a brave soldier on different occasions, particularly in Ireland where he commanded a company upon the death of Captain Soto. So satisfactory were his services and so zealous was he in the fulfilment of his duties that in the year six hundred and one he was duly appointed for the place and upon his dismissal he was assigned, with twenty-five crowns pay, near the person of General Don Luis Faxardo. In the year six hundred and five he went to raise a company of two hundred and fifty Infantry by commission of Y. M. The Duke of Lerna by a letter has been pleased to order that his aspirations should be heard in Council and that he should consult him if necessary. In compliance with this, the Council has proposed him on several occasions.

Out of the proposed persons or any others Y. M. will be pleased to make a selection—Madrid, July 29th, 615.

*[On the reverse is the following:]*

COUNCIL OF THE INDIES July 29th, 615.

Considering the importance of sending a person to govern and administer justice in the Island of Trinidad and to strive to eject the enemy from



**No. 2.**

it; and the persons adjudged more suitable for that Government and what is required of it.—Received on the 11th of August, 615.—J. Perez de Contrera.

I hereby appoint Captain Diego Palomeque de Acuña, the other particulars being found in order (the King's sign manual).

**No. 3.**

**Writ of Summons, Deposition of Witnesses and Sentence in the Case instituted against Clemente Gunter, a Hollander, in Santo Thomé de la Guayana, March 16, 1665.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo General de Yndias " (Seville), *Escritoria de Cámara*, Bundle 660.]

**CASE AGAINST CLEMENTE GUNTER, HOLLANDER, IN SANTO THOMÉ DE LA GUAYANA.**

*Writ of Summons.*—In the city of Santo Thomé del Santísimo Sacramento de Guayana, on the sixteenth of March of the year one thousand six hundred and sixty five, Don Joseph de Axpe y Zúñiga, Captain of the mounted Spanish Cuirassiers in Flanders, His Majesty's Governor and Captain General of these Provinces of Guayana and Island of Trinidad, before me, the Notary, deposed and said that finding himself, on the eleventh of the present month, at the port called Arena, on the banks of this Orinoco River, while he was, in company with regular Magistrates and members of the Chapter and citizens of the Commonwealth, engaged in searching for a site within the jurisdiction of this city, appropriate for a settlement and for a fortification advantageous to His Majesty's service, there arrived at said port, where His Honor was at mess, a small vessel with two boys, mongrels of Flemish and Indian, who delivered a letter to His Honor from Clemente Gunter, a Hollander, stating that the aforesaid (Gunter) sent them with said letter to His Honor, and that shortly after, while reading the letter, another pirogue arrived, and, recognizing that they were foreigners, His Honor ordered them to anchor outside until morning, as it was night at the time, to which said Clemente Gunter answered that he had no grapnel with which to anchor, and His Honor ordered them to lay to near His Honor's vessels, and gave orders that they should be watched and not allowed to come ashore until so ordered by His Honor. That on the morning of the twelfth of said month the said Clemente Gunter came ashore where His Honor was, and that said Clemente Gunter was the same person who wrote the letter mentioned in this Writ of Summons, and thereupon His Honor ordered him to embark, and sent him to this city with said pirogue and two Flemish men who came in his company, and the two mongrels and a young negress and other belongings of the aforesaid, in charge of Gaspar de Aranda, Adjutant, and other soldiers His

**No. 3.**

Honor had in his company and guard, to Vicente de Urrestig, officer of the Royal Treasury, in whose charge the Government of this city was left, with instructions to keep them prisoners under watch and in custody until His Honor should come to inquire into and investigate the reason why the said Clemente Gunter had come where His Honor was; and finding that the instructions given to said Vicente de Urrestig had been faithfully complied with, His Honor ordered that for the trial of this cause an examination be held, according to the tenor of this Writ of Summons, of such witnesses as may be deemed expedient to prove the facts, that the necessary proceedings for the proper administration of justice be instituted, and that the letter be filed with this case for future evidence; and he signed the same Don Joseph de Axpe y Zúñiga—before me, Don Juan de Novoa, Notary Public and of the Chapter.

*Testimony.*—In the City of Santo Thomé del Santísimo Sacramento de la Guayana, on the aforesaid day of March sixteenth, one thousand six hundred and sixty-five, His Honor Don Joseph de Axpe y Zúñiga, His Majesty's Governor and Captain General of this Province, directed that, for the taking of testimony, Ensign Juan Moreno de Figueroa, a resident, discharging the duties of Treasurer of this city, appear before him, and having done so, His Honor administered the oath in the name of God and the sign of the cross, as required by law, and being sworn he promised to tell the truth. Being questioned, as set forth in the Writ of Summons, which was read to him, he stated: That having gone in company with his Honor, the Governor, in search of and to discover what is set forth in the Writ of Summons, he left this city on Tuesday, the tenth of March, and that on Wednesday, the eleventh, being in the place set forth in said Writ of Summons, at about eight o'clock in the evening, a vessel arrived with two Flemish mongrels on board, and the Guard having informed the Governor who they were, he ordered them to come up and they delivered a letter to His Honor which they brought from a Hollander named Clemente Gunter, who, they stated, had remained below. Shortly after, the guard commenced to shout, having ascertained that a pirogue was coming into said port, and on asking who they were, answer was made that it was Clemente Gunter; and the Governor being informed of the fact, His Honor gave orders to anchor outside, to which Clemente Gunter replied, that he had no grapnel to anchor with; to this, His Honor replied by ordering them to come on board of the pirogues that were in port, giving instructions to the guard not to permit them to come ashore; and that the deponent saw on the morning of the twelfth said Clemente on shore, and saw the Governor instruct Adjutant Gaspar de Aranda, with other soldiers of the guard, to bring said Clemente Gunter with the others of his suite to this city, and that in reference to the order of the Adjutant, brought for the Auditor, Vincent Urrestig, the deponent does not know of it, as the Governor sent it in writing. But he has seen, after coming to this city, that

**No. 3.**

said Clemente is in prison with the others, his companions. And that this is the truth and that he knows it to be so in obedience to his oath; and he declared that he was about sixty years of age, and signed the same, as did also His Honor—Don Joseph de Axpe y Zúñiga—Juan Moreno de Figueroa—Before me, Don Juan de Noboa, Notary Public and of the Chapter.

*Deposition of the aforesaid Gunter.*—In the City of Santo Thomé del Santísimo Sacramento de Guayana, on the eighteenth day of March of the year one thousand six hundred and sixty-five, His Honor Don Joseph de Axpe y Zúñiga, His Majesty's Governor and Captain General of the Provinces, and Judge of this case, ordered Clemente Gunter, a native Hollander, mentioned in this trial, to appear before His Honor to make his deposition; and having appeared he was asked whether he was a Roman Apostolic Christian, to which the aforesaid replied that he was, and the oath was administered to him in the name of God and by the sign of the cross, as required by law, and being sworn he promised to tell the truth in answer to whatever questions should be put to him; and he was questioned, as set forth in the counts of this Writ of Summons, and he replied as follows:

Being asked to state and declare of what place he is a native, he answered that he was from Anburg.

Being asked to state where he resides, he stated that for two and a half years he had resided at Booruma, a Dutch settlement.

Being asked by whose leave and license he entered the Orinoco river, he answered, that with a permit from Theodoro Saes, Governor of said place, Booruma, dated on the third day of June, one thousand six hundred and sixty four, and that since the date on which he left Booruma, he has spent five or six days in reaching this place, and that a month thereafter he arrived in this town.

Being asked as to why he had come to this city, he answered, that to collect some few debts for clothing sold on credit to two of the inhabitants.

Being asked as to where he had been and how he had spent all his time since he came from Booruma, he answered, that for two months he was sick at the house of Don Miguel Francisco Carrera, of this city, the Governor of the same, Don Pedro de Viedma, being absent, and that he spent the rest of the time on this river Orinoco and its several creeks.

Being asked as to whether the Governor, Don Pedro de Viedma, had granted him a permit to come up to this city, he answered yes, to inform said Governor as to who were the debtors.

Being asked as to what site the Booruma settlement lies on, he answered, at about eight and a half degrees, a flat country, distant about thirty leagues from the main mouth of the river, called Amacuro; that said settlement may have about one hundred and fifty paid soldiers, and up to four

**No. 3.**

hundred inhabitants and about two thousand negro slaves, and that sugar was the staple product.

Being asked about the population of Essequibo, of the same nation, and its distance from Booruma, he said: It lies from ten to twelve leagues to the windward on the same coast of *terra firma*, and that it is governed by a lieutenant; that he did not know its population, but that he knows that there is a fortress with a garrison of soldiers.

Being asked as to whether he knows the population of the settlement of the Velvis river and how far it lies from that of Essequibo, he said he thought about forty leagues to the windward of that of Essequibo; but that he does not know the number of inhabitants and soldiers, he never having been there, but that he knows that said settlement belongs to his nation.

Being asked as to what he knew about the Island of Tobago and what nations occupy it, he said that Curlanders and Hollanders had divided it into two portions, but that he does not know the number of people in either the one or the other portion.

Being asked as to the amount that the inhabitants of this city still owe him, he said that he had given about one thousand eight hundred pesos of various goods on credit, and that this is what he knows in obedience to his oath, which he affirmed and ratified, stating that he was about thirty-six years of age, and he signed, as also did His Honor, the Governor, as attested by me. Don Joseph de Axpe y Zúñiga Clemente Gunter. Before me, Don Juan de Noboa, Notary Public and of the Chapter.

*Sentence.*—I, Don Joseph de Axpe y Zúñiga, Captain of Mounted Spanish Curassiers, His Majesty's Governor and Captain General of these Provinces and Island of Trinidad, do hereby pass the following sentence: Clemente Gunter, a Hollander, having entered this river Orinoco in violation of His Majesty's orders that no foreigner be allowed on said river, ports and jurisdiction of said city, with any vessels, either large or small, on account of the many frauds resulting therefrom, and the great profits which can be made therein, all of which is to His Majesty's detriment and a usurpation of His Royal Rights and the rest of what is set forth in said Royal Orders, I hereby condemn him, Gunter, to lose all his effects seized and inventoried, of which I do dispose in the following manner, to wit: The pirogue with her tackle and rigging will be taken to be used for the trips made in the service of His Majesty and for communication between this city of Guayana and said Island of Trinidad, said pirogue to be delivered upon arrival at said Island to the Chief Lieutenant of Port of Spain, and when at this city of Santo Thomé, to the Captain of the Company of Infantry, or to the person in charge of same in his absence; and the arquebuse and the gun to be delivered with the other arms of His Majesty to soldiers for their service, and the other belongings to be sold at auction to defray the costs which the said Clemente Gunter and his four companions have caused to be incurred and the costs of this case, and the remainder to be applied to the purchase of munitions of war. In reference to the

**No. 3.**

persons of said Clemente Gunter and his four companions, I will examine the case, meting out justice, and I do warn them and do hereby command that, should the said Clemente Gunter and his four companions be found again in said river Orinoco, its ports and jurisdictions, if captured, they shall be condemned to death. Such being my final judgment, I hereby proclaim it and order it to be put into execution.

DON JOSEPH DE AXPE Y ZÚÑIGA.

**No. 4.**

**Order given by Tiburcio Axpe y Zúñiga, Governor of Guiana, February 15, 1680, to take the deposition of the Dutch prisoners captured on the Orinoco.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo General de Indias " (Seville), Stand 54, Case 4, Bundle 1.]

1680.—In the city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, on the fifteenth day of February of the year one thousand six hundred and eighty, I, Don Tiburcio de Axpe y Zúñiga, His Majesty's Governor and Captain General, with the witnesses with whom I perform this act for lack of a notary; whereas, on this day, at about eleven o'clock, I noticed a vessel about two leagues to leeward of this city, in one of the rivers, and having entered said river for the purpose of searching her, there were found on board two Hollanders, one called Jan Cusin and the other Pitri, and two mulattoes of the same nationality, one called Pedro and the other Francisco, the boatmen being Araguaca Indians; there was also in this vessel a Dutch flag unfolded. Her capture was undertaken and accomplished; one three pounder piece was found in said vessel and the prisoners were brought to this city, and whereas it is expedient for the good of His Majesty's service on account of the frequency with which those of said nation come to this river to trade among the natives, and also on account of their perseverance in maintaining such trade and transactions with the inhabitants in violation of the agreements, and that as a result of these transactions this place has been lost several times; now, therefore, in order to obviate said difficulties, I have ordered the depositions of said prisoners to be taken, and this done, such action will be taken as may seem best for the good of His Majesty's service.

**No. 5.**

**Deposition made February 15, 1680, by Pitri Dirguian, one of the Dutchmen captured on the Orinoco.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo General de Indias " (Seville), Stand 54, Case 4, Bundle 1.]

On the same day, month and year aforesaid, I, Don Tiburcio Axpe y Zúñiga, caused Pitri Dirguian to appear before me; and he not being able

**No. 5.**

to speak Spanish, Pedro de Axpe acted as interpreter and was duly sworn by me to ask the questions and repeat the answers in their order, and he promised to perform this duty to the best of his knowledge and ability in obedience to his oath. The deponent was not sworn owing to his inability to take the oath. The interpreter being requested to ask him as to why he had come to this river, he stated that they had left Berbis in quest of some Caribs who had killed several Hollanders; that they found said Caribs at the mouth of the river Orinoco and killed them; that, being short of supplies, they went to the Guaraunos in search of them, and, not finding any, necessity compelled them to come to the Aruacas to obtain them; that the wares they carry are to obtain supplies and not to make transactions and that this is the reason why he offered no resistance when captured, knowing that no harm could befall him, being peaceable. Being asked as to what place he started from, he answered from Berbis by order of Lucas Caudti, Governor of said place (or post) and that nothing contrary to his deposition will be found. The aforesaid interpreter stated that he had performed his duty well and faithfully, in obedience to his oath, and did not sign because he did not know how to do so, one of the witnesses signing at his request before me and the witnesses with whom I perform this act for lack of a notary.

**No. 6.**

**Deposition, made February 15, 1680, by Jan Endriguez, one of the Dutchmen captured on the Orinoco.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo General de Yndias " (Seville),  
Stand 54, Case 4, Bundle 1.]

On the same day, month and year, I, Don Tiburcio de Axpe y Zúñiga, caused Jan Endriguez, a native Hollander, to appear before me; and, being unable to speak Spanish, Pedro de Axpe acted as interpreter, and, being duly sworn that he would address the questions and repeat the answers in the order given, he promised to tell the truth to the best of his knowledge and ability in obedience to his oath. The said deponent was not sworn because of his inability to take the oath. The interpreter being requested to ask him as to why he had come to this river, he stated that they had left Berbis in quest of some Caribs who had killed several Hollanders, and that they had met said Caribs at the mouth of said Orinoco river and had killed them; that, being short of supplies, they went to the Guaraunos in search of them, and not finding any, necessity compelled them to come to the Aruacas for them; that the wares they carry are to obtain supplies and not to make transactions, and that for this reason he offered no resistance when captured, knowing that no harm would befall him, being peaceable. Being asked as to what place he started from, he

**No. 6.**

answered from Berbis by order of Lucas Caudt, governor of said place, and that nothing contrary to his deposition will be found. The aforesaid interpreter stated that he had performed his duty well and faithfully in obedience to his oath, and that he did not sign because he did not know how to do so, and one of the witnesses signed upon his request with me, and the witnesses with whom I perform this act for lack of a notary.

**No. 7.**

**Deposition, made February 15, 1680, by Guaray, an Arawak Indian, captured with the Dutchmen on the Orinoco.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo General de Yndias " (Seville), Stand 54, Case 4, Bundle 1.]

On the said day, month and year, I, Don Tiburcio de Axpe y Zúñiga, caused Guaray, a native Aruacan, to appear before me; and, as he was unable to speak Spanish, Pedro de Axpe acted as interpreter, who, being duly sworn, said that he would address the questions and repeat the answers in the order given; he promised to tell the truth to the best of his knowledge and ability, in obedience to his oath. The said deponent was not sworn because of his inability to take the oath. The interpreter being requested to ask him as to why he had come to the Orinoco in company with the Flemish, he stated that the Governor of Berbis had sent for him to his dwelling and informed him that some Caribs had killed several Hollanders, and that he should come in company with Pitri Dirguian and Jan Endriguez, with as many Aruacans as he could muster, to look for and punish them; that he got ready as many pirogues as he could and set out in quest of said Caribs, whom they met at the mouth of the Amacuro, and killed them and captured eight vessels; that, having run short of supplies, they were compelled to come to the Guaraunos in search of them, they being the nearest; and that not finding anything, necessity compelled them to come to the Aruacas in quest of supplies; and he made no further statement. The interpreter stated that he had performed his duty faithfully and well, and did not sign because he did not know how to do so, and one of the witnesses signed at his request, with me and the witnesses with whom I perform this act for lack of a notary.

**No. 8.**

**Order, made February 15, 1680, by Tiburcio Axpe y Zúñiga, Governor of Guiana, directing the captured Dutchmen to depart from the Orinoco and not to return under penalty of forfeiture.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo General de Yndias " (Seville), Stand 54, Case 4, Bundle 1.]

Thereupon, in view of the foregoing depositions in this document, I ordered that notice be given to the deposing Hollanders to wit: That they

**No. 8.**

must forthwith embark and leave this river, warning them that should they fail to comply with the orders and be captured a second time, they will forfeit all that is found with them and will be punished as transgressors of the orders and agreements; and this will not only apply to this (second) instance but to any other instance, when they may be found on this river. This act shall be made known to them for their instruction, and they shall be given letters of safe conduct, for to day, after which the foregoing shall be in force. Done on the said day, month and year.

**No. 9.**

**Orders of Cristoval Felix de Guzman, Governor of Guiana, to Francisco de Venavides, his Lieutenant of War of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, July 7, 1711, in case of an invasion.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo General de Indias " (Seville),  
Stand 56, Case 6, Bundle 15 ]

Major Don Cristobal Felix de Guzman, Governor and Captain General of the City of San José de Oruña, Island of Trinidad and Provinces of El Dorado, Guayana, Naparimas, Aruacas, Pariagotos, Caribes, Guaraunos and their Royal Forces by the King our Master . . . etc.

By these presents I order and command Captain Don Francisco de Venavides, my Post Lieutenant, Chief Justice, and Captain of War of the City of Santo Thome del Sant° Sacramento of the Province of Guayana—

To be very careful and vigilant of the movements and intentions of the Hollanders of Surinam, Berbis and Essequibo, also of the Caribes and Aruacas Indians who are with the aforesaid people.

To take notes of their pretensions and their forces, and to give me notice of everything.

To hold the Royal Forces in regular defense with provisions and the Infantry well supplied with ammunition.

To the Cacique Don Lorenzo de Playas and his Lieutenant of Guayano and Pariagoto Indians, and Captain Don Antonio Baraba y Bustamente, who is with the Aruacas of that territory, keep them advised and in readiness, that, in case of hostilities they with their men may promptly come to the defense of this city and Royal forces.

At all events occupy the hill which serves as a rampart to said Royal forces, covering yourselves with regular trenches, with enough men to repulse whomsoever would attack said Post, and never to abandon it even if it should take the last drop of blood.

In case you are unable to resist the enemy and, should be forced to surrender, to capitulate honorably, with credit to the Arms of Our King and Master Don Felipe V., over whom God guard.

And you will retire with your men to the Place of Araguacay, where



**No. 9.**

the Cacique Magaracana lives, so as not to leave the Province helpless—procuring safe places for the security of the women and families—and particularly for the Indians so as not to let them be made slaves and heretics.

And of all the events in all circumstances and times you will give me notice so as to be able to help you promptly without delay.

Given in this City of Santisimo Sacramento of the Province of Guayana the seventh day of July in the year one thousand seven hundred and eleven.

Signed by my hand and countersigned by my Secretary of War.

DON CRISTOVAL FELIX DE GUZMAN.  
(a flourish)

FRANCISCO DE VENAVIDES—(a flourish)

By Command of the Governor and Captain General my Master. DON PEDRO DE LA GUERRA Y VEGA, his secretary—(a flourish).

**No. 10.**

Certificate given by Cristoval Guillen de Orvay and other officers of the Island of Trinidad in favor of Cristoval Felix de Guzman, Governor of Guiana, etc., September 13, 1711.

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo General de Yndias" (Seville), Stand 56, Case 6, Bundle 14.]

Sergeant Major Don Christoval Guillen de Orvay, His Majesty's Regular Magistrate for this present year; and Captain Don Antonio Garcia de Cordova; and Ensign D. Martin de Mendoza, Magistrates, do hereby certify before our Lord the King in his Royal and Supreme Council and Chamber of the Indies, and before all other Courts to whom it may concern, that Sergeant Major Don Xptoval Felix de Guzman His Majesty's Governor and Captain General of these Provinces is known to us; that he took possession of said Provinces on the twenty first of April of the present year, and thereupon he passed muster and attended to the defenses of the Government in His Majesty's Service. He went to Guiana to reconnoitre the River Orinoco as far as Angostura, which no other governor has done since Don Pedro de Viedma went to punish the Carib Indians of Caura. We also testify to the truth of the attempt made by the Dutch enemy from Surinam to fall upon the Province of Guiana and Angostura, prompted thereto by their covetousness of the silver mine of Aracafua; and that the work of making six gun carriages for the artillery of Guiana was carefully watched over and supervised by him; that on this matter he issued decrees—to which we refer—by reason of several depositions justifying such act. That, at a general meeting held by order of said gentleman, we were informed of the worthless state of defense of the said Province of Guiana; and moreover that

**No. 10.**

he brought with him a Dutch prisoner from Surinama, whom he captured in the Orinoco and pressed into the fold of our Holy Roman Church, said gentleman, amid general rejoicing, standing as his god-father. And in order that the foregoing be rewarded, be it known that on the eleventh day of July, said gentleman arrived on this island and has been, since then, communicating with our Lord the King, the Royal Audiencia of the New Kingdom the Governments of Margareta, Cumaná and Caracas, requesting men and ammunitions up to this day the thirteenth of September of this year, when he sealed, in our presence, a dispatch addressed to our Lord the King, sent by way of Martinique having done so previously by way of Nueva España and last month by way of the Isles with Don Pedro Caviades with unceasing zeal; and in the testimony thereof we issue these presents in this city of San Joseph de Oruña Island of Trinidad, on the thirteenth day of the month of September in the year one thousand seven hundred and eleven, this document not being attested by a notary public there being none here, and being drawn up on common paper for lack of stamped paper.

**No. 11.**

**Report to the Council of the Indies by Don Antonio de la Pedrosa y Guerrero, dated Madrid, May 5, 1723.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo General de Indias" (Seville), Stand 56, Case 6, Bundle 19.]

1723.—Having gone to the Provinces of the Indies by order of His Majesty for the purpose of establishing the Vice-Royalty in the city of Santa Fé, capital of the new kingdom of Granada and in the discharge of other affairs related to His Royal Service, I endeavored to become acquainted with everything pertaining to the matter, and of all that could result in benefit of the service of the King. I found that through a vast extent of those lands there runs the mighty Orinoco whose rapid flow descends through the Province of Santiago de los Llanos and empties into the sea at the north off the Island of Trinidad of the Windward. On the mouth of said river emptying into the sea, the Castle of Guayana is built on the mainland and its garrison is paid from the Royal Treasury of Santa Fé where they have their funds and during my time I sent eighteen thousand four hundred *pesos* for that purpose.

Both on the shores of said rivers and inland there live countless heathen Caribs. They live without the true knowledge of our Holy Faith as there are no ministers of the gospel to instruct them, because, although the Fathers of the Sacred Religion of the Glorious Patriarch St. Ignatius of Loyola have undertaken the reduction and conversion of said heathen Carib Indians, nothing has been accomplished because said River is open and unprotected and they, the Religious Fathers, have recognized the fact

**No. 11.**

that the diligence of the Apostolic Missionaries would bear no fruit, they being only exposed to perish and die at the hands of said heathen Caribs, as has previously occurred. To the Company of Jesus was allotted, as their territory for the Missions and the reductions of Indians, the Province of Santiago de los Llanos and the Orinoco River, the Company and their Religious Fathers being intrusted with the reduction all along, up the Orinoco river from north to south. The Company of the Jesuits therefore undertook the reductions of the Llanos and founded six towns, went to the Orinoco and there entered into said river and its shores in the year of one thousand six hundred and eighty one, Fathers Ignacio Fiol, Gaspar Bech, Christoval Riedel, Ignacio Toebast, Julian de Bergara and Agustin de Campo, who founded five towns, and while they were peacefully teaching the Indians, the Caribs living on the sea shore and the mouths of the Orinoco came upon them in the year one thousand six hundred and eighty four and, attacking the towns, killed Fathers Ignacio Fiol, Gaspar Bech and Ignacio Toebast; on this account the towns were deserted, the Indians leaving and the surviving Fathers went to the Mission of the Llanos. Later in the year one thousand six hundred and ninety one, other fathers went to the Orinoco taking an escort whose corporal and captain was Tiburcio de Medina. Again the Caribs attacked them in the year one thousand six hundred and ninety three, treacherously killing the captain and causing great suffering to Father Vicente Lobero; and the other Fathers, who had gone there, left for the Missions of the Llanos. After such experiences and the river being undefended, (the fort which His Majesty ordered to be built for its defense has not been erected), the reductions have not been continued, the fathers being unable to go there unless the invasions and hostilities of the Caribs are checked.

In addition to the foregoing it must be added that the river has neither garrison nor defense of any kind for preventing and hindering the incursions of the Hollanders and other foreign nations sailing on that sea, and having several settlements near said river Orinoco, this gives them a chance to freely introduce themselves daily and frequently by the river, going far into the interior and trading with said Indians, exporting from those lands and domains of His Majesty all the gold and other products of the territory in exchange for rattles, knives, cutlasses and other tools and implements of small value. It is not less to be regretted that said Hollanders take with them many Indians whom they make slaves, their souls thus being lost and also their liberty which is so valuable. Should these incursions and trade be continued the Royal Crown may suffer very heavy damage, injury and other troubles, because, should the Hollanders and other foreign nations take possession of said river Orinoco they may go into vast provinces of the new kingdom of Granada and Caracas, they being in the mainland; and His Majesty's principal object being the reduction and conversion of said heathen Indians to our Holy Catholic Faith, endeavoring by all possible means to free them from the utter darkness of their idolatry and to teach

**No. 11.**

them to know and profess our Holy Catholic Faith, it is most convenient to the service of God and the King, as well as to the benefits of the common cause, that all possible measures be taken that may lead to the purpose of his holy and Catholic zeal. Besides the benefits that those souls, in which Christianity takes such interest, derive therefrom, the Royal Crown will have the benefit of the immense number of Indians that can be reduced and converted to our Holy Faith, *great increase in the domains of His Majesty and considerable revenue for the Royal Exchequer from the effects, fruits and other products of those countries, taxes, that they may pay in time* and the contributions that the converted Indians must pay, should the occasion arise, and also the closing of the entrance to said river, preventing by these means the trade which the Indians carry on with the Hollanders. Thus, not only the matter of Religion, which is the principal point, because of the introduction of foreigners in the lands and towns of said Indians, will be dealt with, but also said domains will be insured and guarded from their incursions and hostilities, and besides, this remedy will result in the enjoyment of that which the enemy is so careful to take advantage of, which the provinces of the new Kingdom of Granada and Caracas will be free from the introduction of foreigners into their territory by said river.

In reference to the construction of a fort on the Orinoco river I find that His Majesty has already given the order. While I was examining the documents in reference to the pay in Guayana, to issue the proper instructions for their remittance, I found among them a Royal Cedula dated in Madrid on the twenty fourth of August, one thousand six hundred and ninety seven, addressed to the President and Judges of the Audiencia of Santa Fé, with enclosure of certain reports made in regard to the River Orinoco, by which His Majesty commands and instructs them that, after having been informed of his determination they should proceed to build the fort in the most convenient locality and form, placing in it men and artillery, and that upon the fulfilment of the order they should report, together with the advice of each officer and the attested copy of the acts. Although I made the most minute inquiries to find out how this Royal Decree of His Majesty was fulfilled, I failed to obtain any light on the matter. I have ordered authenticated copies to be made of said Royal Cédula and reports as shown by the original documents, which I enclose herewith to your Lordship.

Being aware of the foregoing and that the Holy Religious Fathers of the Company of Jesus and their Provincial Father Ignacio Maurio being desirous of the advancement of Our Holy Catholic Faith and to sacrifice themselves for the reduction of those souls, in order to carry this out, thus obtaining the ends of the holy and praiseworthy institution, he resolved with my assent to send the Missionary Fathers Juan Capuel and Juan Romeo, professed priests of said Company of Jesus, to explore and *reconnoitre* the shores of said river Orinoco and particularly the Island of Caroni or Faxardo, as, according to information from trustworthy persons having

**No. 11.**

a practical knowledge of said country, said Island of Caroni was a very appropriate site for the erecting of a fort to defend the Missionaries and Christians against the hostilities of the enemies of our Holy Faith and permit their free preaching to said idolators. To this end I issued letters to the Governor of Trinidad and other justices, requesting their assistance to facilitate the object of their trip. The trip being undertaken and the accurate reconnoitering being made, and the shores of said river Orinoco being explored, Father Juan Capuel, with the fullest knowledge of the matter, and in discharge of the duty assigned to him, reported that said Island of Caroni or Faxardo was the most appropriate site for the construction of a fort with two redoubts, one on each bank of said River Orinoco on the main land, about a gun shot distant from said island. He also stated most fully the fitting reasons concerning the matter, as shown by two reports of eye witnesses on the subject, and is furthermore shown in the chart where said river is indicated, as it all appears from the original acts which I do herewith enclose. Although the Castle of Guayana is at the mouth of said river, it cannot prevent entrance into the river as there is a long island, wooded and swampy, opposite said Castle, leaving a wide passage through which the enemy can sail up and down the river, without being seen by the guard or watch of the Castle, as shown in said chart. It will always be convenient, however, to keep it regularly manned to defend the mouth of the river, to cover that portion of the main land towards the Province of Caracas and to protect the Mission of the Holy Religious Capuchins, whose field for the reduction has been laid from the mouth of said River Orinoco, northward along the sea coast. It will also be of service in keeping that part of the country respected. It would also be convenient that whatever resolutions His Majesty should be pleased to adopt should be sent straight to Trinidad of the Windward, this being very close to the Orinoco river and the Castle of Guayana which belong to its jurisdiction, thus insuring the prompt execution of whatever be ordered. I must state here that by two Royal Cedulae dated in Madrid on May tenth, seventeen hundred and sixteen, His Majesty has issued several orders for the Orinoco River Missions in charge of the Sacred Religious Fathers of the Company of Jesus, appointing the number of thirty-six soldiers for the escort and directing how this is to be formed, the salary allotted to each soldier, the food to be furnished to the Religious Fathers, the effects that must be supplied, the chalices and ornaments to be given in relation to the number of Missionaries and the necessary arms and ammunition for the soldiers with the expenses and viaticum for the journey of both the fathers and the soldiers from the place which they set out from to the Orinoco river. I did fully comply with both Royal Cedulae which were presented before me, issuing several orders for the best execution of the different points therein contained as shown by the attestation of the acts which I beg to send enclosed to your Lordship. It appears that, in reference to the orders given by His Majesty in said two Royal Orders that most of the provisions therein are

**No. 11.**

already fulfilled and that there only remains the material work of building the fort and the two redoubts where the aforesaid soldiers may be quartered because by dividing [*original torn*]. His Majesty orders that fifteen of them go with their Corporal to the fort of Carichana, and the rest with their officers, some to go to the founded towns and some to go as far as the Missions of the Orinoco. His Majesty also gives instructions in His Royal Order to the effect that if, besides the thirty-six soldiers above mentioned, others should be needed they would be given to the Missionaries together with anything else deemed necessary to attain the happy end of bringing these souls to the fold of our Holy Faith; but, as the Fort of Carichana does not exist, having been destroyed, being useless on account of its situation, and it being His Majesty's Royal pleasure to build one on the Island of Caroni or Faxardo, the country and the Orinoco river thus being defended and covered and the Missionaries safely guarded, the aforesaid body of soldiers could be placed to garrison the Fort of said Island. Should the time arrive when the Missionaries effect their entries, which can only be done at certain seasons and not at all times during the year, they may withdraw from said fort the number of soldiers required for their escort, according to circumstances and to the advices they have upon the subject, and the work once ended, the soldiers will return to the garrison. By so doing the Royal Treasury will not have to incur double expense, particularly when this proceeding will cause no inconvenience, they (the escort), thus serving two ends without obstacle or hindrance of any description. It would also be expedient that some Spanish families should go there from the Kingdom of Galicia, as they are considered the most suitable people for that country (the males of the family can be made to serve in the Infantry at the fort), and they can inhabit those lands which are very good and fertile and are at present deserted and uninhabited. Mention must be made that in one of the two said Royal Cedulas, His Majesty states that the fort of Carichana will be of no use unless cannons of a longer range than guns and muskets are not placed in it, to prevent from a greater distance the approach of the enemy's ships; and in a communication of the same date orders the Governor and Officers Royal of Cartagena to buy four or six swivel guns, weighing not over three or three and a half quintals so as to be carried on mules to the Port of Casanare where they shall be shipped in pirogues. This has not been done because up to this date said Governors and Royal Officers have not taken any steps in the matter, nor is this order of easy fulfillment on account of the long distance from Cartagena to Casanare and [*words lacking in the original*] although it could be taken on mule back, and the cost and expense of conveyance being very large and out of proportion. It would be convenient therefore, that this order be entrusted to the Governor of the Island of Trinidad de Barlovento for its fulfillment; or that said swivel guns be sent in a registered ship or ships dispatched for said Island. It being His Royal Majesty's pleasure that the fort of the Island of Caroni or Faxardo be built, it would be more convenient that said

**No. 11.**

pieces of ordnance be in keeping with the situation of the Fort, so that, firing a ball of greater caliber, its range should be longer, thus preventing the enemy's approach from a greater distance, making the attack more effective, the better defending the fort.

In view of the foregoing and its import in the service of God and the King, as well as for the benefits which the common cause will derive therefrom; also taking into consideration the glorious harvest to be reaped from the aforesaid measures and that I am bound to make the foregoing report in view of the confidence placed in me by His Majesty, I have deemed it my duty to inform Your Lordship thereon so that this report being placed before the Council for their judgment [lacking in the original] should deem most expedient and more to His Royal pleasure and for His Royal service, and to this end I send the two enclosed dockets of the aforesaid acts, one in the original in thirty eight sheets, and the other in an attested copy of eighteen sheets, begging Your Lordship to acknowledge receipt thereof.

That Our Lord may keep Your Lordship's life many years are my wishes.

Madrid, on the fifth day of May of one thousand seven hundred and twenty three.

Antonio de la Pedrosa y Guerrero.  
(flourish).

Señor Don Francisco de Arana.

---

**No. 12.**

**Letter from Diego Portales Mense, Governor of Venezuela, to the King of Spain, November 24, 1725, as to the Capuchin Missions.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo General de Indias" (Seville), Stand 57, Case 6, Docket 37.]

Your Majesty was pleased to direct by Royal Cédula of February twenty-eighth of last year that I report on the condition of the Missions of the Capuchin Fathers, by reason of Your Majesty having been informed that two nations of heathen Indians had left the borders of the Orinoco river on account of my having treated kindly three Indians whom I had caused to come to this city, and who assured me that ten nations would leave said river. The prefect of said Missions having reported on the same subject, Your Majesty, in a later "Royal Cédula" of August twentieth of said year, finds it strange that the report was not accompanied by any justification, which I send to your Majesty together with the reports on the condition of the Missions and their towns such as were presented by said Father Prefect who is, at present, in one of the aforesaid towns. The time spent in taking the depositions having prevented further progress in the removal of said nations, I am desirous that the

**No. 12.**

Fathers should rather go to the banks of said river, where numberless peoples and nations dwell, and where the Fathers' diligence will find more fruitful results than in removing the Indians from their native towns, where they may be catechized, thus furthering the interest of your Majesty's service.

From said Indians and from two others of different tongues and nations I have learned of other tribes between the Orinoco and the Amazon Rivers, distant three days journey by land from the other side of the river. These Amazons hold aloof, and at certain periods pay shells to men who enter their towns unarmed for a limited time; they defend themselves not by means of bows and arrows but by a kind of very long blow pipe or tube from which they blow small sharp poisoned tips, and so poisonous are these that the slightest wound made by them results in death more quickly than by an arrow sent with greater force.

I believe the foregoing to be true as I do not think the heathen Indians to be capable of inventing such an account, the interpreter giving me the assurance of this fact.

At present said Missions are in great need of monks, so that your Majesty may be pleased to provide for the fulfilment of an undertaking to the particular glory of God and service of your Majesty.

Through your Majesty's Secretary General, Don Andres de Pez, I informed your Majesty of the trade carried on by the Hollanders through the mouth of the Orinoco, buying little Indians from the victors for working on their plantations in the towns or fortresses of Surinam and Berbiz, which are on the coast far to the windward of the Orinoco. Said report, the date of which I do not recall, it having been lost with the seizure of papers, Your Majesty will be pleased to bear in mind and file with the records with a view to what may occur in future.

May God preserve the Royal Catholic Person of your Majesty as many years as Christianity needs. Caracas, November twenty-fourth, one thousand seven hundred and twenty-five.

---

**No. 13.**

**Letter from Don Agustin de Arredondo, Governor of Trinidad, to the King of Spain regarding the expulsion of a French bishop who attempted to begin the conversion of Indians in Guiana; dated May 18, 1729.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original filed with a bundle of papers relating to this subject matter in the "Archivo General de Yndias" (Seville), Stand 56, Case 4, Bundle 7.]

SEÑOR:

I beg to inform Your Majesty that about the month of February of this year there arrived in the Province of Guayana of this Government the



**No. 13.**

Most Illustrious Lord the Bishop Don Nicolas Gervasio of French nationality Priest of the Holy Church of Turon in the Kingdom of France and present Bishop of Orrins, and that he informed me by letter of his intentions on entering said province, which were to establish there as Vicar and Apostolic Commissary Missions of the Indian natives within the territory of the coast of Paria, River Orinoco, Carib Islands of your domains to found a seminary and to gather in it Indians of all nations, by virtue of Apostolic Bull of His Holiness.

Having, Señor, considered the gravity of this matter I deemed it proper to call a meeting of the Chapter, the neighbors and Ecclesiastical Judge of this Jurisdiction, in which this unprecedented case was discussed at length; I made the appropriate remarks before the meeting and after hearing them they agreed unanimously that it was expedient for the benefit of Your Majesty's service that I should go to the aforesaid Province of Guayana to solve, in person, any difficulties that should occur and to issue the necessary and most expedient instructions for the benefit of Your Majesty's service. I carried into effect what had been resolved and, making a trip to said province of Guayano upon my arrival there I requested said Lord, the Bishop to show me his Dispatches (which he then did) and I noticed that said dispatches lacked the necessary assent of Your Majesty for the settlements which said Bishop intended to make, and who at times went among the native Guianian towns already reduced by the Missionary Capuchin Fathers of said Province and at other times went to the shores of the Orinoco with the object of having vessels from foreign Islands come with provisions for their maintenance, as he states in his letter. In view of all this I prayed said Lord, the Bishop to give me an authentic copy of said Apostolic Letters and other Dispatches which I am now sending to Your Majesty with the judicial writs on the matter; and also requested him to suspend his spiritual undertaking until I could report to Your Majesty. He thereupon wrote me a letter requesting men and ships to go to the Dutch colonies. After having paid him due respect, I loaned him the men and ships with what scarce means I had in these lands, and they took him, as he (the Bishop) had requested to the Colony of Essequibo. May Our Lord keep the Catholic and Royal Person of Your Majesty. Trinidad de la Guayana, eighteenth of May, seventeen hundred and twenty-nine. Dn. Agustin de Arredondo. (A flourish.)

*Note:* On the back of this Document the following appears:

Council of July the seventh, seventeen hundred and thirty. To the Attorneys (a flourish):

The Attorney, in view of the letter of Don Agustin Arredondo, Governor of the City of Trinidad de la Guayana, and of the accompanying affidavit wherein an account is given of the steps taken by him, in the City of Santo Thomé de la Guayana on the occasion of the arrival there of Don

**No. 13.**

Nicolas Gervasio, Bishop of Orriens of French nationality, for the purpose of founding missions on those Islands and among Indian nations within the territory of the coast of Paria, River Orinoco, Carib Islands of said Domains, by virtue of the Apostolic Bull obtained by said Bishop, and to establish a seminary to gather therein all kinds of natives, does hereby state: That, whereas it appears on folio seven and reverse of said affidavit in the inquiry instituted by said Governor on the twenty first of April of the past year of seven hundred and twenty nine, that objections were made to the entrance of said Rev. Bishop in that jurisdiction land and country with the object of establishing said Missions, by reason of the lack of His Majesty's approval of the same, and that having prayed said Bishop to go with said Governor to the Island of Trinidad where the superior Government resides, which would support him as became his dignity pending inquiry, his Mercy, after deliberation, having declined to consent to such proposal, but deciding to travel to the Colony of the Essequibo, inhabited by Hollanders, which (journey) said Bishop undertook on the same day (the twenty first) in a ship provided by said Governor—be it resolved: that all the measures taken in that matter by said Governor be hereby approved, and that he be instructed as well as others to whom it may concern that in case that said Bishop, or any other, attempt to go inland or travel through those domains, this should be prevented unless the necessary dispatches and His Majesty's license as Lord and Master of said domains should be previously presented.

Madrid, September nineteenth, seventeen hundred and thirty. Council of the 22nd of September, 1730. Such is the Attorney's decision.

**No. 14.**

**Letter from Sebastian, Bishop of Porto Rico, to the King of Spain, relating to the expulsion of a French bishop who attempted to begin the conversion of Indians in Guiana; dated Cumaná November 16, 1729.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original filed with a bundle of papers relating to this subject matter, in the " Archivo General de Yndias " (Seville), Stand 56, Case 4, Bundle 7.]

SEÑOR:

While on my ecclesiastical visit to Cumaná I was informed by a letter from Don Agustin de Arredondo, Governor of Trinidad of the windward, which letter I send herewith, to Your Majesty, together with enclosure of attested copies of two other letters, that a titular Bishop of French nationality bearing Apostolic letters of commission to undertake in this America the conversion of the Indians, entered by the Orinoco river to the Province of Guayana in order to carry out his religious desires and Apostolic Mission. Said Governor of Trinidad requested from him the dispatches bearing on his mission and in view thereof the entrance to said Province was forbidden him, it being contrary to Your Majesty's Royal orders. By rea-

**No. 14.**

son of this opposition said Bishop desisted from his intentions and having demanded aid to go to the Essequibo, a Dutch colony, this was granted him; and in return for this, feeling himself aggrieved for some wrongs which he states were done him by those in charge of his conveyance, he then addressed a letter to the Commissary Capuchin Father in charge of the Parish of Guiana instructing him to publicly denounce as excommunicated said Governor, Accountant Don Antonio Pinto and other officers cooperating to his ejection under the anathema reserved to the Holy See, because they had hindered him in his mission and in the fulfilment of the Apostolic orders, and had ejected him without any food and so violently that his life was endangered.

In view of the foregoing and pending my visit to said Province, which I expect to visit soon, I informed said Governor that he had fulfilled his duty, and I also charged him not to desist in his resolution, as it was part of his duties to preserve intact Your Majesty's Domains and rights in his Province, and that, should it be necessary, he should lend his aid to the Vicar of Trinidad and the Capuchin Missions of Guiana to oppose his entrance in those lands and to detain him until my arrival in said province, where I could decide what was most convenient to Your Majesty's service, and I ordered them to effectually fulfil the instructions to hinder and seize said Apostolic Commissary.

I also instructed said Capuchin Missionary to explain in regard to the prevention of the carrying into effect of the Apostolic Letters, the mistaken reason of that censure to which it gave rise and also cautioned him to give warning to all of the just Title and Right of Domain which Your Majesty has to the possession of these Indies and upon whom devolves the right to appoint Pastors and Missionaries to them by virtue of the concession and Mercy of the Holy See, and also of the Apostolic Letters upon which this is founded; and that without the recognizance and approval of the Council, such are not valid, and that whatever be contrary to them under these circumstances, cannot fall under censure. As regards having refused provisions with danger to life, troubles and vexations complained of, although said Governor states to the contrary, as it relates to the defense of the privilege vested by the Holy Cannons upon all Ecclesiastical persons, that he should absolve all *ad cantelam*, and to this end I transferred to them my authority, ordering them to explain the cause of the censure so that the limited intelligence of those natives should not also conceive ideas similar to that which the said Bishop had emitted and denounced.

Upon my arrival in said province I shall procure the Apostolic letters with which he proposed to enter there and I shall send Your Majesty a personal report of all that has happened and of whatever should occur in this connection. By so doing I shall have fulfilled my duty and satisfied my desires to better serve Your Majesty whose Royal Catholic Person may God keep many years as is needed in Christendom.

**No. 14.**

Cumaná—November sixteenth seventeen hundred and twenty-nine—  
Sebastian, Bishop of Puerto Rico.

**No. 15.**

**Letter from Sebastian, Bishop of Porto Rico, to the King of Spain, regarding the expulsion of a French bishop who attempted to begin the conversion of Indians in Guiana ; dated January 13, 1730.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original filed with a bundle of papers relating to this subject matter in the " Archivo General de Indias " (Seville), Stand 56, Case 4, Bundle 7.]

SEÑOR:

After having reported to Your Majesty that a certain Titular Bishop of French nationality, under pretense of being an Apostolic commissary for the conversion of infidels, bearing no Royal Dispatch as provided by the laws of these Indies, did enter into the Province of Guayana of this Government of Trinidad, which in the spiritual government is annexed to my Bishopric, pretending to found missions therein, which he could not carry into effect—as the Governor of Trinidad prevented it, as was his duty, and having ejected him from his Province and sent him to Essequibo, a Dutch Colony, I now beg to submit for the consideration of Your Royal Majesty, the fact that after having been admitted by the Hollanders in their colonies he has insisted on returning to Guayana, stopping at the Colquire (Aguire?) river, one day distant from the Castle. The Governor having again made opposition to this, said Bishop has not condescended to heed him, but has advanced reasons and doctrines offensive to the Royal Domain and Rights of Your Majesty, and the peace and tranquillity of the subjects of these Provinces, as Your Majesty will see by the attested letters of the Governor and the Vicar of Trinidad enclosed herewith. Pending my arrival in said province whither I am about to proceed, I have entrusted them not to consent to said Bishop's carrying forward his designs and that he be detained with all the respect and consideration due to his Holy Dignity, and brought either to the town of Guayana or to Trinidad until my arrival, when, in full knowledge of the case, I shall determine whatever may be best for the benefit of Your Majesty's service and the peace of these provinces, this being the only means I have deemed efficient to prevent the serious injury that may result from this intrusion.

Because this Province of Guayana, being, as it is, the key to the new Kingdom of Granada, Province of Santa Fé de Bogotá and Kingdom of Peru, and having a very limited number of inhabitants wherewith to oppose any nation that should pretend to invade it, which if not prevented at its inception, will establish settlements, build forts and, becoming impregnable, will set up its rule over all the land and neighboring kingdoms and

**No. 15.**

continents, thus notably impairing Your Majesty's Royal Domains, which would be the case, notwithstanding the intrusion of said Bishop being under pretext of the conversion of the heathens. There are no other means to prevent evils so imminent and detrimental to the Kingdom than the detention and seizure of said Bishop until Your Majesty's Royal decision be announced; for his expulsion has not been sufficient, as shown by his return to said Province. Should he be allowed a footing there by reason of the trade with the French vessels that bring provisions to said Bishop and the current traffic which this and other foreign nations have established through the Narrows of the Orinoco, with the Caribs whom they have won over by supplying them with wine and liquors, to which they are much addicted, it would be well to fear some coalition that might disturb the towns and reductions of Indians, of whose education the Capuchin Fathers of the Province of Catalonia care for, by order of Your Majesty, with whom the Caribs have frequent commerce, and the whole Province would then arise. This cannot be prevented, owing to the scarcity of troops and arms in this province.

I have deemed it proper in the fulfilment of my duty to inform Your Majesty of all these particulars, as well as of anything else that might occur of equal importance, so that Your Majesty may decide whatever shall be His pleasure in this matter, giving such instructions as may seem more conducive to the peace and preservation of these Kingdoms, both for the service of God and for Your Majesty, whose Catholic Royal Person may He keep as is needed in Christendom.

San Balthasar de los Arias, January thirteenth, seventeen hundred and thirty. Sebastian, Bishop of Puerto Rico.

**No. 16.**

**Letter from Don Agustin Arredondo, Governor of Trinidad, to the King of Spain, dated April 26, 1730, regarding the expulsion of a French bishop who attempted to begin the conversion of Indians in Guiana—of his subsequent return thereto and murder by the Carib Indians.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original filed with a bundle of papers relating to this subject matter in the "Archivo General de Yndias," (Seville), Stand 56, Case 4, Bundle 7.]

**SEÑOR:**

Having succeeded in politely expelling Don Nicolas Hervasio, Titular Bishop, of French nationality, from the City of Guayana, where he arrived and landed with the intent to found Missions, a college and other establishments, for which he was authorized by virtue of apostolic bulls, and having sent him to Berbiz, a Dutch colony, as I have already reported to your Majesty, together with said bulls and proceedings instituted in this case; he returned a second time to said Province of Guayana, entered and took up his residence on the coasts and shores of Aguire, which is one of the mouths of the Orinoco, in order to issue from there the command to con-

**No. 16.**

voke the Indians and realize the fulfilment of his Apostolic zeal. My Lieutenant having informed me of the facts, I was about to go again to said city to continue my objections and refusal to let him put in practice the authority with which he was invested by reason of said bulls, both because they have not the approval of the Royal Council of Your Majesty as provided in the Royal Laws of these Indies, and because I plainly saw the damage and injury resulting thereby to the lawful domain of Your Majesty over all the kingdoms of this America, as also to the peace, tranquility, and preservation of said city of Guayana. Had the Bishop established himself in this manner with those of his nation, they would have easily penetrated into the Kingdom of Santa Fé. But before effecting my embarkation to proceed on this errand I received a second report from my said Lieutenant stating that the Carib Indians in said river Orinoco had put to death the said Bishop Don Nicolas Hervasio and his household, taking away with them two negroes, servants of his, desecrating and tearing his sacred garments, and looting and carrying away everything. This news I have received from said Lieutenant and I hold it as true, particularly since the Most Illustrious Bishop of this Bishopric, who went to visit said Guayana, heard it from some Indians, friends to said French Bishop, and who brought some pieces of his garments or vestments which were identified as having been seen when he first came to Guayana, as well as the consecrated stone of his altar, although it had been in the fire. Said friendly Indians asserted that they had buried him on the shores of said river Aguire. I am trying to go to said province to make inquiries and to seize the treacherous perpetrators of such sacriligious murders to punish them as they deserve, and to ascertain with certainty the spot where the bodies are interred, to have them taken to Guayana in due time where the obsequies and funeral rites corresponding to the dignity of said Most Illustrious Bishop shall be performed. I have deemed it proper to make this report to Your Majesty so that, in consideration that these Carib Indians are they who tyrannize over the other nations thus preventing their conversion to our Holy Faith and who are the perpetrators of the present murders and of the death of two soldiers of the castle of Guayana, crimes committed last year of seventeen hundred and twenty-seven, constantly keeping the Spaniards and the reduced Indians in a continuous state of fear and unrest on account of their threats and treacherous misdeeds, Your Majesty may permit and ordain that proceedings be instituted against such Carib Indians in order to subdue them and reduce them to some special state of submission, fear and obedience, to prevent so many ills as those experienced from them since the discovery of this province. This, I think, will be to the benefit of God and of Your Majesty and for the peace of Your Majesty's obedient and loyal subjects. May Our Lord keep the person of Your Royal Majesty as long as Christianity needs it.

Trinidad de la Guayana, the twenty sixth of April of the year seventeen hundred and thirty. Don Agustin de Arredondo.

**No. 17.**

Certified copies made in 1730 by order of the Bishop of Porto Rico, of correspondence between himself and the Governor of Gulana and the Governor and the Vicar of Trinidad, in 1729, regarding the expulsion of a French bishop who attempted to begin the conversion of Indians in Gulana.

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the said certified copies filed with a bundle of papers relating to this subject matter in the "Archivo General de Indias" (Seville), Stand 56, Case 4, Bundle 7.]

*Letter from the Governor of Trinidad.*

MY DEAR SIR:

The object of this is only to show your most Illustrious Lordship the one that I have just received, by which you will become acquainted with the orders I left in Guayana in case it happened that the French bishop should again return. By its contents it appears that said gentlemen will remain in the place called Aguire. This is a channel three days' sail by the River Grande from the Castle of Guayana and then one more day's sail through said channel in order to reach port. The houses of the natives, who belong to the Carib nation, are one day's journey from the port. This is a place where wood is plenty and vessels are built, as Father Rincon may inform your most Illustrious Lordship. I only wish to do right and receive your most Illustrious Lordship's commands. May Our Lord keep your most Illustrious Lordship many long years.

City of Orufa, November tenth, seventeen hundred and twenty-nine.  
Kissing your most Illustrious Lordship's hand, Y. M. I. Lordship's most affectionate servant.

On the margin:

"I have detained the ship that came from Guayana, awaiting your most Illustrious Lordship's orders so that mine may be more effectual should your most Illustrious Lordship deem it proper to instruct me. Don Agustin de Arredondo."

— — —

*Copy of letter from the Lieut. of Guayana to the Governor of Trinidad.*

TO THE GOVERNOR AND CAPTAIN-GENERAL DON AGUSTIN DE ARREDONDO.

SIR—In compliance with my duty I beg to inform your Excellency that the French Bishop has penetrated into the River called Aguire, as I have been told by some Aruaca Indians who came to this port from the sea and who were examined by me through Adriano. They stated that after having left Essequibo, the Lord Bishop went to Surinam, whose Governor would not admit him as he did not bear dispatches either from his King or from the King of Spain, and accordingly he ordered him to leave the territory within twenty-four hours, which he did after having taken provisions and repaired his ship, and despatched him to Essequibo in order that the Governor there might equip him for his colonies or for the Spanish territory. Upon his arrival at Essequibo the Lord Bishop requested said

**No. 17.**

Governor to provide him with oarsmen to take him to Guayana where-with he complied, sending them as far as the place called Guacopoa and from there he entered into Aguire, as I have stated, with two of his servants, as the other one left him at Essequibo to go to Barbados not wishing to go to Surinam. As soon as I was aware, Sir, that he was coming here, being informed that he would spend five or six days in reaching here, I got ready oarsmen, provisions and three men so as to send him in the same ship to this island to see your Excellency, in compliance with your Excellency's orders that I was to carry out in case he should return to this city, and I will do so should this occur, while this report reaches your Excellency so that your Excellency may determine what is deemed most proper to do. The same day of the date of this an Aruaca Indian, living in Aripo at the large mouth of this River Orinoco, left this port; I sent for him and told him through Adriano to inquire secretly from the other Indians about the Lord Bishop, whether he had already a house and any white men with him and the Indian agreed to do all that was ordered him. He gave by letter twenty days for the time of his arrival.

— — —

*Letter from the Governor of Trinidad, dated Nov. 15, 1729.*

**MOST ILLUSTRIOUS AND EXCELLENT SIR:**

In the one I wrote before to your most Illustrious Lordship I give a description of the place designated as Araturo wherein I made a mistake as the place named is called Aguire; it is only one day distant from below the Castle and from said Aguire communication is held with the native Pariagotas who are subject to the missions occupied by the Capuchin Missionaries. This Lord Bishop is very clever, highly educated and having great ideas; he is wedded to his opinion and contradicts every proposition, going so far as to say that the Holy See could not divest itself of such a great privilege as the one granted to Our Monarch, thus doing injury to the successors to the tiara; that for this reason his briefs must not go to the Council. Having come to discuss with him on these matters he asked me what I should do in case he should desire to remain at any point I replied that what I would do would be to request the Vicar or the Bishop to put him out of the domains of the King. His only reply to this was, "and if I do not wish to go?" \* \* \* My zeal as a good subject compelled me to say that I should employ force. I have thought it convenient to inform your Most Illustrious Lordship of all this so that with a fuller knowledge of the matter the proper orders be issued most expedient to the service of both Majesties. At the same time I beg to inform Your Most Illustrious Lordship of the difficulties that may ensue, because if he should, under the title of Bishop, build a fort and collect a few foreigners, this once done the Province of Guayana is totally lost as



**No. 17.**

there are no means of defense. I expect to receive Your Most Illustrious Lordship's orders to enable me to have more wisdom in those given by me, and I will fulfil them most efficiently. May Our Lord be pleased to keep Your Most Illustrious Lordship for many years.

Trinidad, November fifteenth, seventeen hundred and twenty-nine.  
Kissing Your Most Illustrious Lordship's hands, your most affectionate servant, Don Agustin de Arredondo.

---

*Letter from the Vicar of Trinidad; dated Nov. 10, 1729.*

**MOST ILLUSTRIOUS AND REVEREND SIR:**

I never tire of admonishing and informing these parishioners of the purpose and expediency of the Pastoral visit and to give them assurance of the kindly yearnings of Your Most Illustrious Lordship to see the faces of Y. M. I. Lordship's children and fold, as I did from this pulpit on the first day of this November on the night of All Souls' Day, at a large gathering held in the Parish all being notified for the reception of Y. M. Ill. Lordship in February of the coming year. My Lord, the Most Illustrious Lord, the Titular Bishop of French nationality, who came to the Province of Guayana of this Government in February of this year, seems to have forgotten that Your M. Ill. Lordship had in this jurisdiction a Minister, Your M. Ill. Lordship's Vicar, to attend to all matters relating to the defense of the jurisdiction. This notwithstanding, as the Vicar of Your Most Illustrious Lordship, I have attended, as becomes my duty, to everything relating to this matter, so new in these lands, and whenever the Governor, desirous to reach a wise determination, has looked to me, he has always found me ready; particularly at a general meeting which he called to consult on the subject and ask for advice, he issued a judicial writ requesting Your Most Illustrious Lordship's Vicar to attend said meeting as I did giving first a judicial answer and then going to the said meeting, which in my belief gave results for the better service of God and the benefit of His Catholic Majesty and the defense of Your Most Illustrious Lordship's jurisdiction. All has been sent to the Council of the Indies. My Lord I have seen all the Bulls and Apostolic concessions of said Lord Bishop, and my limited intelligence cannot find in them the reason for his coming. I have also seen and keep in my possession some letters from said Lord Bishop, and I keep particularly the one which the Lord Nuncio of his Holiness, resident at the Catholic Court, wrote from Madrid to said titular Lord Bishop on this subject, which he received in the Island of Martinique, as attested by the Secretary to said Lord Bishop, wherein said Lord Nuncio informs him that the question was submitted to the Council of the Indies as a standard where, on account of the multiplicity of affairs, resolutions are slow, and that for this reason he shall speak to Our Lord the King and to His Majesty's confessor, informing him of the result; as also that his

**No. 17.**

apostolic undertaking, the establishment of missions, the founding of a college for priests, will all be hindered unless he can count upon the Royal sanction. Upon consideration of these and other reasons of which Your M. Ill. Lordship must be aware, we have come to the conclusion that only the great zeal for the salvation of the souls of the Indians of the Orinoco could have induced this Prince to such an arduous spiritual task in which he did not succeed, nor will he be able to succeed except with the approval of the Catholic King who is the legitimate patron of this America. This Bishop is not much pleased with the remedies applied and the measures, which, as I understand, have not been lacking in the respect due to his sacred dignity. He left Guayana, retired to Essequibo, a Dutch Colony, undergoing great hardships, especially on account of his advanced age. I do not believe, My Lord, that even if he should preserve his life, which would be most fortunate, he will return to his first undertaking, and should this happen I am aware of the instructions of Your Most Illustrious Lordship and I shall be on the alert. As regards the censure that, by letter, he issued against the Governor, his Lieutenant and others, I have already given said Governor my humble opinion and I understand that it tranquilized him. May God our Lord keep the Illustrious person of Your Most Illustrious Lordship to be my aid and consolation many years.

City of Oruña, on the tenth of November, seventeen hundred and twenty-nine. Kissing Y. M. I. Lordship's feet. Y. M. I. Lordship's humble servant, Juan Antonio Marcano.

---

*Another Letter from the Vicar of Trinidad; dated Nov. 10, 1729.*

**MOST ILLUSTRIOUS SIR:** On this same date, the tenth of November, orders have been issued to the effect that the ecclesiastical notary of this Court shall go to the Port of Spain, the principal port of this island, to deliver the documents and letter and attend to the embarkation of the Fathers Don Francisco de Rojas, and Don Juan Valentin de Mier. The Governor of this Island (has received?) a letter from his Lieutenant in Guayana reporting the second importunity of the titular French bishop. Said Governor has given me the assurance that he sends to Your Most Illustrious Lordship a copy of said letter, which relieves me from informing as to its contents. I remain awaiting Your Lordship's orders, in this delicate matter to obey and give them prompt attention. I always pray to God during the holy sacrifice for Y. M. Ill. Lordship's help for the benefit of the Bishopric. May His Majesty keep Your Illustrious person many years, such being the desires of Your Lordship's humble servants.

San Joseph de Oruña, tenth of November, of seventeen hundred and twenty-nine. Kissing Your M. Ill. Lordship's feet, your humblest servant, Juan Antonio Marcano,

**No. 17.**

*The Bishop of Porto Rico to the Governor of Trinidad; Dec. 28, 1729.*

DEAR SIR : I am in receipt of four [letters] from Your Lordship, and my high dignity and humble personality are once more extolled by the marks of high respect shown, and I yearn for the occasion your pleasure may give me to command my most willing gratitude. In reference to the contents of said letter, I must inform Your Lordship that I am by them aware that Your Lordship had not been at the Office of the Dean in the Church because the excesses of our Ministers and Ecclesiastical Judges must be checked by their superiors in the same calling and Father Rincon, by reason of his very obedience, had been guilty of being too dependent than otherwise, because although there be a right for defense this is never accepted as it is meet it should be, unless accompanied by the humble compliance of the subject. I have instructed him to go to that city where I am to give a hearing to the transgressions of which he is accused. The place where the guilt was committed is the place where the trial shall be held. By this, said Father will see that I am attentive to my duties and Your Lordship will see how attentive I am to serve in the meting out of the laws of justice. I take notice of the stubborn return of the Illustrious Lord French Bishop to the Province of Guayana in detriment of the peace and quiet of the same; this pacific possession in common consolation of the subjects which His Catholic Majesty has in these Indies and spiritual conquest of this province in which the Capuchin Missionaries are at present engaged, who for the holy work of the conversion of the infidels have been supported and maintained at heavy expense of this Royal Treasury. And all this done (by said Bishop) in usurpation of our pastoral jurisdiction. Such violence threatens still greater ruin which will be felt through all the kingdom, and which must be checked by Your Lordship in what it may concern and by me as far as lies in my power. Being aware of the scorn shown by him for the intimations made him and the arrogance of his behavior, so offensive to the highest considerations and in defiance of my jurisdiction and the rights of the Sovereign your Lordship will be pleased, in company with my ecclesiastical Vicar in this island, to go to the house where he stops in that province and with all the forbearance and respect due to his dignity and person, without seizing any of his belongings, and giving him the necessary assistance, will cause him to be brought to that city where he shall be confined in a decent house with guards until my arrival. In view of the whole matter I shall issue the appropriate instructions. This is the only efficient means I find to check the present ills, and the most grave, imminent and important dangers to the peace of the kingdom and province, and to the preservation of the domain and also the spiritual injuries resulting from this intolerable intrusion. I rely in this matter on the greatest activity on the part of Your Lordship, in whom I have placed my confidence on account of the zeal in the service of both Majesties, which I recognize in Your Lordship. By your last

**No. 17.**

letter I am informed of the obstinacy of said Lord Bishop in remaining in that province and of the doctrines alleged by him, which are greatly opposed to the quiet of these kingdoms and to the just and Christian rights of the Catholic Majesty, to examine and approve of the Apostolic Bulls whereof he is invested with the knowledge of the Holy See and common acceptation of his subjects. Such examination is neither assuming nor offensive to the Apostolic authority, but an act both of policy and defense of the rights and peace of his Kingdoms and of the authority of the Apostolic See itself. Anything in contrary would be boldness and temerity, it being against the consensus of opinion of all theologians and jurists of the kingdom. Our respective duties compel us to interfere against this. Under this impression I have given the foregoing order, in the compliance of which no doubt should arise nor any scruple, as it is justified by lawful defense against an unlawful invasion of the jurisdiction and Royal Domain, and in this case one force repels another. I have taken due notice of your recommendation imploring my kindness in reference to the repeated fault, the petulance and incorrigibility of Father Valentin de Anjeles, to whom, out of respect to your Lordship's recommendation, I shall be lenient in meting out the punishment that he deserves on account of his incorrigibility. My mind is not set so much upon avenging his guilt as upon his reformation, because my desire is that my clergy fulfil the holy duties of their state, and that as shepherds of the holy fold they should teach by their good example the road to virtue, which leads to triumphant Jerusalem. When I received Your Lordship's last letter informing me of the excesses and effrontery of Father Don Francisco Joseph de Roxas, which demand the most rigid attention, he had already left the city bearing my decree to be reinstated in the service of the Sacristy of that Parish, with my censure and a pecuniary fine because, owing to the inability of said Father, who was rejected in the last examination, no Curate has been provided. Upon my arrival in your city, where I am to meet him, as I have instructed him, I shall give a hearing to his case and he shall be punished according to his faults and I shall issue all the necessary orders so that the Royal Treasury may suffer no damage by reason of the mentioned priest; and in this Your Lordship shall see my earnestness in dealing with this and everything else relating to the Royal Service and to that of Your Lordship. On the seventh of January next I shall go from this city to San Balthasar de los Arias, and about the eighth of February, God willing, I shall be in the port of the Golfo Triste to set sail for your city, because I have resolved to defer the visit to some places in this Province until my return on account of the trouble given me by the pretensions of the Frenchman. By that date Your Lordship may have the necessary ships in readiness and command me as may be his wishes, the fulfilment of said commands being the best proof of my obedience. May God keep Your Lordship many years of well deserved promotions.

Cumaná, December the twenty-eighth, seventeen hundred and twenty-

**No. 17.**

nine. Kissing Your Lordship's hands Your humble servant and chaplain. Sebastian, Bishop of Puerto Rico.

The foregoing copy agrees with the letters of Don Agustin de Arredondo, Governor and Captain-General of the Island of Trinidad, and of Don Juan Antonio Marcano, Doctrinary Curate and Vicar of said Island, addressed to His Most Illustrious Lordship the Bishop, my Lord, I having compared them with this copy, I vouch for the correctness and the originals were returned to His Most Illustrious Lordship the Bishop, my Lord, and in witness thereof, as ordered by His Most Illustrious Lordship the Bishop, my Lord, the Master, Don Sebastian Lorenzo Pizzaro of the Holy Order of the Lord Saint Basilius Magnus, most Holy Bishop of San Juan de Puerto Rico and its annexed territories, member of His Majesty's Council, etc., I do issue the present attestation in the City of Cumaná, on the fourth day of January, seventeen hundred and thirty, affixing thereto my customary signature. In witness thereof—a sign—Doctor Don Matias Bejar, Secretary.

Here follows the authentication of the foregoing signature by three ecclesiastical notaries, under the same date and in the same city.

**No. 18.**

**Order of Juan Joseph de Orvay, Governor in Concordia, Guayana, to Antonio Pinto, Lieutenant of Accounts, to prepare a ship to reconnoitre the Swedish settlement at Barima, October 21, 1732.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo General de Yndias" (Seville), Stand 56, Case 4, Docket 7.]

*Edict.* In this City of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, on the 21st day of October. 1732—

I, Sergeant Major Don Juan Joseph de Orvay, Alcalde Ordinario, Acting Governor this present year, for His Majesty, in charge of these Provinces and its jurisdiction. In virtue of the edict proclaimed in the island of Trinidad on the fourth day of said month and year—

Say, that inasmuch as it is necessary and proper to send an expedition to the mouth of the Rio de Barima in the jurisdiction of this government, by reason of the information received, that the Swedes are settling at the mouth of this channel, and of the injury this may cause to the service of His Majesty. I, hereby order and command the Lieutenant of Accounts, Captain Don Antonio Pinto, to prepare a ship, with the necessary crew of oarsmen, provisions and munitions of war belonging to His Majesty, and of which he is in charge as such Royal Official, in order that Captain Juan Miguel Hernandez, to whom the corresponding orders for this undertaking will be given, shall proceed to reconnoitre the said settlement. All

**No. 18.**

this is to be made known to said Lieutenant of Accounts and to said Juan Miguel Hernandez, so that each one on his part may take such steps as may be proper for the service of His Majesty.

And the said edict shall be put as a heading to this in testimony thereof, and the same shall be made known to said Lieutenant of Accounts, to whom notice of this edict shall be given, in order that with the receipt which shall be given and provided by the said Juan Miguel Hernandez, he may incorporate the same into the accounts that he has to render.

And, by this my edict, I have so decreed, commanded and signed with the witnesses with whom I am performing this act, there being no notary here, which I certify—Juan Joseph de Orvay—Marcos Nicto de Sobrado—Juan Lorenzo Romero. . . .

Thereupon, I, Juan Lorenzo Romero, Adjutant of the Government, made known the foregoing Edict to Captain Juan Miguel Hernandez: and he heard and understood it, but did not sign, not being able to write, and for the purpose of preserving evidence thereof, I record it here and sign—

JUAN LORENZO ROMERO.

And thereupon, I, said Adjutant, made known the said decree and also the Edict, to said Captain Don Antonio Pinto, Lieutenant of Accounts; and he heard and understood it and signed with me—Antonio Pinto.

JUAN LORENZO ROMERO.

*Affidavit.*—In this City of Guayana, the twenty-first day of November of the year seventeen hundred and thirty two—I, Sergeant Major Don Juan Joseph de Orvay, Alcalde Ordinario this present Year, for His Majesty, Acting Governor by reason of the death of Sénor Don Bartholome de Aldunate y Rada, who was Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, for the King, our Master (whom God preserve).

Appeared before me Captain Juan Miguel Hernandez, having returned to this City to-day, the date hereof from the reconnoissance which he was sent to make of the Swedish settlement.

Who said, that, having gone to sea by the principal River, Orinoco, entered through the channel called barima, where said people had been, according to information given to him by the Carib Indians who live on said channel, they had seen about three months before a great many white people in two ships and one sloop, looking around for some place to settle in, and pacifying the said Carib Indians with valuable presents of cloths, beads, knives in abundance, machetes, axes and lots of liquor, which the said Indians received with great pleasure.

And they are expected to return this spring, about the coming March, as they gave the said Caribs to understand, that, the said Swedish ships would return to renew the search for a place to found a settlement in said channel, which they did not do that time for want of pilots, because the

**No. 18.**

Hollanders of Berbis and Surinam did not wish to furnish them with any. The Carib Indians said also that the Hollanders had notified them (the Caribs) not to show those men any good places for settling, because they were bad men, and they (the Hollanders) would give them what they needed. . . .

The Caribs also informed him that two longboats, with some Frenchmen and Negro fugitives from Cayenne, had arrived in that creek, intending to proceed to this City of Guayana, but that said Indians had killed them all and taken their boats and luggage. . . .

And that in said channel there lives a so-called Carib Captain, the son of Captain Iaguaria, who is one of the fugitives of the Upper Orinoco river, and who, it seems, keeps over two hundred Indians in a large house, provided with arrows, guns and short swords. And said Indian told him that these precautions were taken against the whites of Guayana, who would not allow him to make prisoners of the other nations of the Orinoco, to sell them to the Hollanders. . . . And that all he has said here is the truth; and he swore by God our Lord and a sign of the Holy Cross in the form of law, that he knows nothing more than what he has said and declared, in virtue of the Oath he has taken, which he affirmed and ratified; and he said his age was about fifty years, more or less. He did not sign, as he could not write, and to make sure, I signed with the Witness with whom I am performing this act; there being no Notary, which I certify—Juan Joseph de Orvay—Juan Lorenzo Romero—Francisco Romero Lovaton. . . .

**No. 19.**

**An attested copy, made in Gulana by the Magistrate Governors on June 6, 1733, of a Royal Cedula of the King of Spain dated January 17, 1731, regarding the expulsion of a French bishop who attempted to begin the conversion of Indians in Gulana—of his subsequent return and murder by the Caribs.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of said attested copy filed with a bundle of papers relating to this subject matter in the " Archivo General de Yndias " (Seville), Stand 56, Case 4, Bundle 7 ]

We, the undersigned, Magistrate Governors, in compliance with the orders contained in the foregoing decree caused the [following] certified copy to be made of the Royal Cedula to wit:—

The King—Don Agustin de Arredondo, Governor and Captain General of the Island of Trinidad de la Guayana: by letter of the twenty-sixth of April of last year, seventeen hundred and thirty, you report on the landing effected in that city by Don Nicolas Hervasio, a Bishop of French nationality, with the intent to found missions, a college and other establishments, by virtue of Apostolic Bulls, stating that as you deemed that said determination had certain inconvenient features, according to the opinion of the meeting which you had called to this end, you compelled him to leave—using the most courteous measures—for a colony

**No. 19.**

of Hollanders; having attained this object, a few days later he returned to that Island for a second time and established his residence on the shores of the River Aguire, one of the mouths of the river Orinoco, with the intention of convoking the Indians from said place and realizing the fulfilment of his Apostolic zeal. At this time you were informed that the Carib Indians, dwelling on the Orinoco aforesaid, had put him to death, a misfortune that also befell his household, said Indians carrying away with them two negroes, servants of his, and other circumstances in the matter. You also state that you were preparing to set out for said place in order to seize and punish those who committed such sacrilegious crimes, and you ask my leave to proceed against said Caribs in order to reduce them to some kind of submission and obedience, to check various ills of which they are the cause. And in view of the opinion of my Council of the Indies and the advice of my Attorney, I have resolved to command you (and do hereby command you) to proceed to the seizure of the Indians who have taken part in and committed the murders, continuing in the proceedings which you state you have commenced, and dealing with them as you may judge proper, displaying the greatest prudence in all things and employing such means as you deem most adequate and efficient to check such actions; and you shall report to me at the earliest opportunity all that you have done in this matter as well as the steps you judge more imperative and necessary to this end. At the same time I warn you that should another Bishop, or any other person, attempt to enter and travel in said domains, you shall not allow it unless they present the necessary dispatches and license given by me, stating the purpose of their journey. You are thus informed for the exact and accurate fulfilment of said order, communicating same to such persons as may seem convenient to you, for their guidance.

Done in Seville on the twenty-fourth of January, seventeen hundred and thirty-one—I, the King—By command of the King Our Lord—Don Francisco Diez Roman—

NOTE.—Underneath this there are three flourishes which appear to be of the gentlemen of the Council and below these two lines in writing saying :

To the Governor of Guayana relative to proceedings against some Carib Indians who killed a Bishop of French nationality.—This copy agrees with the original duplicate of the royal cédula kept on file and registered in the archives of this government from which we caused this copy to be made and compared—We, the Captains Don Antonio de Robles, and Don Joseph Phelipe Navarro, Magistrate Governors, this present year, do vouch for the correctness of this copy, made in compliance with the orders contained in our foregoing decree, to be joined to these proceedings, and in testimony thereof we append our signatures in the presence of the witnesses with whom we act, as there is no Notary in this Government. On the sixth day of June seventeen hundred and thirty-three—to which we certify—Don Antonio de Robles—Joseph Phelipe Navarro—Juan Lorenzo Romero—Salvador Marcelino de Espinosa. Martel.



## No. 30.

Letter from Don Pablo Diaz Fajardo, Lieutenant of Infantry, to the Governor and Captain General of Guiana, sending map showing location of gold and silver mines, February 8, 1735.

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of original in the " Archivo General de Indias " (Seville).  
Staud 56, Case 6, Bundle 19.]

Don Pablo Diaz Fajardo, Lieutenant of Infantry and Engineer Extraordinary of His Majesty's Army in actual service in this Province, before your Lordships does represent and state—that, being in said Province of Guayana, in the discharge of his post under the orders of your Lordships, he was instructed to make the necessary plans and estimates for the construction of a castle on an eminence called Padraсто, and also to draw a map of that portion of the province where the gold and silver mines, discovered up to the present time, are located. The cost of the former will be, according to the estimates, three hundred thousand *pesos*, because the volume of the walls of the magazines being eleven thousand, four hundred and twenty cubic *varas*, at the rate of twenty four *pesos* each, will make two hundred and sixty-four thousand *pesos*, which subtracted from the three hundred thousand leaves a remainder for the living quarters, draw-bridge, mortar and work for filling the ramparts of the bastions and digging the ditches. Your Honor will please bear in mind that in making this estimate I have confined myself to what I am certain will be the cost in this country, because, lime being one of the most expensive items in a work, it will be necessary to bring it from the Island of Trinidad, increasing the cost thereby at least three fold; at the same time the master workmen and laborers must necessarily command increased salaries in this country, the provisions being two and three times more expensive than in other places, by reason of the scarcity of the population in the Province. In regard to those coming from abroad, I am certain that, by reason of their expenses, not one of them will be willing to work unless he be paid a salary corresponding to the need of the country. The projected construction of the redoubt to be built on the height of Padraсто will cost five thousand *pesos*. The plans and drawings of the works mentioned are delivered to Your honor with the chart of a portion of the province, showing the places where the gold and silver mines are located. This is the purport of this representation.

## No. 21.

Letter from Governor Don Carlos de Sucre to Don José Patiño, dated  
Cumaná, March 23, 1735.

[Printed from translation of certified copy of the original in the " Archivo General de Indias (Seville),  
Stand 56, Case 6, Bundle 19.]

YOUR EXCELLENCY:

Sir,—Having left pacified all those provinces bathed by the Orinoco river from its mouths up to its junction with the Casanare river, which is reported to have over 400 leagues, and all the Indians dwelling upon the shores thereof ready to receive Missionary Fathers, not counting many other nations who live inland, and having likewise asked me for Missionary Fathers, without my having found any nation evincing the slightest indication of assuming the defensive, excepting the Cario nation, which is the most numerous and rules over all the other nations, having arrogated to itself the title of King of the Orinoco, and being constantly at war with the other nations, as it has no other occupation nor way of living, for they neither till nor cultivate their lands, but sustain themselves by waging war against the other Indians, whom they enslave and carry away to sell to the Dutch and other foreign nations; there being years in which the slaves sold by them are no less than from 600 to 700. Last year I deprived them wholly of this accursed traffic, and have consequently also done so this year, whereat they became desperate, as they owed the Indians of Surinam some 700 head of slaves. Said Indians, seeing that the Caribs failed to pay them, carried away all their wives and children in payment of what they owed them. In despair at being robbed of their wives and children, they decided to cross over and burn and kill the Missionary Fathers of the Company and the Indians, and take away with them those whom they could as slaves. Being advised of this determination, I forthwith dispatched a detachment to succor said Missions which assistance arrived so opportunely that had it delayed three days the Caribs would have accomplished their purpose. But as soon as they heard of the arrival of said detachment they restrained themselves to the point that it was necessary to cross over to seek them in their own lands, in their clearing which they call the Pumeyo, where they had three encounters with said Caribs, and in these three encounters they were always defeated with considerable losses, the number of which it is impossible to ascertain, owing to the custom they have of taking away their dead. They failed to conceal only the death of four captains, among these their General, who led them, and the bravery of this Indian has not been equalled by that of any Roman. All their houses and tilled lands were demolished. Of their nine boats, seven were taken away from them, the other two having been captured before in the slight engagement had with them on the Orinoco. They killed only one of our men, who died of a slight wound at the end of three days, owing to the balls being poisoned,

**No. 21.**

as are all of them, and also their arrows. Finding themselves thus punished, they all withdrew inland, suing for peace, which I have refused to grant them, as I have overpowered them so that they are perishing, for, being unable to go down to the Orinoco to fish, they must either perish or abandon the country. His Majesty has now under subjection all this Orinoco river up to Casanare, and as securely as the Sevilla river, whereas formerly it was necessary to pay a tax to every nation in order to be allowed to pass, and even then they were killed and countless Spaniards have lost their lives in crossing this river, as also Missionary Fathers. This nation is the only one that refuses to be subdued, all the others that have been discovered by us seek our friendship, and many nations send me their Caciques to swear obedience, recognizing His Majesty as King and Master, and asking for Missionary Fathers, so that if I now had five hundred Missionary Fathers I could employ them all, and my greatest sorrow is that I have not a single priest to give them; and it is the most pitiful thing in the world to see these poor wretches asking for fathers and not a father to give them. Guayana is at present without a parson, while being a parsonage, and as no priest wishes to come to Guayana, it has been necessary to take away a Capuchin father from his Mission, where he is needed. And having appeased and pacified all these provinces, I ordered here the Colonel of Militia, Don Francisco Figueras y Caceres, one of the foremost gentlemen of this province, a very judicious person who has filled various posts, in all of which he has given a good account of his operations—a clever man enjoying considerable popularity. I have left him to command in my place until I finish the residence of Don Juan de la Tornerra y Soto, my predecessor, who had begun it, having arrived in this city yesterday, March 22d, and to-day work upon said residence has been resumed and is diligently pushed, so that as soon as it is finished I may straightway return to Guayana in order to see how I can manage to go into the Province of Puneyo, where said Caribs have their clearing, which is on the other side of the Orinoco river, to fortify myself with a stockade and four swivel guns that I have, where I shall compel them to abandon the country or submit themselves. It is an arduous undertaking. I know it, and that we shall suffer greatly from lack of provisions, but I place all my hope in God who knows my good intention and zeal and devotion to the Royal service, and He will assist me in my undertaking. If we succeed in subduing them, or compelling them to abandon their lands, we shall in future meet with no further opposition, inasmuch as I have subdued and reduced to the obedience of His Majesty more land than is thrice contained in Spain, and if His Majesty were to send me twice as many people as are in Spain, we have enough land to distribute among all,—the best in the world, with the finest and most healthful climate that I have thus far seen; lands which grow everything that is sown in them; rivers teeming with fish; forests abounding in all sorts of game. But, Sir, it behooves me to notify Your Excellency that now it is impossible for me to further

**No. 21.**

contribute such excessive expenses. It is now thirteen months that I am called upon to wholly maintain, sometimes 200 men, at others 250, at others 150, sometimes 100, never less than 90, whom I supplied entirely with provisions, arms and munitions, even the Militia, of which I have sometimes maintained two hundred and five hundred men, during two or three months at my cost, and 25 men selected by me whom I supported for over eight months, who have ruined me, as I gave them half-pay and fed them at my expense, being sorely in need of men, because this garrison consists wholly of natives who are good for nothing, it being a pity that the Royal Treasury should pay for such worthless people. But for the people of the country—not the whites, who are also good for nothing, all, including their officers, being the most violent and worthless people that can be found—but for the mulattoes, *zambos* and negroes, I say, it would have been impossible for me to hold my own in Guayana, or to succeed in subduing all these provinces; and this by dint of regaling them and continually giving them rum; otherwise not one of them would have remained. No fortune would suffice for all the expenses caused by the smallest detachment; they are excessive, owing to the dearness of supplies for arms, powder, balls; no treasures would be enough. If it is fish it is killed with the gun; if deer or bear, powder and balls must be used; everything is consumed by the great rains; and as for the provisions, the implements, such as axes, cutlasses, pruning hooks, pickaxes, glass beads, knives, clasp knives, lancets for the Indians, where would there be money enough! Then what shall we say of the rum absorbed by the Indians, who drink it like water and after having had their full, must have their calabash replenished! They have consumed from me more than 4,200 flasks of rum, and without this, there is no Indian. He must be regaled whenever he seizes the tool. Of these I have given them over 3,800 pieces; knives without number; the loss of provisions that I have sustained at sea, and four or five vessels that I have lost, amount to more than 4,000 *pesos*, and countless other expenses, so that I find myself indebted in over twelve thousand *pesos*, and thus I am ruined, Sir, for up to the present moment I have not been provided with even a *real*; everything has been at my expense, with money lent me by my friends. I have done it, Sir, because it was necessary, and had I not come to Guayana with the celerity I did, it would have been irremediably lost. As it is pretty generally known, I found that all the residents and Missionary fathers wanted to leave, and remained only out of regard for me. 11,000 Caribs were coming, determined to kill them all, and 200 would have been enough for that. So great was the misery that even the residents had to be supported by me. Its garrison had sixty men on the books and for the sixty men there were only four guns that always remained in the Castle for those who came to relieve the guard, all old men and children. Now the garrison is complete and well supplied. Two days before I left I passed review and from two it had reached 102 men, and if there were a recruiting licence, I

**No. 21.**

could have raised 400 men. The place has had an increase of over 250 souls. From the province of Caracas there were more than 200, of these ten are owners of cattle ranches who with their cattle have the only means of maintaining Guayana; they send people everywhere, and there already would have been three or four towns begun by me, but they ask of me what it is not in my power to offer them; they wish me to promise not to forsake them and always to remain in Guayana, as if it depended upon my will to remain or not. It is all due to the great confidence they have in me. Had the Indians known of my leaving, I doubt much whether they would have permitted it. Sir, I can assure you that His Majesty has in those provinces the greatest treasures to be found in America. In all the ravines, rivulets and plains, nothing but mines are found which men who all their lives have worked in mines in the Kingdom of Santa Fé declare to be of gold and silver. This not being my profession, I do not understand it, but I called them and made them examine the samples they had brought me, and ordered them to tell me the truth, whether they were good mines or not, and if some specimens could be sent to His Majesty. To which they replied that with all confidence I could send them for they surely were gold and silver mines; that from the samples neither gold nor silver could be extracted because they had been picked up from the surface of the ground; that the lode had not been got at, but that by digging it would be found, and then gold would surely be reached. However, I wanted to satisfy myself. We placed some broken pieces into a rude crucible, and without any more implements made the experiment. The pieces would break, but we found some grains of gold as big as fowling shots and others smaller. Noticing that the crucible pieces would always break, I ordered a brick to be made four fingers (*dedos*) thick, dried only in the sun, concave in the middle, placing in the hollow  $2\frac{1}{2}$  of those powders. At the moment of melting, the brick cracked; we took it out of the fire and after cooling it, we observed that in the fissure of the brick there was gold, and we found a small piece that weighed 17 *reales* gold of  $22\frac{1}{2}$ , almost 23, for 114 ounces of dust yields 17 *reales*. What would not a pound or an *arroba* (25 lbs.) yield! And this without any implement, or quick-silver, or knowledge of the thing. Eight samples of the smelting I forwarded to His Majesty in three boxes full of specimens of mines—some sixty and odd different specimens which were sent to His Majesty via Caracas together with various reports, and the chart of the Orinoco river and plan of a castle to be built in Guayana for the protection of that country, should it be the Royal pleasure of His Majesty to forward them in the month of November, and the Marquis of San Phelipe and Santiago having sent them by a schooner to be forwarded to the Court on a vessel which was about to sail for Cadiz, belonging to the "Real Compañía Guspuzcoana;" said vessel was wrecked upon some shoals and all her cargo lost without it having been possible to save

**No. 21.**

anything. At the same time I sent a report to his majesty of my journey to Guayana, with the assistance I took with me, and full information regarding all those provinces, which I cannot make on this occasion as I have no time for it, having arrived at this city yesterday where I was obliged to detain this vessel to-day which proceeds to Caracas, in order to write these lines to Your Excellency and inform Your Excellency that I have already taken charge of the residence of my predecessor, Don Juan de la Tornerra y Soto, and that as soon as I have finished it I shall return to Guayana which absolutely needs my presence; otherwise we shall lose all that has been done; and nobody shall go to settle there. On the first occasion that may occur I shall repeat the reports to His Majesty which were lost, with the charts that are ready and other three boxes of specimens of new mines which were found afterwards. I assure Your Excellency that I am loth to tell Your Excellency the number of them, fearful lest Your Excellency may doubt my veracity. Their number reaches two hundred at the very least. All the shores of the Orinoco are full towards the other side, but not one on this side. Everybody there claims that towards the interior there are many more, and the greater part of them have been reported to me by the Indians, which is the more to be wondered at, as they have never shown any inclination to report them to Spaniards on account of their abuses; nor have I wished to allow any one to work them. The one that has been dug the most is barely one foot and a half deep.

The skipper is pressing me, so as to take advantage of the favorable wind. I must therefore close, praying Your Excellency to see to it that the necessary supplies are sent me, as also a reinforcement of at least one hundred men; or that Your Excellency will authorize me to raise two companies of fifty men each; send me the blank commissions, for I shall find people to raise them at their cost, uniformed and armed—men inured to this climate and food, which is not the case with those coming from Europe, and this is the reason why the greater part die. I need families to people these countries, and missionaries, especially fathers of the Company; arms, powder, cannon balls, and artillery, though they be of four or six, for the present they will serve for redoubts, which is all we can build now, as it is a year since we have been looking all in vain for stones wherewith to make lime; they are only to be found in the Island of Trinidad.

I remain with all obsequiousness at the feet of your excellency, praying that the Divine Majesty may vouchsafe Your Excellency many years, which I desire and need for my protection.

Cumaná, March twenty-three of the year one thousand seven hundred and thirty-five.

Your Excellency's most submissive and humble servant kisses your Excellency's hand.

DON CARLOS DE SUCRE.

HIS EXCELLENCY, DON JOSÉ PATIÑO.

## No. 22.

## Report by Don Gregorio Espinosa, governor of Guiana, as to certain gold and silver mines in Guiana, 1743.

[Printed from a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo General de Indias " (Seville), Stand 56, Case 6, Bundle 31.]

NOTE: This forms part of the *second piece* of " Several Documents taken from the records of the visit made to the province of Guayana by its governor, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, sent in several pieces, with his letter dated September 30, 1743."

Royal Cedula of June ninth, seventeen hundred and forty.

The King—Brigadier, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, my Governor and Captain of the Province of Cumaná, Don Carlos Sucre, your predecessor in that Government, reported by letter of February twentieth, seventeen hundred and thirty-eight, that, in compliance with my dispositions in my Cédula of November sixth, of seventeen hundred and thirty-six, referring to the failure of the arrival of the three boxes of ore which he informed me had been sent, sending in the meanwhile with letters dated March thirtieth and May seventeenth, seventeen hundred and thirty-five, samples of the assay made, that he should send other samples particularly from the same mines from which those he sent were taken, together with the aforesaid letters; he sent two specimens, one of silver, the other of gold from reductions made in Guayana from ores of the mines found in that territory, stating that he had information from the natives that there existed a large quantity of them further inland. These were surface ores and no work had been done nor diggings made over two feet deep. He added that there were no experts in said lands for the reduction of metals, and that the maintenance of Guayana was impossible owing to the lack of residents; he also sent different specimens of earth and ores discovered to be reduced in this Court. Said letter having been submitted to my Council for the Indies, together with the samples of reductions of gold and silver, and the aforesaid earth and ores from the discovered mines, forwarded by Don Carlos de Sucre, I was pleased to order them to be sent to the Chief Assayer of my Mint in this Court, who, after examination and having made the necessary reductions and assays, reported to me that all the specimens sent by the aforesaid Governor were out-croppings imbedded in a sandy clay and were accompanied by a kind of talc very thin and flaky, and so light that it floated upon being washed. That some iron was present, for which reason the specimens were somewhat dry and hard to reduce, notwithstanding having been washed and submitted to the quicksilver treatment, many experiments and treatments being necessary to discover their fineness, and that, lastly, they were submitted to the lead treatment in the cupel, which gave better results, as a larger quantity of metal was extracted by this means than by any other; that for the present it was sufficient to have found gold and silver, as these being superficial ore, and upon boring deeper and the earth being more moist, they

**No. 22.**

might give better results, yielding their metal more abundantly; that most of the mines could not be estimated by their surface product, and that this was the case with the samples of gold and silver sent by the aforesaid Sucre, except those from Pararayma, which, upon treatment by lead in cupel, yielded from one mark of earth two and a half ounces of fine silver; that is five ounces of silver per pound of earth and five hundred ounces per hundred weight; besides, each mark of the aforesaid silver contained twenty-four grains of fine gold, which was the minimum that said earth could yield, as did the little silver lump (pifia) from the Cabauro mine, submitted to the quicksilver treatment; that he did not send the gold one, as the assay had been lost, but that it corresponded to twelve grains by mark, the fineness being twenty-one carats, which was quite common in those countries where gold ore was found; that among these, many would be rich and abundant in this metal, and upon their discovery and development their yield would increase daily, as was the case in *terra firma*; that on this account the report of the aforesaid Governor was of no mean importance, the promise for the future being large, particularly since the gold contained in the above mentioned mines, according to the result of the assays he sent, although said assays were made without any art, was of such good quality that its fineness was more than twenty carats, and that, perhaps, there might be others of a higher number of carats and of a more abundant yield on account of the richness of the veins, the facilities and low cost of its development, which would yield a larger benefit to miners, as the gold mines being ordinarily of superficial character, their only expense would be the cost of excavation, extraction of the ore, its crushing and washing, the gold remaining in small grains. The mud or slime, which is the most useful part of the earth, would remain with the smaller particles of gold, which are allowed to settle, and then gathered and passed through very coarse sieves, submitting them to the quicksilver process as is ordinarily practiced. For this operation, intelligent and experienced men are needed both to work and to teach others, otherwise it would be a useless loss of time. To this end, well posted men from *Terra Firma* and other adjacent countries where mines are found, could be sent there. The place could be well supplied with quicksilver for the treatment of the metals, and of lead, clay and cupels for the smelting and refining processes; that it was also indispensable to furnish tools and other implements for the excavations and treatment of the metal, such as spades, crowbars, pickaxes, hammers, wedges, sieves and such, which would be ordered at the expense of those having an interest in the mines, should I consent to honor them with some concessions. Many would be encouraged and would settle in those lands to undertake the working and development of the mines; thus my Royal Treasury, without incurring in any expense, would, in time, derive the benefits already attained in other mining settlements of America. My aforesaid Council for the Indies having become acquainted with the aforesaid report of the Chief Assayer, as stated by



**No. 22.**

my Attorney, has deemed it expedient to inform you of the foregoing, so that upon your arrival at Cumaná you should proceed to inspect the mines which Don Carlos Sucre has been informed exist in Guayana, and find out what the possibilities are to put in practice the recommendations of the Chief Assayer; to this end I order you to communicate with the Viceroy of Santa Fé, who has been informed on this matter, so that you report to him, such being my pleasure.

Done at Aranjuez, June ninth, seventeen hundred and forty. I, the King.

By order of Our Lord the King. Fernando Triviño. Castle of Sn. Francisco de Asis de la Guayana, February thirteenth, seventeen hundred and forty-three.

NOTE. Here follows the order of the Governor, Don Gregorio de Espinosa, commanding that the Royal Cédula be complied with and the orders issued for the inspection of these mines in the Province of Guayana at the places called Pararaima, Cabauro and the town of Cupapuy.

#### INSPECTION OF THE TWO MINES AT CUPAPUY.

Thereupon his Lordship, the aforesaid Governor and Captain-General, in company with the Most Reverend Father Prefect of the Capuchins, the Commander of this Province Don Francisco Montañez de la Cueva, and other experts, proceeded to inspect the two mines reported to exist in the vicinity of this town, which was done in my presence as a notary, and, having found that they existed, he asked and requested the aforesaid Reverend Father Prefect to have extracted and treated by washing and by baking, in the manner that it had been done by him, for their examination, one flask of the material from each mine, for the best service of the King, and in order to comply with the Royal Orders which his Lordship has received. Said Rev. Father Prefect accepted this commission, promising his Lordship to fulfil it, and appends his signature to which I hereby attest.

ESPINOSA,  
FRAY AGUSTIN DE OLOT, *Prefect*,  
DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA, *Notary Royal and Public*.

#### INSPECTION OF THE MINES OF PARARAIMA AND CABAURO.

In the town of Santa Bárbara de Pararaima, on the twenty-fourth day of February, seventeen hundred and forty three, where his Lordship has arrived on this visit, said town belonging to the Conversions of the Rev. Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, the visit being made in accordance with the provisions of the Royal Order, dated at Aranjuez on the ninth of June of seventeen hundred and forty, and orders issued for the fulfilment thereof in the City of Santo Thomé de la Guayana on the fourteenth day of February of this current year, his Lordship caused a meeting of experts to be held and obtained information in reference to the existence and location of the

**No. 22.**

two mines of Cabauro (which is a running spring in the vicinity of this town) and of the Pararaima Mine, and in company with those persons who had given assurance of their existence and of the Rev. Father Joseph de Sarráel, Capuchin Missionary Monk, under whose charge this town is placed, his Lordship proceeded with me, the undersigned notary, to make the inspection and ocular verification of said mines, which, having been done, and having found them at only a short distance from said town, he requested and asked the Rev. Father, that, with the aid of the converted Indians, he should refine two flasks of the material produced by said mines, separating the contents of each for the benefit of the Royal Service. Said Rev. Father promised to effect it and signed with his Lordship, to which I hereby attest:

ESPINOSA,

FRAY JOSEPH DE SARRAEL, *Missionary,*

DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA, *Notary Royal and Public.*

His Lordship, the Governor and Captain-General of these Provinces, in view of the foregoing orders, stated that, as to the four mines mentioned therein, one flask had been filled from the material produced by each, and that as two others were discovered, one on the road from the town of Pararaima, in the place where they take water in the burnt city, which place is still called *Usupamo*, said mine being reported by Joseph Hernandez, and another in the vicinity of the town of Caroni reported by the Very Rev. Father Benito de Moya, Capuchin Monk, the Captain and other Indians of said town, two other flasks had been filled with materials thereof, the six flasks stating on their label the places where the mines are found and the materials therein contained, and that Don Pedro Lopez de Brito is about to leave for the City of Santa Fé, commissioned and empowered to collect the funds of the two allotments due to the Company in charge of the Castle of S<sup>a</sup> Francisco de Asis in this province; therefore, he (the Governor) did order and command that the Lieutenant of the Royal Officers pay, from the Royal Treasury in his charge, the expenses necessary to forward the materials from the aforesaid mines, and that he should suspend and stop the expenses of the small boxes that by order of the fourteenth of February last he was directed to pay, for the same purpose, as there is no further necessity for them, and that said flasks be delivered to the aforesaid collector of the funds, taking care that the labels upon each be plainly written, stating from what mine their contents are taken, the Notary here present to take the receipt therefor according to the foregoing; that said flasks be taken by him (the collector) to the City of Santa Fé de Bogota and be delivered to His Excellency the Viceroy of the New Kingdom of Granada; and in order to enable him to report to His Excellency for his consultation, as provided by His Majesty's Royal Cédula, the Notary here present shall draw up an attested copy of said acts and of the Royal Cédula which caused them to be made, which acts, together with the afore-

**No. 22.**

said Royal Cédula and consultation made with His Excellency the Viceroy, he shall file with the documents relative to the visit made by His Lordship to this Province, sending the originals to His Majesty. And by these presents it was thus ordered and signed in this city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana on the thirteenth day of March of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.--Drawn up on common paper, the stamped paper of the fourth class being exhausted, as I hereby witness.

ESPINOSA.

Before me, Diego Antonio de Alcalá, Notary Royal and Public.

**No. 23.**

Report of Don Eugenio de Albarado, dated Divina Pastora, April 20, 1755, and entitled "Religious and Economical Life of the Fathers. Earnings of the Community of Missions, as also private earnings of the Fathers, Indians and other dependents thereof."

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo General de Simancas," Secretaria de Estado, bundle 7890, folio 12.]

RELIGIOUS LIFE OF THE FATHERS.

Owing to the impossibility of observing the canonical hours in community with the accompanying Choir, Matins, Disciplines and other requirements prescribed by the admirable law of the Master St. Francis, they are exempt from many of these observances by Pope Leo X. in order that they may adapt themselves to the conditions of the country, as also by Adrian VI. in the Bull called *Omnimoda*; so that in their Prelate they have an Apostolic Subdelegate, and they perform the Divine office at such hours as may prove more convenient to them. The call for *Ave Maria* is rung at dawn, when they recite the Litany of the Virgin, pray a little, and say mass. Shortly after, they call for prayers, gathering in the church all the children, maidens and married women who have borne their first child, and recite together the *Pater noster*, *Ave Maria*, *Credo*, Commandments, and Articles of Faith in Spanish, with the assistance of the Missionary Father or his coadjutor, should he have any. They spend the day in manual occupations, or in reading books, according to their individual inclination; dine between eleven and twelve, and sleep their *siesta*.

In the evening the call to prayers is again made, when the same persons meet and repeat the same orisons, in the presence of the Father. In some towns, both in the morning and evening services, prayers are said in the vernacular *Pariagoto*, in order that the congregation may make more rapid progress in the knowledge of the mysteries of our Holy Catholic Faith. This duty performed, they employ the evening in whatever may suit them best, attending to the material interests of the mission and watching over the Indian women who with entire freedom have attained true religion. At sunset they repair to their house, sup before nine

**No. 23.**

o'clock, toll the bell for evening prayers, and before retiring for the night, take a turn around the town to see that their Indians are gathered peacefully, and then go to bed until the next morning.

As they do not form a community, the penance, fasting and other mortifications pertaining to their religious character, remain in the spirit of each, for though they may constantly eat flesh, and the crack of the scourge be not heard, they can in the eye of God attain no less merit within their innermost heart. Their dress is fashioned after that worn in Europe; but as they live in a warm country, and enjoy the privilege of the aforesaid Bull, some of them are clad in light cloth, others in woollen stuff and many in unbleached linen, for which reason there is no uniformity in the color of their attire, but all grow the same beard.

Under the same papal rescript they wear underclothing called by them *enjugadores* (sweaters), made of *crea* or striped linen, which they have in more or less quantity, according to the taste and means of each individual. They go about in bare legs, and on their feet wear slippers instead of sandals. This foot covering is not a novelty in the Indies, it being worn by the most observant monks. When obliged to travel from town to town, they go on horseback from sheer necessity, for the country being uninhabited, mountainous, full of wild beasts, and obstructed by many rivers and marshes, it would be impossible otherwise. On these occasions they take their *mono* with them on the horse, put on their buskin, spurs, pistols and sabre wherewith to protect their Breviary.

As regards the possession of worldly goods, a theologian of the Missionary Fathers explained to me that there was in America a medium between having and not having, this being the usufruct of property. Such is the case with the holders of hereditaments, entailed estates or trusts, but as they differ in the order of succession which should remain in the family, I take it that this missionary usufruct is in the nature of military commanderies, where the property reverts to the guild upon the death of the commander of the order. I suppose that this usufruct of the Missionary Fathers has its restriction, for it passes into the hands of a depositary, who is the Proctor of the Community of Missions, upon whom the latter has authority to draw on account of its property, as explained in the chapter devoted to their economical life.

I suppose, also, that this usufruct is employed for the benefit of the Church and of the Indians in the locality where it is acquired, so as to comply with the duties of Religion, and at the same time shield themselves against the charge of holding worldly possessions.

In the matter of continence they are exemplary in the highest degree, for to judge from what is reported in America of other missionaries and priests, they differ from all, and there is not a public instance of their having relaxed their vow of chastity. At the same time they are zealous in the spiritual care of the Indians, whom they educate with their example, and see to it that the Sacraments are administered to them,

**No. 23.**

in as far as their moral and intellectual advancement may warrant; and above all, that they do not neglect their daily prayers and other devotional exercises which the natives are apt to repeat mechanically rather than from conviction.

They are equally zealous in soliciting each a town for himself to reside in and preside over. But as there are more friars than towns, many of the new arrivals are obliged to serve under those who came over first, wherefore they are constantly urging the Prelate to allow them to go into the interior of the country with the view to founding a town and have the collation of the benefice attached thereto.

Out of the number of Fathers the Prelate selects one to assume spiritual charge of the town of Guayana and troops quartered there; he performs the duties of Curate of the former and Chaplain of the latter, and has the collation of the benefice by virtue of his presentation, without thereby being independent of his Prelate, for he is still considered a Missionary, and the town an appanage of the Missions of the Province.

For the election of a Superior they rigidly observe the laws governing their Community in the Province. Thus, at about the end of every three years they are called together at the Mission of Suay, where, after having implored the assistance of the Holy Ghost, they elect canonically, by unanimous votes, the individual designated as Prefect, to whom they pledge their obedience and the observances of the other formalities of their institute. This duty performed, they withdraw to the town of their residence to resume the exercises whereof an account has been given above.

---

**ECONOMICAL LIFE OF THE FATHERS.**

It is a well-known fact that up to the year seventeen hundred and twenty-four, Catalonian Capuchin Missionary Fathers who had come before were unable to maintain themselves in the Province of Guayana, owing to the great poverty of the country. The activity displayed, and measures taken by, the Reverend Fathers Fray Thomas de Santa Engracia, Fray Benito de Moya, Prefect Fray Augustin de Olot, Fray Bruno de Barcelona and two others who are dead (only Fray Benito de Moya and Fray Augustin de Olot being now alive), succeeded in overcoming the difficulty. They started a cattle farm, and the maintenance of human life once assured, went on with their work of converting souls. It was ordained that all the fathers should live upon the meat of the Mission, in towns that were successively founded, and as they were few at the time, the source of sustenance kept increasing every day.

According as the *Pariagoto* Indians, who inhabited the ramifications of the Imataka Mountains (one section of which, starting from Guayana, runs from north to south and the other from west to east), began to congregate in towns, to each of these was assigned a Friar with the designation of President, who in those days was the founder himself. Meat was the

**No. 23.**

only food available, and this not being enough for man's nourishment, they decided that inasmuch as the Indians raised *yuca* for their own consumption, they should at the same time raise a certain quantity especially destined for the Father, the latter thus supplying themselves with bread and meat.

The crop of *yuca* was followed in course of time, by those of rice, plantain, and sugar-cane, and out of the cattle farm and plantations arose the earnings and advantages mentioned elsewhere.

With the access of workingmen, coming from the Province of Barcelona, the towns began to grow, as shown by document No. 3; and being compelled to devise further means of subsistence, as the Royal Treasury failed to make good the assignments of the King in behalf of religious orders, and desirous, moreover, of adapting themselves in some measure to the institutions of their community, they decided to appoint a *syndic* and create a common fund to be managed by one of the Fathers in the capacity of *procurator*, as is done in Spain by the regiments of the army with the fund called *arbitrios*. To this common fund go whatever is collected from the assignments and all the proceeds of the industries whereof mention is made elsewhere. The Father procurator, with the approval of the Superior, has charge of the purchase and supply, by himself or through the syndic, of all the necessaries not produced by the Missions, for the sustenance of the Fathers, such as habits, underclothing, hats, cocoa, oats, flour for the sacramental wafers, wine for the Mass, salt and other items detailed under the head of expenses. The Father procurator likewise purchases for account of the Community, axes, knives, cutlasses, nankin, and other articles wherewith the Indians are paid for the days they have worked on the plantations for the benefit of the community, as shown further on. The surplus of this revenue remains, wholly or in part, in the hands of the syndic who resides in the town of Guayana. The aforesaid expenses having been made in due time, the goods are stored in the mission of Suay, where the procurator resides, and there they are distributed in equal parts, among the Fathers, who come for their shares from their respective residences.

This fund has also another source of revenue, namely, the private property of each of the brethren, who, with the consent of his superior, can dispose, for his own benefit, of the amount belonging to him, applying for same to the Procurator or Syndic, who is the depositary, so to speak, of this castrensian property. These two species of revenue are explained in the chapters relating to earnings; and speaking in a worldly sense, there can be no doubt that this economical institution has been admirable and most beneficial to the King's subjects, inasmuch as the Province of Guayana owes to its agency the food supply whereof it lacked formerly; so much so, indeed, that the troops and residents receive from the Missions not only bread and meat, but also all the other necessaries of life.

Each Father, in the mission where he acts as President or coadjutor,

**No. 23.**

constitutes himself the guardian of his fold, as did the Commanders of Peru and New Spain with the towns committed to their protection. His economic zeal very often compels him to don his hood for the purpose of defending his neighbors from injury. This demands an explanation. All the residents of the town of Guayana, from the Commandant down to the last free negro or mulatto, have no other *peons* to build their houses, till their grounds, or row their boats, than the Indians, whom they apply for at the Missions, for a limited time, and to whom they must pay for their work in money or its equivalent in goods, according to the tariff established by the Governor Don Carlos de Sucre. In the latter form of settlement, mistakes are apt to be made, or injustice done, and to avoid these, the Missions have instructed the Indians to show the Father President what they bring in compensation for their work; and if the money falls short, or the merchandise is not worth it, redress is demanded, either within or outside the Church.

It is, moreover, their policy, and in the nature of an act of charity, to take charge of the money that comes into the hands of the Indians, and give them its equivalent in exchange; for the Indian, in fact, does not know how to appreciate money, having a preference for nankin, gaudy ornaments for girdles, axes and cutlasses for tilling their grounds. Did the Father omit to do this, the Indians would be left without money when they came to the towns, as the people of Guayana continually repair thither to barter said goods for casave, plantains, chickens and spun cotton.

Under these principles of economy, they give the most admirable interpretation of the law, by transforming into advantage for the Indians of their town, that pay which, according to tariff, they earned working in the plantations of the community and other industries of the P. (sic) for, from the proceeds of the traffic, they separate the fruits of the Indians' labor, which they invest in nankins, ornaments and other implements, such as axes and cutlasses, to be distributed at the end of the year among the people of the town.

In order to insure due subordination and civil habits among the individuals of the towns, they elect out of the smartest and most sensible of the Indians a certain number of officers and ministers of justice, consisting of captains, lieutenants, ensigns, sergeants, *alcaldes*, attorneys and constables, all wearing their respective insignia, whom the Indians obey and are governed by while engaged in all the drudgeries of the town, such as carrying water, sweeping the church and the Father's house, making out the list of those who are to go to work as *peons* or rowers, as also of laborers for the plantations, and other personal duties to which they must attend. Thus the Father has but to give his orders to these persons who are obeyed and believed in more than the Gospel of the day.

Although the manner of making excursions into the forests for the care and conversion of the infidel souls was in accordance with the articles governing the religious mode of life of the Fathers, I include it in this

**No. 23.**

account; at least it will appear as a necessary digression, because, in truth, government is more necessary than the gospel, for the savages respect more the gun than the Holy Christ, and they are as ignorant of the Divine word as Europeans are of their vernacular.

Before, then, entering the forests, they prepare their stores of meat, salt beef, cassave and other things to subsist with their suite in those days of pilgrimage as well as some girdles of nankin and calico, hatchets, knives and cutlasses to present to the Indians, and beads for their wives. They select from the community of the Missions two or three trustworthy Indians of the tribe that inhabit the locality which they go to visit, and these serve as interpreters and witnesses of the good treatment given to the Indians who establish themselves in Missions. They also take one or two soldiers from the garrison of Guayana, who served as guard in the Missions and are well informed as to the road, and provided with swords and fire-arms. They then enter into the places where the Indian families are gathered in huts (according to their manner of living), and with these presents and kind words they endeavor to win them over and thus gain their good will. Some gather more fruit than others, but the first excursion serves only as a preliminary, and it is necessary to repeat the journey several times according to the character of the tribe, whether more or less barbarous.

In view of the great increase in the herd of cattle which since the year seventeen hundred and twenty-five were at the Mission of Suay, it was decided in seventeen hundred and thirty-four to remove them to the present farm, called the "Divina Pastora" (Divine Shepherdess). This town, which is one of those belonging to the Mission, consists of a sufficient number of cowherds, who with their wives and household, make a population of forty souls. The Father President and his coadjutor control the whole machinery, and they have an overseer (not an Indian) with his underling, who are directly in charge of, and expected to watch over, all the operations of the farm. The captain, lieutenant and other individuals representing the law, are entrusted with the mission of correcting and punishing the delinquencies of the Indians (that is to say, the cowherds) and of the *guarichas*, their women, wherewith are attained all the ends of a good administration. These cowherds, whose time is wholly taken up in looking after the cattle, are unable to attend to their *casave* plantations, or to hunt any fish for their maintenance. Consequently the Fathers have rightly considered it their duty to supply them with the necessaries of life. At the beat of a drum they gather to receive their ration of meat. As for the *casave*, when the proper time comes for preparing the ground, a work done exclusively by the men, the necessary hands are brought over from the other missions and paid according to local rates. This done, the women of the cowherds take charge of the sowing and other field work. These cowherds are likewise supplied by the Fathers with all other needful articles, such as girdles, knives and cutlasses, which they could



**No. 23.**

have acquired, as do the other Indians, if they worked for themselves all the year round.

The Fathers, realizing the importance of a good management, and mindful of the great need in which they were of acquiring horses and mules, both for the use of the cowherds and that of the brethren themselves—an item which figured largely in the annual expenses—conceived and carried out the project of another grazing farm, five leagues distant from the “*Divina Pastora*,” and to which they gave the name of the “*Yegüera*.” This they stocked with horses and she-asses, whereby the costly inconveniences were remedied, and soon they had mules for the droves, horses for the cowherds and brethren, besides a profitable industry, as is explained in the proper place. This breeding farm is tended by an overseer, his assistant, and six cowherds, and worked upon the same plan as the cattle farm, with the difference that no friars reside at the place, for it is considered a dependence, and thus maintained and managed by the Father.

Shortly after the establishment of this source of revenue, they began to discuss others, according to their needs. One of the most profitable in America is rum, both on account of the bad habit that has been introduced of “*taking eleven o'clock*” (as it is called) and because it is applied as a friction for bruises. Occasionally they give a little to the Indians whom they send on an errand. No less valuable is sugar, which is used in chocolate, lemonade, &c.; and as rum and molasses are the products of cane, they put up a mill in the territory, said mill being called by them the *Cacagual*, with extensive plantations of cane and plantain, of which that soil is prolific. With this industry, the needs of the Fathers were supplied in the matter of rum and molasses (the latter being a substitute for sugar), and a corresponding economy resulted in the disbursements. This *Cacagual* mill is situated at an equal distance from Caroni, Suay and Maruca, and thither come the Fathers from all the Missions, for their rations of both articles. This estate is in charge of an overseer (not Indian), who with four negro slaves take care of it, while to the Father Procurator of the community, who resides in Suay, belongs the duty of supplying it with all the necessaries, such as agricultural implements, apparatus for distilling rum and pans for boiling cane juice; at the same time providing the workmen with meat and clothing. For spiritual matters, which are confined to a holiday Mass and the annual confession, the estate is attached to the Mission of Maruca, the road to it being the best, and, in my opinion, the shortest.

The Fathers having duly considered that the principal cattle farm, “*Divina Pastora*,” was badly situated for the Missions, and that the continual transportation of the necessary meat was too expensive, concluded to establish small farms in Caroni, Suay, Altagracia, Capapui and Miamo, which could be managed by the Indians themselves, and from where they and the nearest towns in course of settlement could be supplied. This

**No. 23.**

proved to be a great boon, for aside from the attending economy in expenses and the saving of mules, on every slaughter day fresh meat could be eaten, and thenceforth there was no lack of milk for the Fathers.

---

INDUSTRIES FOR THE BENEFIT OF THE COMMON FUND OF THE FATHERS.

If account be taken of the increase in the stock of cattle occurring within the period embraced between the year 1725, when the large farm was started with 300 breeding cows, and that of 1734, when it was finally established under the designation of the "Divina Pastora," a simple arithmetical operation will suffice to ascertain what must be the number of head in existence at the present year.

One of the benefits and advantages derived from the principal cattle farm and its accessories, is the supply of all the fresh meat and jerked beef needed by the community of the Missions, not only for the Fathers, their servants, overseers and dependents, but also for the cowherds and their families, and any needy Indian who applies for it. Likewise profitable is the supplying of meat at the rate of six pesos per head to two-thirds of the people composing the town of Guayana, including the troops that garrison the castles; and at the rate of five, for the maintenance of journeymen, whenever there is any work going on for account of His Majesty. Though the latter is not continuous, the former brings in a goodly quantity of *reals*, paid out of the money of the *situado* (assignment) coming from Santa Fé every year. Add to this the profit derived from the exportation of large and small cattle to Trinidad, or sold to the first buyer that comes along, at double the price ruling in the country. With one thing and the other, the common fund or aggregation of gains, begins to increase.

Then there is the profit accruing from the sale of cheese, soap, tallow, butter and hides, which, after deducting the portion destined for the common consumption of the Fathers, the remainder is disposed of at sixteen *reals* per *arroba*, for hides, and eight, for cheese; though in fact, the greater part of these products, being consumed by the Fathers themselves, only a small quantity of cheese, tallow and hides is left over for the market. Indeed there are so many towns now, with a sufficient number of Fathers, that all the other commodities are needed for their sustenance, especially so the hides which are used for making halters, thongs for tying packs, trunks and other things. The same products supplied by the principal live stock farm are turned out by the smaller ones, wherewith some Missions assist one another, the remnant going to the common fund.

The "Yegüera" farm which to-day has a stock of 300 brood mares with the corresponding proportion of stallions, jacks and *garanes* (sic) affords the advantage of supplying each Father with a horse, while there is always available a certain number for the common use of the cowherds,

**No. 23.**

and a drove of fifty pack-mules, constantly engaged in the traffic between the Province and town of Guayana; with the further profit derived from the sale of these animals at fifty pesos apiece, outside of the province, whenever a chance is offered; for I learn that, although this trade is not continuous, it nevertheless yields many pesos, taking one year with another.

Then again there is the profit of one peso a head, charged for either mule or horse that is let out among the Missions to carry to Guayana whatever the neighbors purchase from, or barter with, the Indians of the towns, such as casave, plantains, and other products whereof they supply themselves. Neither the Fathers nor the Indians attached to the Missions are exempt from this contribution, for whenever they send out products of their own (as explained elsewhere) they must pay the same peso for the hire of the horse or mule employed therefor. So then, if in the course of a year there should be levied the corresponding tax upon the private property of the Fathers, Indians or other individuals belonging to the Missions, say upon 500 loads of casave, it will be so many pesos to the credit of the common fund.

The two sugar-mills (*cacajual*) turn out for the Fathers all the molasses and rum consumed in the Missions, as also the other things mentioned under the head of *Economical Life*. With these commodities a lucrative trade could be carried on by selling the rum in Guayana, where there is a great consumption of it; but I do not know, nor have I been able to find out, whether this is done. It is certain, however, that they derive no profit therefrom outside of the Missions; for the Commandants of Guayana take good care that it be sold only at the *estanco* (store for selling forestalled goods), which has been placed under the head of a third person, and is kept by them in constant supply of foreign rum or brandy.

The plantations of the community, described under "Economical Life," supply the Fathers with all the bread they need for themselves, their servants, overseers and other dependents, the surplus being sold for the benefit of the community and the proceeds thereof handed over to the Father Procurator, as has been said. The price of this *yuca* bread is six *reals* per *arroba* (25 lbs.) and the surplus from the plantations of the Fathers in all the towns, when taken together, averages a yearly profit for the community of a sum equivalent to 150 loads of casave, which, if sold in the Missions, are worth two pesos each, and if in Guayana, three, on account of the transportation, which costs eight *reals*, as stated in the chapter relating to the "Yegüera." Nor does that which is sold in the towns fail to yield its corresponding profit at the rate of three pesos, since the purchaser pays the carriage, if he has no horse or mule of his own.

Into the common fund go likewise the proceeds of the salary and perquisites of the Parish of Guayana, which is served by one of the Fathers, in the manner already set forth, who, in accordance with the economical laws of the order, is supplied by the community with all the necessaries

**No. 23.**

apportioned among the rest of the Fathers. His salary as Chaplain, is the same as that paid to a private, namely, one hundred and ten *pesos* a year, but in hard money, as it comes out of the assignment sent from Santa Fe for the troops. The perquisites might exceed two hundred *pesos*, but as the country is poor, and the people needy, I think that barely one half is collected, the balance standing as uncollectable debts.

---

INDUSTRIES FOR THE PRIVATE BENEFIT OF THE FATHERS.

Aside from the fee paid for each Mass, which in this Province is four *reals*, the private earnings of the Fathers are limited to rice, indian corn, tobacco, poultry and some *casave*. After supplying their larder with the two first for the consumption of the year, the surplus is marketed with the rest for their private benefit, either by themselves in the Missions, or through the Procurator or Syndic, this being the property whereof they dispose for their own benefit, in the manner of that belonging to a camp, as mentioned in connection with the second source of income corresponding to the common fund, under the head of "Economical Life."

The price of seed-rice is three *pesos* per *fanega* (55.34 litres) and of maize or Indian corn, eight *reals*. No doubt these grains could be made to yield a greater profit by planting them; but the Fathers are contented with little, especially in the Missions inland, and only those of Suay, Maruca and Caroni, export corn to any extent. Tobacco they consume themselves, and as for poultry, they use the eggs, and one or two fowls, in case of sickness, making some little profit by selling a few chickens and hens at two *reals* apiece, current money, to people coming for them from Guayana or other towns.

Some of the Fathers residing inland, I reckon, do not neglect to get the Indians to extract the precious oils of *carapa* and *currucaí*, which they pay for with mankin, or other objects held by them in high esteem. These are afterwards sold at six and eight *reals* per bottle, and fetch considerable more if taken out of the Province. In the pursuit of this industry they are equally indolent, and there is no doubt that much could be made of it, as it is in great demand, especially by foreigners.

Formerly, but not so much now, some of the missionaries reaped no little profit out of the traffic in hammocks, carried on with the Carib nation at the inlets of Paz, and which they used to make before they burned the towns in 1751. These hammocks were sold, and are still sold (though very rarely), at seven *pesos*, both inside and outside of the Missions.

**No. 23.****INDUSTRIES FOR THE BENEFIT OF THE INDIANS AND PERSONS UNDER THE PROTECTION OF THE MISSIONS.**

Besides the soldiers kept on duty as guards at the different Missions, there are scattered among them quite a number of Spaniards from the Province of Catalonia, some of whom are deserters from ships, and others have come in search of gain. They get enough food to sustain life from the hands of the Fathers, who willingly give it for the sake of their company. They grow tobacco, rice and corn; barter for beads the spun cotton of the Indians, and raise chickens; all which they regularly sell to those who come from the town of Guayana for the purpose of buying them.

These men, with the permission of the Father President, graze their colts and mules in the pastures of the community, and then sell them when occasion offers either in or outside the Province, by which means they manage to scrape together a few *pesos*.

The Indians of both sexes who live in the towns not belonging to the cattle farm, carry on a small traffic wherewith they supply themselves with girdles, annatto and beads. They grow on their plantations some *casave* and corn, but being so gluttonous and improvident, most of it is eaten and drunk in *chicha*, and what little has been spared this fate, they sell to the whites who come from Guayana to trade with them.

They also raise some chickens on their premises, and these are so few, that should they sell four, they are left without any.

In some towns they make ropes and cords, adapted to various uses, with the fibres of *Curagate*, a species of agave superior to the hemp of Spain, and as fine as flax. There is another kind called *Cuquida*, that has the same applications, but is not so fine. The Indians twist both, and sell them when they have a chance; but in most instances they must be ordered, and are charged for at from two to three *reals* each.

There being plenty of horse-hair available at the Mission of the *Hato* (live stock farm), the Indians weave it into a species of rope, which is highly valued as halters for horses. With this and what is left them of their crop, they trade with the whites whenever an opportunity is afforded them. Such, however, is the characteristic laziness of this tribe, that all the above articles come very dear, for they do not make them except when ordered, and even then after considerable trouble.

The Indians of Suay, Maruca, Caroni and some from other Missions, carry on a traffic in turtle-oil, for which they go to the Orinoco during the full moon of March. They return with an abundant supply of the stuff which is disposed of at four *reals* per bottle. The people living under the protection of the Missions are also in the habit of trading with the article and even some of the Fathers occasionally get it from the Indians, by purchase or barter, at the time of the yield, and when the season is over, hold it at eight *reals* per bottle.

**No. 23.****EXPENSES DEFRAYED BY THE COMMON FUND OF THE FATHERS.**

Owing to the defaults in the payment of the Royal assignment of one hundred and fifty *pesos* due the Fathers in the Province of Caracas, for each member, all the expenses of this community, now numbering twenty-two individuals, are paid out of the common earnings enumerated above. The most essential requirement for their maintenance, distributed in equal shares among all the Fathers, as described under "Economical Life," involve considerable expenditure. They must be purchased at high prices and brought from distant places, while most of them have to be supplied clandestinely from foreigners.

There being no commerce established between this province and others of the Royal domain, the Fathers are compelled to send an agent to the distant ports of Cumaná or La Guaira for their vesture and other necessaries of life not produced in the Missions. Their cost is thereby increased and they must be paid for in ready money. In exchange for their mules and other products, they get from the foreigners flour for the sacramental wafer, some striped cloth, axes, cutlasses and beads, which come out cheaper than if purchased in Spain. As to wine for the mass or assistance to the sick, Castilian oil, ornaments for the church, cloth or serge for dresses, cocoa, and books, which are supplied in common, these must necessarily come either from Europe or from the above-mentioned ports of America, where such commodities are always more or less dear, while the Missions cannot do without them.

No less costly to the community, though an indispensable item, is the transportation of salt, especially at the missions, for by reason of the great quantity of meat that is salted there, the consumption thereof is enormous. They have to go for it to the salt pits of Araya, or to Trinidad in the Windward, which is the nearest point; though generally they supply themselves in Guayana. This expenditure does not fall short of 250 *fanegas* per year, on an average, which at the cost of three *pesos*, amounts to \$750. Cocoa is never worth less than sixteen *pesos* per load in Guayana, and for their consumption the Fathers need twenty loads, costing \$320, and so with the other articles. In addition to what is allotted from the common fund, the Fathers have to purchase for their private account the same commodities, either because the share assigned them is not sufficient, or because they like to see more ornaments on their altars. In this manner they spend what was acquired by their masses or private earnings, and draw for it, as a thing of their own, upon the Procurator or Syndic, against the second source of income of the common fund, spoken of in "Economic Life." Thus, had they not accumulated gains for their maintenance, they would not have been able to subsist from want of the necessaries of life, nor to help their churches, as was the case before the coming of said Fathers, in 1724. There is no doubt that the good management of these men, especially the late Fray Thomas de Santa Engracia, and the

**No. 23.**

present Prefect, Fray Benito de Moya, has won many souls for Heaven, and to a certain extent fertilized the Province of Guayana. I shall not inquire whether their vows of eternal poverty have been legitimately suspended by the Apostolic Bulls, thus permitting the law of nature to prevail over that of God. But politically speaking, and having in mind their beautiful maxims of government, I find them deserving the renown of the most illustrious worthies, in the same manner as their religion in Catalonia has merited, among others, that of holy.

Province of Guayana, Mission of the "Hato" of "Divina Pastora," April the twentieth, seventeen hundred and fifty-five.

DON EUGENIO DE ALBARADO.

**No. 24.**

**Letter from Don José de Iturriaga, to Fray Fidel de Santo, Prefect of the Missions, dated Murucuri, January 29, 1756.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Antiguo Archivo de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

I presume that Sr. Don Joseph Solano will leave this place today in order to arrive by water to-morrow in Guiana. He is destined for the first sally and I so inform Your Reverence, so that Y. R. may consent to go to Guiana to confer with him in the matter of the particulars concerning the trip and in reference to the Mission. I would appreciate Y. R.'s acquiescence in this, and all your diligent activity so that this sally may take place at the earliest possible moment, as also the remaining sallies. I beg to offer again to Y. R. my obedience and pray to God to preserve Y. R. life for many years. Murucuri, Jan'y 29 1756— I beg to ask Y. R. to forward the enclosed and to request at once, for the journey one hundred Indians, forty or fifty of them knowing how to row. Kissing the hand of Your Paternity, Your most obedient servant—

**No. 25.**

**Letter from Don José de Iturriaga, to Fray Benito de la Garriga, dated Cabruta, April 11, 1758.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Antiguo Archivo de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

His Lordship the Bishop is going on this occasion to his visit to Guayana, and is well informed of the jealous care of that Venerable Community as was displayed in the exercise of its mission. I improve

**No. 25.**

this occasion to remind Your Reverence of the promised trip of Father Narciso, now that he can undertake it with the greatest comfort in the felucca transporting His Lordship. I ask the Commander for one hundred loads of cassave, and I shall thank your Reverence for its prompt remittance to Guayana, should the Commander ask them from Your Reverence. I have spoken with the Captain of Tapaquixi who is at present here, and he has expressed himself as if greatly offended by that sad event, and this question is settled with the reward he has demanded. Father Alexo has forgotten the promised canes and I would thank your Reverence to refresh his memory and ask him to send them to me at any time. Should there be any rice to spare, besides that needed until the crop, I would thank Your Reverence to have it sent to me. I renew my obedience to Your Reverence and pray God to preserve Your Reverence's life many years.

**No. 26.**

**Extract from a report by Captain Don José Solano, upon the contents of certain letters from Don José de Iturriaga, 1758.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo General de Indias " (Seville),  
Stand 180, Case 4, Bundle 9, No. 8.]

By way of the universal office of State have been forwarded to this of the Indies, with papers dated September 9th and October 31st, 1758, four letters which, from the town of Cabrute, writes Don José de Iturriaga, flag officer, attached to the boundary expedition in the Orinoco, the contents whereof are as follows:

**FIRST LETTER, DATED JUNE 12, 1757.**

States that Don Vincente Doz and Don Nicolas Guerrero, having recovered their health, were sent by him to inspect the Meta river up to the mouth of Sararc, and also to report to him about the Missions of Barinas, in charge of the Dominican fathers of Santa Fé. He encloses in the letter an instructive description of the observations made there regarding the depth of the river, and the condition of the Missions; also a chart of the river and the arms navigated by them, and Iturriaga adds that in order that the river may not remain bare on its margins, on the north side was added to it a work which he did formerly, and correct now with these observations, as shown by said chart.

That afterwards they had wanted to undertake some works, to which Iturriaga objected, being fearful lest they might lose their already precarious health, with the constant rains prevailing there; and notwithstanding all were doing tolerably well, they were still quite susceptible to any change of weather. For this reason it has also been impossible to inspect



**No. 26.**

other rivers whereof he was advised both by Don Eugenio Alvarado and Don Ignacio Milhau, who sent some bark called *canella* (cinnamon), their fruit and leaves; and he awaited an opportune time to go and inspect those trees and cure their bark as he understood those of the cinnamon tree were cured by the Dutch; and lastly, if this did not answer, he would make whatever other experiments he might deem suitable.

The aforesaid description gives a copious account of the depth and conditions of the river Apure, whose principal mouth is distant three leagues from Cabruta; that at its greatest ebb tide he found to be three and a half fathoms deep and eighty *varas* wide, the same as the Guarico: and he adds the other rivers of which this one is formed, and the places surrounding same, towns, inhabitants, &c., with an account of the Dominican fathers, priests assisting them, who founded those Missions forty-three years ago.

NOTE.—No antecedent is found in this private communication which might have led to this report of Iturriaga; and it probably was made in compliance with the instructions he mentions as having been given him by Don Joseph de Carvajal.

---

SECOND LETTER, DATED JUNE 16, 1757.

In this letter he replies to one of the Chapters of secret instructions given him by Don Joseph de Carvajal, which mainly deals with the question as to whether the Castle or stronghold of Araya should stand or be demolished: which subject, having been under discussion for a long time since, and there are various opinions thereon, is placed with a separate extract which follows this, regarding the necessity of examining the antecedents, it being the opinion of Iturriaga in this report that it should be demolished, as it answers no useful purpose in its present condition.

---

THIRD LETTER, DATED DECEMBER 15, 1757.

In this, written officially and not by request, he advises that having understood from the Capuchin Fathers of Guayana that the Dutch were building a new fort on the Maruca River, to the windward, and at a short distance from the "Boca de Navios" of the Orinoco, and convinced that the Commandant of Guayana would not of his own accord take any steps to discover the object thereof, he ordered that a barge be sent to inspect the condition of the works, size, artillery, &c.

The Governor of Guayana, Don Juan Valdes, replied thereto, in a letter dated the second of said month, that there was no such fortification at the place reported to him, nor at others near by, and that the only thing

**No. 26.**

that had occurred was that the Dutch of the Colony of Essequibo were trying to change the Guard which under the name of Post they maintain at said Channel of Moroca, bringing it down to the mouth which empties into the sea and is six leagues distant, having for that purpose made many clearings for planting at that place and the houses required for the accommodation of those Aruaca Indians and Hollanders; which occurrence he does not know for a certainty to whom it is due, and he had only heard say that its object is to prevent the negro slaves of the Company and residents of that Colony from passing over without hindrance into these Dominions.

Iturriaga understands from this report that the intention is to establish some sugar plantations, adding to their owners and slaves a certain number of Aruaca Indians, upon whom they rely the most, in order to prevent the passage of deserters, soldiers and slaves, Indians and negroes at that place, and that probably to protect these plantations against any uprising of slaves on either side, they had built some small fort with two or three cannon, served by four or six men.

In connection therewith, he says that some fourteen years ago he saw a Protection or Patent executed in Latin by the Governor of Essequibo in behalf of a Carab Captain, who lived within the Orinoco river; that this moved him to inquire upon what ground the Governor of Essequibo granted such Protection, and he ascertained that the States-General in their Patents to the Governors of Essequibo, add the title of Governors of Orinoco; and that it is a matter of fact that these Governors call themselves of Essequibo and the Orinoco in the licenses issued by them.

That being permitted to-day in Moruca, they will some other day pass into Barinas, and thereafter come to the Aguire river, whose mouth is in the Orinoco itself, a few leagues distant from the sea; that up this river the neighborhood of the Palmar Mission is reached, and by this means they will attain free communication with the other missions inland, as they had already done through the indifference of Father Friar Bruno of Barcelona; albeit for this reason he was removed therefrom by his Prefect and reduced to serve as a companion at another Mission, without any voice, active or passive, in their Chapters.

He adds that he does not quite approve the title of Governors of Essequibo and of Orinoco, but deems needful for their benefit the request that they make by writing, to the Commandant of Guayana, that their Aroacas who come to fish for turtles be allowed to pass higher up. The text of this letter is mainly confined to this subject.

---

FOURTH LETTER, DATED APRIL 19, 1758.

[This] takes up the subject of the previous one, and in response to fresh inquiries addressed by Iturriaga to the Governor of Guiana, the latter

**No. 26.**

informs him that the change of the Guard maintained by the Hollanders of the Colony of Essequibo, as above related, had not taken place, and they had only built a house fifteen *varas* long, at the mouth opening into the sea, which they say is intended for the use of people traveling to said Colony during the interruptions caused by the periodical flowing and ebbing of the river, and that consequently said guard is kept without any increase of men or artillery; and that said Aruaca Indians, located at this place for purposes of trade, form three town divisions, each consisting of from ten to twelve small houses, corresponding to a family of Indians, and lying a league or more apart from one another close upon the margins of said Moruca river.

And Iturriaga adds to this report that the people of Essequibo declared openly and maintained that the extent of the Dominion of the States-General reaches to the "Boca de Navios" or great mouth of the Orinoco, and they even go far into the interior to make the most of their fishery, impelled thereto by the total lack of flesh in their country and the great scarcity of fish in their river.

---

These four letters having been referred to the naval Commander, Don Joseph Solano, he agrees to the opinion that the fortification of Araya (which place has been evacuated), answers no useful purpose, and admits as correct the reports regarding the condition of the Indian towns of Barinas presented by the naval lieutenants Don Vicente Doz and Don Nicolas Guerrero.

As to the context of the third and fourth letters of Iturriaga, anent the claims of the Hollanders of Essequibo river to the Orinoco, he fails to find on what basis they make their claims, unless it be the passiveness wherewith the Commandants of Guiana have allowed them to fish in "Boca de Navios" and Barina and Aguire rivers, and extend their navigation up to Guayana. That they thereby stretch their dominion to the great mouth of Orinoco and penetrate into Barcelona, Caracas and Varinas, and but for the assistance of the Guard and Garrison of Guayana the Missionary Fathers would not have been able to hold their ground.

\* \* \* \* \*

**No. 27.**

**Letter from Don José de Iturriaga, to Fray Benito de la Garriga, dated Cabruta, December 12, 1758.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Antiguo Archivo de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

I have received two [letters] from Your Reverence dated the 13th and 21st of November, dictated by the love and charity that Your Reverence and

**No. 27.**

his Venerable Community have always shown me. I beg to thank Your Reverence for the 100 loads of casave and 26 bushels of rice which Your Reverence ordered to be delivered at the house of Don Felix Fereras, and I am certain that should the corn crop not have been so bad, Your Reverence would have helped me with some of this grain. Don Felix tells me that he has ordered a house to be built at the port of Cacagual, to facilitate getting Indian laborers, rowers and the loading of grain sent from that place to this, and avoid the risks of the bad summer at the port of Guiana. Your Reverence may order in this matter in the way you deem most expedient. It is well that the Caribs are leaving the Cuyuni, although it may be for fear of the Hollanders. Your Reverence may found with them new settlements; thus they might be few and large in order that they could be attended to by Missionaries, as the small number of these would not suffice but for one for each settlement. Those expected by Your Reverence will be employed in due time. May they arrive soon to see that land and water populated! Your Reverence must not be concerned about the Hollanders; they are not in a state to annoy us. The movement of the Governor of Essequibo was a flame of his passion. I cannot believe it will be approved by the States-General of Holland. I have written urgently to the Gov. in regard to the proposed settlement of Guaycas, with a fort and garrison; a favorable reply may be expected to the representations of Your Reverence. The need of Father Prospero and the absence of Father Fidel on account of sickness of the Father of the Hato, are to be regretted. May God grant that upon his improvement of health he (Father Fidel) may soon come to your aid. I know already that Father Guardia has founded in Carauaschi a large settlement of Caribs. I would like to see in the Angostura of Arimnarva one of good Guayanos, even if there were not over 15 or 20 families from Cupapuy, accompanied by some soldiers, to defend the passes with swivel or small guns placed at the sentry boxes. I renew my obedience to Your Rev. and pray God to preserve Y. R. life many years.

Cabruta, Dec. 12th, 1758.

Y. R. will please let me know if the women of the Caribs captured by the sloop that carried His Lordship to Guayana are in Murucuri and how many there are.

---

**No. 28.**

**Report of Fray Fidel de Santo, Prefect of the Catalonian Capuchins of Guayana, as to the Missions, their times of founding, causes of their destruction, etc.; dated Purisima Concepcion de Suay, February 26, 1761.**

Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo General de Yndias," (Seville), Stand 133, Case 3, Bundle 16.]

If it is indeed true that since the year seventeen hundred and twenty-four the Indians in the Province of Guayana began to believe in the Cath-

**No. 28.**

olic faith preached to them by the Catalonian Capuchin Missionaries, and it could thus be stated that their true foundation began at that time, it is also true, however, that it was not in that year when the Holy Gospel was first preached in said province as it is inferred from an old book of Records of Baptisms that since the year sixteen hundred and sixty-four, several priests at various times undertook the pacification and reduction of the natives such as Father Joseph Sampayó, a Dominican Monk, Father Manuel de la Purificacion, Barefooted Monk of the Order of San Augustin, the Clergymen Don Francisco de Roxas, Don Miguel Buenaventura de Angulo, Don Joseph de Figueroa and the Prebendary Don Andres Fernandez; the Jesuit Fathers Juan de Vergara, Dionisio Mesland, Francisco de Mauri and Ignacio Cano; the Catalonian Capuchins Father Angel de Mataro and Father Pablo de Blanes. To these last named Capuchins and others, the Fathers of the Company made a solemn renunciation of said Missions in the year sixteen hundred and eighty-one, by authority of the Governor of Trinidad, Don Tiburcio Axpe y Zúñiga, who conveyed them to said Catalonian Fathers in compliance with the Instructions he held from the Royal *Audiencia* of Santa Fé to provide Missionaries for the Province of Guayana as it appears from the Records kept in the Government of Trinidad as well as from the Royal Cédulas of February seventh, sixteen hundred and eighty-six, and April twenty-ninth, sixteen hundred and eighty-seven, by which His Majesty grants and conveys the Missions of the Province of Guiana to the Catalonian Capuchin Monks who from that time took charge of the same; but the misery, sufferings and deaths of the monks were so frequent, as no aid could have been given them in their plight, especially as regards the filling of the places of those who had died, that long interruptions ensued in the work of the Apostolic Missionaries, thereby losing entirely all the work done for the good of the souls and pacification of the natives.

Such was the state of the Province of Guayana in the year seventeen hundred and twenty-three, without priests or missionaries and without the necessary means to afford an entrance of the missionaries on account of lack of food. God was pleased, however, to supply them with one hundred head of cattle, through some pious persons; these cattle have increased to a goodly number and are today the means of supply for the missions in the almost extreme necessity the Indians would suffer if this food were not given them and it was desired to hold in the towns. This is attained through the inducement held out to them that they shall have the means wherewith to satisfy their wants.

This was the beginning of the foundation of the missions, which to-day number sixteen, with four thousand four hundred and six souls, seven thousand three hundred and eighty-eight baptisms, one thousand one hundred and ninety-five marriages, according to the rites of the Holy Roman Church; out of the number of Indians three thousand three hundred and eighty-four died in the communion of the Faithful. Besides the said

**No. 28.**

existing missions, there were eight more which were lost through several accidents and one thousand six hundred and eighty-six souls took once more to the woods. All this has occurred since seventeen hundred and twenty-four, the year of its foundation.

Since that year said missions suffered several alterations which were a great drawback such as epidemics of small pox on two occasions, that is in the years seventeen hundred and twenty-eight, and seventeen hundred and forty-one. The measles, in seventeen hundred and forty-four; the invasions of the Caribs in seventeen hundred and thirty-five, and the hostilities of the English in seventeen hundred and forty, all of these misfortunes causing the death of nine hundred and seventeen Indians besides the loss of towns and valuables, all of which caused considerable backwardness.

#### THE SIXTEEN EXISTING MISSIONS.

The *first* mission founded was that of the Purisima Concepcion de Suay in the year seventeen hundred and twenty-four with Indians of the Pariagoto nation. It has, at present, two hundred and twenty-four souls and has had since its foundation nine hundred and sixty-one baptisms, two hundred and sixteen marriages and four hundred and ninety-three Indians died a Christian death. Their lands are most excellent for the cultivation of all the fruits that may be grown in these provinces, particularly for cocoa. This mission has been devastated twice, once by the small pox and the measles and another time by the English.

2nd. In the year seventeen hundred and twenty-five, the Caroni Mission was founded with Pariagoto Indians naming as its patron St. Anthony of Padua. It has to-day two hundred and twenty-four souls and since the year of its foundation, nine hundred and sixty-two baptisms have taken place, over two hundred and thirty-seven marriages celebrated by the Church, and five hundred and ninety-seven Christian deaths. Their lands are equally as fertile as those of the above mentioned mission. It has suffered from several invasions of Caribs in which thirty-seven Indians were killed, besides it also suffered from the epidemics of small pox and measles common to all the other missions founded up to seventeen hundred and forty-four. This town has been burnt three times.

3rd. The Mission of Nuestra Señora de los Angeles de Amaruca was founded by Pariagotos in the year seventeen hundred and thirty in good lands for the production of cocoa and other fruits. It has to-day two hundred and twenty-eight souls. It was removed to another locality only suitable for cotton and cattle. Said mission suffered the same drawbacks as those mentioned above. In seventeen hundred and forty, it revolted through instigation in favor of the English. It has had six hundred and ninety-seven baptisms, one hundred and thirty-three marriages and six hundred and fourteen Christian deaths.

4th. The Mission of Cupapuy was founded in the year seventeen hun-

**No. 28.**

dred and thirty-three with indians of the Pariagoto nation and under the patronage of St. Joseph. It has, at present, six hundred and thirty-three souls. The mission has had twelve hundred and nineteen baptisms, two hundred and seventy-nine marriages and five hundred and eleven deaths. Its lands are most useful, especially for tobacco growing. It has not suffered as many mishaps as those before mentioned.

5th. The Mission of Our Father, San Francisco de Altagracia, was commenced in the year seventeen hundred and thirty-four, with Indians of the same Pariagoto nation and has, at present, four hundred and ninety-nine souls. There have been one thousand three hundred and fifty baptisms, three hundred and one marriages and eight hundred and sixty-eight deaths. Its situation offers great advantages for the cultivation of cocoa and cotton, but it is not as well suited for cattle as the extent of the land is not very large. It was removed once and revolted in seventeen hundred and forty.

6th. The Mission of the Divina Pastora de Huarimna, also composed of Pariagotos was founded in seventeen hundred and thirty-seven in another place called Yacuaria, and is located to-day in the aforesaid Huarimna. It is composed of two hundred and nineteen souls. It has had two hundred and thirty baptisms, fifty-eight marriages and one hundred and sixteen deaths. Its lands are admirable for grazing and it is here that the cattle, used for food for the Missions, are kept.

7th. In the year seventeen hundred and forty six the Mission of San Miguel del Palmar was founded in a locality excellent for all purposes where it still remains. Its Indians are partly Caribs and partly Pariagotos, numbering in all three hundred and fifty. It has had two hundred and sixty baptisms, forty six marriages and one hundred and twenty three deaths. Said Mission suffered no other alteration than that of the flight of many Indians who abandoned it on several occasions.

8th. The Mission of Nuestra Señora de Monserrate de Miamo, founded in the year seventeen hundred and forty eight, was completely lost in seventeen hundred and fifty by the uprising of the Indians who are Caribs and who burned the town, having killed a Spaniard previously. It was re-built two years after by incredible work on the part of the Missionary and has to-day five hundred and twenty-nine Caribs and has had three hundred and twenty six baptisms, twenty marriages and two hundred and twenty six Catholic deaths. The lands are very good for the cultivation of cotton, cocoa, tobacco and cattle raising.

9th. The Mission of the Anunciacion de Aguacava, being founded in the year seventeen hundred and fifty-three with about three hundred of them but they have had little perseverance and no increase because, in addition to not being able to keep them subjected for lack of a garrison their nature is particularly inconstant and they have always been running away, and are still, on account of the facilities afforded by the rivers Caroni and Orinoco, on which shores this mission is situated. For this reason it has to-day only eighty-seven souls, although endeavors are being

**No. 28.**

made to settle the "Cimarrones" (fugitives). Since its foundation it has had one hundred and one baptisms, five marriages, (the marriage by the Church in the Carib nation is very difficult; many of them have several wives which cannot be prevented until there is more help) and thirty-three Christian deaths. Good lands for all purposes.

10th. In the year seventeen hundred and fifty-four the mission of Santa Eulalia de Murucuri was founded with Carib Indians. It has to-day three hundred and twenty nine souls, exclusive of the seventy two that ran away with a captain named Tumatu in the year seventeen hundred and fifty nine. It has had two hundred and eighty baptisms, two marriages, and forty-one Christian deaths. The lands at a distance of one and a half leagues, are suitable for cocoa, but barely so for cattle.

11th. The Mission of Yuruari, under the patronage of St. Joseph of Leonisa, was founded in the year seventeen hundred and fifty-five, and is composed of Guayca Indians whose nation extends far into the South and is much inclined to settle. This would not be difficult if the missionaries had the means to accomplish it, as they are very mild indians, although somewhat fickle, and desertions frequently occur.

12th. The Mission of San Fidel de Carapiry was founded with Carib Indians in the year seventeen hundred and fifty six and has at the present time two hundred and eighty souls, with one hundred and sixty baptisms, six marriages and twenty five deaths. They have behaved well so far, but we fear their love of freedom, as Caribs in common with the others, on account of the lack of troops to command respect. Said mission lies in a most beautiful locality and its lands are most excellent for cattle grazing and of good quality for the raising of cotton and tobacco.

13th. The Mission of Abechica composed of Guayca Indians was commenced to settle and to develop in the year seventeen hundred and fifty-eight, and in the year seventeen hundred and fifty-nine was lost because the Carib Indians killed their captain in one of the wars so frequent between the Caribs and the Guaycas. The latter have been gathered this year to the number of one hundred and ninety one souls. From its inception it has had ninety six baptisms and about twenty deaths. Their lands are suitable for cotton and tobacco.

14th. The mission of Guaseypati was commenced in the year seventeen hundred and fifty-nine with Carib Indians. To-day it has two hundred and ten souls and has had one hundred and twenty one baptisms and ten deaths. The lands are fine for cattle.

15th. The Mission of Piacoa was founded in seventeen hundred and sixty with Arawaca Indians of whom there are seventy three to day; baptisms, twenty; marriages seven; deaths eight. It has lands admirably suited for the cultivation of cocoa, rice and corn.

16th. About the end of the same year of seventeen hundred and sixty the Cross was planted at a place called Arypuco with an invocation to Mount Calvary. This Mission has been commenced with Guarauno In-



**No. 28.**

dians who are a very extensive nation, although they are somewhat inconstant. At the present time there are only forty-two of them for lack of provisions, but there are hopes for an increase; fourteen have been baptised and there have been two deaths.

It must be remarked first: that almost all of the aforesaid sixteen missions are still being settled by new Indians attracted from the woods or the runaways that are caught and brought back.

It must be remarked second, that it is most difficult to gather many Indians in the same place, for two reasons: first, because as they are spread all over the land in small huts it is necessary to bring them from distant places in order to gather them together in one single place and they are not willing to leave their natural mode of living. The second reason is that in order to gather many of them it becomes necessary to bring together many captains, which is almost impossible, this being the reason why they and their followers desert when they quarrel among themselves which frequently happens. Besides this, it is very difficult for the present to subject many Indians, particularly those of the Carib nation.

#### THE EIGHT MISSIONS LOST SINCE THE YEAR 1724.

1st Mission. The first Mission lost was the Santa Maria de Yucuario in the year seventeen hundred and twenty-eight which was founded two years before. It was composed of one hundred and twenty souls of the Pariagoto nation. The cause of this loss was the small-pox.

2d. The second Mission lost was San Miguel de Unata, composed of Guarauno Indians, founded in seventeen hundred and thirty-five. It had one hundred and forty nine souls, and the cause of its destruction was the burning of it by the Caribs.

3d. In the year seventeen hundred and forty, the Payarayma Mission was lost on account of the invasion of the English. This mission was composed of Aruaca, Saliba and Guarauno Indians to the number of two hundred and ninety eight souls.

4th. In the year seventeen hundred and forty two, the Tipurua Mission was lost by reason of the uprising of its Indians who were of the Chayma nation and numbered one hundred and fifteen souls.

5th. In the year seventeen hundred and fifty the Cunuri Mission was lost, composed of Carib Indians who uprose, killed six Spaniards and shortly after their own Missionary. They numbered three hundred souls.

6th. On the same year and day the Tupuquen mission was lost, composed of two hundred and thirty Caribs, for the same cause as the last two mentioned: an uprising with the death of several Spaniards. The Missionary Father escaped death miraculously as at one time they had him tied for the purpose of killing him.

7th. The same misfortune befell, and in the same manner, the Curumo

**No. 28.**

Mission, also composed of Caribs to the number of one hundred and eighty souls. This happened in the same year of seventeen hundred and fifty.

8th. In the year seventeen hundred and fifty-eight, the Tarepi Mission was lost; its Indians, who were Caribs to the number of forty-eight, had in the previous year run away, were recaptured and gave evidence of constancy. They were placed in the same spot, but, impelled by their inconstancy, they ran away once more.

I hereby certify to the foregoing, and in witness thereof I have signed this in the Mission of the Purisima Concepcion de Suay on the twenty-sixth day of February, seventeen hundred and sixty-one. Fray Fidel de Santo, Prefect.

**No. 29.****Report upon Missions by Don Joseph Diguja Villagomez, 1761.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo General de Yndias," Stand 181, Case 2, Bundle 2.]

A general statement showing the number of Spanish cities, towns and villages, Indian Curacies and Missions, of this Government, &c., all as found by Senor Don Joseph Diguja Villagomez, Colonel of H. M.'s Royal Armies, Governor and Captain-General of this Province, at the time he made his general visit to them, which began on the ninth day of January at the City of Nueva Barcelona and ended at this City of Cumaná on the fourth day of July of the current year one thousand seven hundred and sixty-one.

Cities, towns and villages of Spaniards appertaining to this Government:

City of Barcelona.	
Town of Aragua.	
Settlement of the Pao.	
City and garrison of Guayana.	
Town of Carupano.	
Town of Rio Caribes.	
City of San Philipe de Austria.	
City of San Balthasar de los Arias.	
Garrison of Araya.	
City of Cumaná.....	Total 10.

Curacies and Missions of Piritu in charge of the Observant Fathers:

- Curacy of Posuelos.
- Curacy of San Diego.

**No. 29.**

Curacy of Araguaita.	
Curacy of Curateguiche.	
Curacy of San Matheo.	
Curacy of San Bernardino.	
Curacy of El Pilar.	
Curacy of Caigua.	
Curacy of San Miguel.	
Curacy of Piritu.	
Curacy of Tocuyo.	
Curacy of Purney.	
Curacy of Clarines.	
Curacy of San Francisco.	
Curacy of San Pablo.	
Curacy of San Lorenzo.	
Mission of Guiamare.	
Mission of La Margarita.	
Mission of Santa Bárbara.	
Mission of Santa Ana.	
Mission of Cachipo.	
Mission of El Cary.	
Mission of Chamariapa.	
Mission of Unate.	
Mission of Aribi.	
Mission of La Candelaria.	
Mission of Santa Clara.	
Mission of Santa Rosa.	
Mission of San Joachin.	
Mission of Mucuras.	
Mission of El Platanar.	
Mission of Atapiriri.	
Mission of Guaseiparo.....	Total 33.

---

**Missions in charge of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers:**

Mission of Cupapuy.
Mission of Altagracia.
Mission of Suay.
Mission of Amaruca.
Mission of Caroni.
Mission of Aripuco.
Mission of Aguacara.
Mission of Murucuri.
Mission of San Joseph de Leonisa.

**No. 29.**

Mission of Guarimna.  
 Mission of Carapu.  
 Mission of El Miamo.  
 Mission of Guasipati.  
 Mission of El Palmar.  
 Mission of Avechica.  
 Mission of Piacoa.

**Missions in charge of the Jesuit Fathers:**

Mission of Carichaua.  
 Mission of El Randal.  
 Mission of Urbana.  
 Mission of La Encaramada.....Total 20

---

**Curacies and Missions in charge of the Aragonese Capuchin Fathers:**

Curacy of Cocuisas.  
 Curacy of Chacaracuar.  
 Curacy of Santa Maria de los Angelss.  
 Curacy of San Felix.  
 Curacy of San Francisco.  
 Curacy of San Antonio.  
 Curacy of San Lorenzo.  
 Mission of Coicuar.  
 Mission of Caripe.  
 Mission of Guanaguana.  
 Mission of Terezen.  
 Mission of Puniere.  
 Mission of Guainta.  
 Mission of Caicara.  
 Mission of Tipirin.  
 Mission of Soro.  
 Mission of Amacuro.  
 Mission of Yaguaraparo.  
 Mission of Irapa.  
 Mission of Unare.....Total 20.

---

**Curacies in charge of the Priests of this Province:**

Curacy of El Pilar.  
 Curacy of Rincon.

**No. 29.**

Curacy of San Joseph.	
Curacy of Casanay.	
Curacy of Guripauacuar.	
Curacy of Caruaro.	
Curacy of Santa Cruz.	
Curacy of Santa Ana.	
Curacy of San Juan.	
Curacy of Aricaguas.	
Curacy of Arenos.	
Curacy of San Fernando.	
Curacy of Macarapana.	
Curacy of Mariguitar.	
Curacy of Altigracia.	
Curacy of Socorro.....	Total 16.
Grand total.....	99

**No. 30.**

**Letter from Fray Joachin Moreno Mendoza to Fray Benito de la Garriga;  
dated Guiana, May 4, 1764.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Antiguo Archivo de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

I have just received Your Reverence's letter of the 30th instant., and do not delay its prompt reply in order to enclose the certification I had forgotten, and because the best harmony and intelligence between us must exist in every thing. There is no doubt that if the displeasure of the Indians depends upon the high price of the articles given to them in payment, they are very right; but as I intend to go shortly to Angostura, I will investigate and remedy it in future, and in this supposition the Rev. Fathers may well give the Indians the assurance that I will do so, so that they go willingly. I will also endeavor to give directions to send ships to the port of Patacón as stated by Your Reverence and to send advice to Murucuri so that the Indians may embark without delay, and this will take place about the 20th or 22nd inst. But I call it to Your Reverence's attention that this gang must be of one hundred men. As I have stated to your Rev. 20 to 40 will follow close in November or December, in case that no greater number could be had and I shall leave, in regard to the good care and payment of the Indians, the strictest orders so that they may fear to neglect the least particular in my instructions. In regard to the price of the tools, I will also see that it is such as Your Reverence says, and the Royal officer will be in charge of it, and get everything as it is most convenient to the Indians. It is true that the church of Angostura is

**No. 30.**

not finished, but if there is no hindrance or impediment to prevent its consecration, even if it is not wholly finished, or by it something unbecoming may result, I would like to be present at the consecration, and for this reason I intend to have it done now while I am there, and in this case I shall esteem it greatly that Your Reverence should inform me without delay of his opinion in the matter, in the understanding that Rev. F. Fray Bruno is to return on the second day to his Mission of Monte Calvario. I remain at the command of Your Reverence with true affection, praying to God to preserve Your Reverence's life many years.

Guiana, May 4th 64. Kissing the hand of Your Reverence Your humblest and affectionate servant. Joachin Moreno Mendoza. M. R. F. P. Fray Benito de la Garriga.

Your Reverence may get ready the small trunk you said to keep the supply of holy oil, which I will take with pleasure and will either send or bring with me with due care and safety; in whatever else you may wish command me I am ready to serve. I have just received a letter from Angostura complaining that the pest of flies prevents salting the meat as it is soon lost. For this reason I will thank Your Reverence for your continuing to send some when possible, here to the R. officer and for sending some casave so as to succor those remaining here this winter as well as those of Angostura.

---

**No. 31.**

**Letter from Fray Joachin Moreno Mendoza to Fray Joseph de Guardia, Prefect of the Capuchin Missions in Guiana, dated Guiana, February 2, 1765.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Antiguo Archivo de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

Being desirous that the Royal Commissions, as they have been intrusted to me, be fulfilled with the greatest accuracy, and having seen by a letter of the temporary Commander resident in Angostura that the people taken to that place, are in a large measure sheltered under the trees, because they have no houses wherein to dwell; and being sorry for this, as it is meet, I am compelled to take the most efficacious measures so that they may not suffer the hardships of which I am informed by the said Commander; taking this and what I have said into consideration, Your Reverence will be pleased to help me to bear these troubles which demand the most prompt attention. I promise Your Reverence that I shall report to the King how much your Reverend Community has protected me. I do not doubt that Your Reverence would be duly rewarded. I therefore expect Your Reverence's ability to send me 100 Indians, laborers, for the work on the new settlement. With them and with those I have requested from the Jesuit Fathers, I expect to be free from all my troubles, each one of the poor men having his hut, as in justice he should. May God preserve Your Reverence many years.

**No. 32.**

**Letter from Fray Joachin Moreno Mendoza to Fray Joseph de Guardia, Prefect of the Capuchin Missions in Guiana, dated Angostura de Orinoco, April 17, 1765.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Antiguo Archivo de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

Reverend Father Fray Bruno has had the intention to return to his Mission, being worried about it, and I, seeing the necessity which exists here, with two very sick persons, have detained him here considering how much we should miss him, even if such reasons should not exist. I therefore pray Your Reverence to approve my determination and tell the Reverend Father to remain here while God remedies this with the arrival of the Reverend Fathers, who according to the news we have received arrived in Caracas last month, and for said arrival I present Your Reverence my cordial congratulations. Reverend Father, do not forget the bread and meat that it is necessary to store in abundance before winter, taking it either to Guayana or to Monte Calvario in order to bring it here. It is necessary that we open a good wide road from Caroni to this place, and from here to old Guayana and the Missions and should Your Reverence give his instructions in the matter to whoever it may concern, I would appreciate it much and help in whatever be necessary, paying its cost by account of His Majesty. I expect Your Reverence to inform me how this can be put in practice and whether Your Reverence will take care of it. I remain most affectionately at your command praying God to preserve Your Reverend's life many years.

**No. 33.**

**Extract from letter of the Prefect of the Catalonian Capuchins to the Commissary General, dated at Altagracia, July 6, 1769, as to a visit to Barima in quest of Indian fugitives, etc.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo General de Indias" (Seville), Stand 130, Case 4, Bundle 9 (10).]

Extract from a letter by the Prefect of the Catalonian Capuchins of Guiana informing of their having entered by the Barima in quest of some Indians, fugitive from Piacoa and San Joaquin, and of having ransomed from the Dutchman living in the port of Moruca three Indians taken from the river Masaruni; that the Governor of Essequibo complained of this fact to the Governor of Guiana, stating among other things that the same commander had taken away the men he had in Barima.

ALTAGRACIA, July 6, 1769.

ALTAGRACIA, July 6, 1769.

The Prefect of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers of the Province of Guiana, through the Commissary General, begs to inform Your Majesty that some (Indians) having run away from our towns of Piacoa and San Joaquin, he sent two missionary monks with an escort of soldiers to capture them, with other help sent by the Commander of Guiana; that they entered the Orinoco by Barima as far as the Savannah, which to his best knowledge is territory of the jurisdiction of said province, where one hundred and forty Indians were gathered, between the "Cimarrones" (runaways) of said towns and other heathens, and found that in possession of the Hollander living in the Port of Moruca there were three female Indians with their daughters whom he had enslaved and carried away from the mouth of the Orinoco, and from the river Masaruny, as they explained, and the monks carried them away with them, without any use of violence; also the other mentioned people, without harming the Hollanders.

That the Governor of Essequibo makes an issue of this to complain to the Commander of Guiana, of breach of the treaties, with insults and threats, feeling sore that said Commander should have carried away the men he surreptitiously had in Barima. The Commander has replied, among other things, that the monks did not go by his order but by the order of their Prefect, such being the truth; that the monks were not right in giving to the Hollander of the Post a paper stating that they went by order of the aforesaid Commander, when they went by order of the aforesaid Prefect.

The latter states the reasons he had to send the monks, with the object that his report be considered should the Hollanders, as he believes, complain to Your Majesty, and adds that they strive to extend their territories, etc., stating that the one allotted to said Mission, by Cedula of seven hundred and thirty six, for the reduction of the Indians, is from the narrows of the Orinoco as far as its large mouth in a straight line on both sides drawn to the river Amazon or Marañón. That this and the aforesaid complaint of the Governor of Essequibo lead him to doubt whether it is proper for him to go further in the interior henceforth to reduce the Indians of the mentioned places of Barima, Moruca, Cuyuni and even of the same coast; and that this being a point of great necessity in the practice of the reductions he has deemed proper to state his doubts before Your Majesty.

## NOTE.

The Minister of Holland having complained of the aforesaid proceedings against the Colony of Essequibo, his communication having being submitted to the Council, in consultation under date of October twenty seventh of seventy nine, several documents were requested of this reserved channel, to solve the question, and by dispatch of the seventeenth of Novem-



**No. 33.**

ber following, several of them were requested, the Council being under the belief that they exist in that Ministry. No reply has been made yet.

Instructions have also been issued to the Commander of Guiana and to the Governor of Cumaná to have ready the matter in reference to the subject of the complaint of the Minister of Holland. This letter and documents to be sent to the Council. Done on the twenty second of September of one thousand seven hundred and seventy.

---

**No. 34.**

**Letter from Fray Jayme de Puigcerda, Apostolic President of the Maruanta and Panapana Missions, to Fray Joachin Maria, dated Caroni, August 31, 1769.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Antiguo Archivo de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

Greeting and peace in the Lord. I will be much pleased should our intentions be successful, as they are directed to the glory of God. That which I most wish at present is the return home of the boys; because the Indians are quite capable of understanding supernatural things, and their good or evil, their science or ignorance, depends largely upon the education received during youth, and of our diligence in the matter, and the rest. I intend to write you more fully on this point, and how they must be prepared for the holy state of matrimony and other sacraments. I pray you to send me at the earliest possible moment the book you have prepared, for confession in the Guayanan tongue, to practice it with some Guayanos whom I am catechising to marry. I send you the fish net, although it needs some mending. My things are never to go out of my hands in a perfect condition. The river begins to fall, thanks be to God, and the Caribe (who are very desirous to go) tell me that it will not be in good condition until next moon. But I shall not be so patient; I am only waiting a little longer so that no other rising of the waters may occur at the time of crossing these most risky streams. Father Domingo gathered two hundred and eleven souls (God be thanked), and on the 28th inst. he had already passed the Presidio towards Angostura. He has great need of your help.

---

**No. 35.**

**Letter from Fray Joachin Maria to Fray Jayme de Puigcerda, Apostolic President of the Maruanta and Panapana Missions, dated Dolores, September 21, 1769.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Antiguo Archivo de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

*Timeamus ergo ne forte relicta pollicitatione introeundi in requie ejus existimetur aliquis ex (nobis) deesse.* About four hours before leaving

**No. 35.**

Cupapuy, Father Mariano arrived, and being so busy with the last preparations we did not read the letters and resolutions of Your Reverence until yesterday, when we arrived at this place of *Urru-tuima*, happily, thanks to God, and all the people very united and in peace; and may the Lord preserve it until this work of His be perfected. All my cares in this expedition will tend to obtain that all the events be directed by the Lord of all that is good. My consolation shall be that the Wisest Artificer may make of this decayed clay and tainted vapors a vase to carry the holy oil of His Divine Word and to smother the fumes of my wrath, and I shall bear in mind that upon several occasions the Lord has made use of the Demons themselves for the conversion of many souls. I have not the time to answer you; I shall state what I feel in regard to your resolutions on another occasion (if God be pleased). I have already written you that I would do my best in its direction. This matter, however, gives me great concern. I now direct you to ask from the Superior the permit to keep the little boys at the house (but not to sleep) until another occasion; and the request must be made in these words. (Father Joachin Maria de Martorel directs me to ask Y. R. Paternity for a permit to keep in the house all the boys in order to teach them; they to sleep in their own houses.) We all send regards, and I to Father Joseph Antonio, who is a lazy fellow who never writes, and does not beat me yet. I commend you to God and to Maria.

**No. 36.**

**Letter from Fray Joachin Maria to Fray Jayme de Puigcerda, Apostolic President of the Maruanta and Panapana Missions, dated Cupapuy, January 21, 1770.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

*Nos cum prole pia benedical virgo Maria.* Father Thomas de Mataró was here for a few days until he was cured, and wrote to me afterwards from Sta. Maria that I should not undertake the labors of teaching and others with so much fervor, because, if I should break down all would be lost. I replied to him that he should give me good encouragement and commend me to God, so that I might not fall back on account of my weakness. I have already written to the Commander of Guayana, and took some care with the style; I praise his accomplishments and endeavor to persuade him to polish off the roughness of their worldliness with the diamond of true virtue. May God grant this to be efficacious. My very dear Father Joseph Antonio: Besides what I have said in the one to Father Jayme I cannot avoid stating to you. Tell Father Manuel many things, and encourage him to cultivate the vineyard he has under his charge. I

**No. 36.**

say the same to Father Felix, both of whom you will not fail to see frequently. Tell Father Felix that the neighborhood he has is more than equivalent to my answer. Above all that he must not fail to place as the patrons of the new settlement St. Joachin and Sta. Aña; if not the Divine Daughter will grieve.

---

**No. 37.**

**Letter from Fray Bruno de Barcelona to Fray Jayme de Puigcerda, Apostolic President of the Maruanta and Panapana Missions, dated Caroni, February 26, 1770.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

Greeting. Constant occupations give me [only] a moment's leisure to reply to that of Your Reverence dated on the 9th inst. It is my will that Your Reverence should go to confession rather than to cross over to Angostura. Be patient, for the father from Puedpa has further to go. I had to go for three years from Palmar to Sta. Maria or Miamo. Father Mariano de Ceva had to go for 8 years from Presidio to Trinidad, which is less than from Maruanta to Sta. Ana or Calvario. You can well ask for them (alms) at Maruanta, where vineyards and beehives abound; the weavers of Maruanta will present as alms handkerchiefs and under clothes; also the shoemakers of Tapinería will furnish sandals and the wax chandlers of Carréampla will give candles. May God grant us His final grace and preserve Your Reverence's life many years.

---

**No. 38.**

**Letter from Fray Joachin Maria de Martorel to Fray Jayme de Puigcerda, Apostolic President of the Maruanta and Panapana Missions, dated Cupapuy, April 16, 1770.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

Greeting in the Lord. I spent the three days of Holy Week in Hupata, where I went on Wednesday afternoon, after having washed the feet of 12 Indians and fed them in this [town] of Cupapuy. We assembled there the Rev. Father Felix, Father Franco de San Julian, Father Raymundo de Olod (but this latter left on Thursday afternoon on account of the distance to his mission) Father Pedro Martyr and I. I have just received a letter from the Rev. Father Mariano de Sebadel and he informs me that all the Caribs from *Carahuaxi* took flight; I have had nothing further from Father Mariano than that enclosed in mine. I will address the letters to Angostura

**No. 38.**

under cover to Doña Gabriela; they will perhaps go safer this way and in less time. I suppose you have received the one I wrote *via* Angostura, dated this month, I do not recollect the day with certainty. Always command me. I recommend you to God and to the Virgin.

---

**No. 39.**

**Letter from Fray Joachin Maria to Fray Jayme de Puigcerda, Apostolic President of the Maruanta and Panapana Missions, dated Cupapuy, April 28, 1770.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

The peace and consolation of the Lord be with us. Amen. Your Reverence has enjoyed the company of our colleagues Father Jayme and Father Felix in the Holy Week; I lacked almost everything though we celebrated the services with several Fathers in Hupata. From the one to Father Joseph Antonio you may take the measures.

---

**No. 40.**

**Letter from Fray Bruno de Barcelona to Fray Mariano de Cervera, dated Caroni, April 28, 1770.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

Greeting. It has been hinted to me that Your Reverence has washed the feet of the *Cimarrones* (savage Indians). It is something that has never been put in practice in these Missions.

---

**No. 41.**

**Letter from the Prefect of the Missions of the Catalonian Capuchins of Guiana to the Commissary-General of the Indies, dated Caroni, September 17, 1770.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo General de Yndias" (Seville), Stand 131, Case 2, Bundle 17.]

My Right Reverend Father Commissary-General: After paying my respects and declaring my obedience to your most worshipful Reverence, as the humblest of subjects, I proceed in this duplicate to rectify what in my first letter I inadvertently forgot to mention, notwithstanding its being so just and deserving to be known amongst those nearest the Court until it reaches the ears of our Catholic Majesty, namely, the exalted merits of our

**No. 41.**

Commander-General, Don Manuel Centurion, who has perpetuated his name throughout all this vast Province, by reason of the ardent zeal wherewith he has labored and contributed, neglecting his own property, toward the conversion and reduction of the Indians within town limits; for despite the great extension of this Province, it had not attained such honor for God, such welfare for the souls and increase of the dominions of our Sovereign King, as during the period of the four years in which said nobleman has been ruling it; these Missions under my charge having reached the greatest lustre, thanks to the help and assistance rendered by the above-mentioned Chief; he having exposed his own life navigating the Orinoco river and consumed his fortune in the foundations of the two towns of Maruanta and Panapana, the former being wholly indebted to his assistance, while for said towns he has only asked of this his beloved Community the assignment of a Father for the administration of the spiritual nourishment; at the same time giving his assistance to all the foundations and towns that have been created: for the withdrawal of the Aruaca Indians from the Maruca river, with whom the town of Puedpa was founded; he assisted with the large vessel which he had armed and fitted out for the removal of the towns of Piacoa, Tipurua, Casacoima and Unata; he furnished vessels and soldiers for transportation to the new settlements of San Felix, and San Joaquin, and Santa Aña; men, arms, ammunition and stores for the fort of Ipeogin; the families for the settlement of Nueva Barceloneta, with their arms and ammunition, horses for the transportation and other utensils, facilitating that important foundation which promises security, extension and increase to our Missions. Therefore, Right Reverend Father, it is not just that the merits of such a noble gentleman should remain in obscurity, and from my gratefulness I am bound to entreat your Very Reverend Paternity to help me give thanks to the Most High God for such a great benefactor of these Missions and of the subjects and children of your Very Reverend Paternity, while we pray Him to guard and prosper the important person of your Very Reverend Paternity for many years.

Caroni, September 17th, 1770. Your Very Reverend Paternity's affectionate servant and humble subject, FRAY BRUNO DE BARCELONA, Prefect.

**No. 42.**

**Letter from Fray Bruno de Barcelona to Fray Jayme de Puigcerda, Apostolic President of the Maruanta and Panapana Missions, dated Caroni, November 8, 1770.**

[Printed from translation of certified copy of the original in the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

Greeting and Peace. I have received advices from Señor Centurion informing me that Your Reverence will go to that of *Maruanta* to stay: If

**No. 42.**

this is a resolution of the General Commander, I have nothing to say against it; but if it be that of Your Reverence of your own will or through your solicitation, you will inform me that I may decide it with the Reverend Father's, my associate judges, as I am not an arbiter in this. May God grant us His final grace and preserve Your Reverence's life many years to command me.

---

**No. 43.**

**Letter from Fray Joachin Maria to Fray Jayme de Puigcerda, Apostolic President of the Maruanta and Panapana Missions, dated Cupapuy, December 21, 1770.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

I am very glad of the progress of that settlement of *Sta. Rosa* and that Your Reverence has so much leisure for spiritual exercise.

---

**No. 44.**

**Letter from Fray Joachin Maria to Fray Jayme de Puigcerda, Apostolic President of the Maruanta and Panapana Missions, dated Cupapuy, December 22, 1770.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

The Rev. Father Felix is in a dispute with the two reverend fathers because the very Reverend Father Prefect and Fathers associate judges having gone to reconnoitre the site of the Parahua to locate the settlement which Father Pedro intends to establish, they found that things had advanced so that Father Pedro had already built a regular house with doors and windows through Maricapana.

---

**No. 45.**

**Letter from Fray Joachin Maria de Martorel to Fray Jayme de Puigcerda, Apostolic President of the Maruanta and Panapana Missions, dated Cupapuy, January 19, 1771.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

Father Benito de la Garriga I believe is going to the Parahua as Curate of the Nueva Barceloneta where (as it is said) a herd of about 4,000 head of cattle will pass. The Arinagotos whom, under the Rev. Father Felix, we stationed at the mouth of the Parahua have increased a great deal and have plenty to eat there and ask for Father——.

**No. 46.**

**Letter from Fray Joachin Maria de Martorel to the Fathers, dated Cupapuy, February 20, 1771.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

My Rev. Father Felix and other Fathers who may read this: To the aforesaid it is now added that, as it is necessary to supply meat and jerked beef in so many places, the Superiors have ordered that the Indians from the different Missions go with their own horses to collect large herds of cattle and to take them, some of them as far as Parahua, others as far as Alta Gracia, and the others as far as Caroni. Besides the aforesaid the Superiors have undertaken to build a provisional fort on the island of Faxardo at the cost and expense of the Mission.

**No. 47.**

**Letter from Fray Fidel de Santo, Prefect of Missions in Guayana, to Fray Francisco Joseph de Barcelona, Provincial Minister, dated Tarragona, August 8, 1771.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

After greeting your most Reverend Paternity with all affection I answer the questions asked in yours by saying that 1st, I do not know that any Mission of the Jesuits after their expulsion, has been placed in our charge, other than that which has been advised from Madrid by the Commissioner of War, Don Victor de Comba, whose letter I delivered to your Reverence on the occasion of the visit to this convent wherein the latest news is contained that I have had of the Missions from Madrid.

2nd, I am of the opinion that in order to have our Missions well provided with men, 18 priests, with two lay nurses should go in the next reinforcement.

3rd, in case that the old Jesuit Missions of Orinoco, Meta and Casanare should be intrusted to us (which in all would be about 40 settlements), there would be no necessity to think of establishing them at another point, but they could remain on the borders of the said three rivers where they have been founded; but a good deal of work would be required to make them of use to Her Majesty through Catalonian economy.

And when such settlements shall be given us (which now possess several *religieuses* and a few clergymen) the increase of missionaries to be sent there will be already known, and then it would be necessary to create presidents appointed at several of the long distances where these bodies are established, but subordinate to the Reverend Father Prefect. The Governor of Caracas, Don Joseph Solano, was very desirous that we

**No. 47.**

should take charge of the Orinoco Missions left by the Jesuits, and which he put temporarily in charge of some clergymen; but as he did not offer them expressly but only made insinuations, and besides, considering that we have a large enough territory wherein to work for several years, in that which has been allotted to us, we did not want to identify ourselves with this matter while this Governor (at present of St. Domingo) was in Caracas, and especially the King our Lord having appointed D<sup>e</sup> Manuel Centurion as Commander General in representation of said D<sup>e</sup> Joseph Solano, who, as his godson, was permitted to carry out his devices against the progress of our Missions and the settlements we formed of Spaniards by royal decree and escorts of soldiers, on account of his resentment because His Majesty granted them to me when I went to Madrid with this object, without the advice or approbation or intervention of anyone. It is impossible in writing to give Your Reverence an accurate idea of these persecutions of this Minister against us daily, and he has still over a year to remain to complete the five years which they generally remain in the Government. Furthermore, his power being now absolute, not being in any way subordinate to the Government of Caracas, what will he not do? All under pretext of better serving the King, his idea is only to appear as deserving of greater credit before His Majesty at our expense and detriment. I send enclosed an accurate statement of what the King was accustomed to give the Missionaries in Cadiz, and also the conditions of the Missions when I was Prefect there, remarking that since they have increased by the following new settlements: 1st Caballapi, 2nd Caruaxi, 3rd Oratuyma, 4th Tipurua, 5th Casacoyma, 6th Curono, 7th Cumano, 8th Tauaxi, 9th St. Antonio, 10th Nuevo Tupuquen, 11th item two others that I do not recall; and which I think the Rev. Father Benito de la Garriga mentioned in the letter which I also delivered to Your Reverence, at the time of your visit. We also founded since then the Spanish town called St. Antonio de Hupata at great expense to the Missions, but said Commander Centurion has endeavored to ruin it under various pretexts and to annoy the neighbors in order to attract them to his apparently new settlements. Your Reverence may command my true obedience and affection by which I pray God to spare your person many years.

**No. 48.**

**Letter from Fray Bruno de Barcelona, Prefect of the Missions in Guiana, to the Rev. Father Provincial, his Superior, dated Caroni, February 6, 1772.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

I send the state of these Missions that you deign to ask me for; I do not send the map\* of these our Missions because I know that Fray Carlos

\* For copy of this map see Venezuelan Case, Atlas, map 78.



**No. 48.**

de Barcelona is sending it. By this you will see, most Reverend Father, the gigantic enterprising spirit of our venerated old man the Most Rev. Father Benito de la Garriga who, after having discharged three prefectships and having upon him the weight of more than sixty years has voluntarily offered to set out upon a discovery in our territory accompanied by Father Thomas de Mataró with the necessary supplies. It is a long journey of more than three months, very risky navigation by the rivers, made more so by the Indians of the wilderness, but all is overcome by the vocation when the true missionary possesses it. May God spare Your most Reverend Paternity many years.

---

**No. 49.**

**Letter from Fray Fidel de Santo, Prefect of the Capuchin Missions, to the Provincial of the Capuchin Missionaries of the Province of Catalonia in Barcelona, dated Madrid, January 9, 1773.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

The memorial presented to His Excellency relating to the sending of 12 religious Fathers by extraordinary providence is succeeding well, and with Father Jayme to guide them to Guayana as requested. The M. R. F. Provincial of Andaluzia has resigned in favor of your Reverence the Mission of the Upper Orinoco, which, including the old settlements of the Jesuits make about 16 Missions. They are very wretched settlements under the rule of despicable Mayors, which is the worst of it; for which reason I should judge it to be necessary to send there discreet, forbearing, meek religious Fathers, should we be put in charge of them, with other instructions that I should then give.

---

**No. 50.**

**Letter from Fray Jayme de Puigcerda to the Provincial of the Missions, dated Cadiz, July 5, 1773.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

On Wednesday of last week the Missionary Fathers embarked on the Frigate Nuestra Señora de Monserrate and the winds being contrary they remained in the bay until Saturday afternoon. I have remained waiting for the departure of a felucca which sails under register to Angostura, Capital of our Guayana Missions, and the reason is because it was arranged that I should go as chaplain of said felucca. It is said that we are to sail on the 15th of this month but I should be happy if we were to leave about

**No. 50.**

the end of the month or the beginning of August. How much I have felt the death of the Reverend Father Fidel (*de Santó*), may he rest in glory, will not be easy to appreciate except for those who knew how much I thought of him on account of his many gifts, especially since he was elected Visiting Father of the Missions. I remain praying affectionately to Y. M. R. Paternity to condescend to command me whenever it may please you, and to pray to God to spare the affectionate servant of Y. M. R. Paternity.

---

**No. 51.**

**Letter from Fray Jayme de Puigcerda to the Provincial of the Missions, dated Cadiz, July 31, 1773.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

I have already informed you that the Fiscal Agent told me when I was in Madrid that two months after the departure of the first Mission, which goes to Guayana as a temporary expedient, it is necessary to present a new memorial urging the sending of the one formerly asked for five years ago of eleven priests and one lay nurse; there will be no difficulty about it. said Fiscal Agent informs me, as while I was there the reports that arrived from the Superintendent of Cumaná were favorable, which was all that we were waiting for; therefore, I pray your Most Reverend Paternity to inform the Father Attorney for the court of this fact, and urge him to put it in practice at the proper time. It will also be expedient to remind him of the Memorial of the Guayana Mision still pending in Council against the Governor, so that he may urge on the officials; and when the dispatches are forwarded, to send us information in regard to the measures taken by the Council on the matter; it was thus promised by the Fiscal Agent to the Reverend Father Fidel de Santó and to me for the Government of those Missionaries - I close, praying you to command me in whatever may please you, as to serve you is the desire of yours.

---

**No. 52.**

**Letter from Fray Bernadino de San Felice to the Prefect of the Missions, dated Barceloneta, March 16, 1776.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

(*Salus in D<sup>o</sup>*) I inform your Reverend Paternity how the Sergeant came down from where he was detached in Caroni Chico and I have asked him how he was getting on there, to which he has answered as follows; that

**No. 52.**

for a time he has known nothing of Cadet Santos, nor of his people, nor where they were stopping; nor does he know whether they are alive or dead. I asked him what was known of Sergeant Cuello and he answered that: Don Vicente Diez had sent some persons to the place where they first lived, Indians with letters, who, not finding them, returned. He again sent some Indians with a trustworthy person, and they found the house burned down, and the receipts of the rations of the soldiers that were given monthly all torn up; by reason of which they infer that they have passed on to Essequibo, if they have not died on the way. This has been told to me not only by the Sergeant but also by his companion and the negroes of the place, who had gone there by rowboat, have all told the same thing. I know nothing more of affairs up there. Corporal Bommon has told me that on the Upper Orinoco some villages were in revolt, and that the Sergeant who was detached there is now in prison at the Capital, and the halberd has been taken away from him. There is a rumor here that the Indians who fled from the outbreaking had joined the rebels at Caroni Chico, and wish to come down here and upon the Mission of las Bocas, and that they wish to kill every one, Indians as well as Spaniards; I know not what truth there is in this. I have heard that Don Felix is ill, but know not whether it is anything serious. I remain praying God to save Your Paternal Reverence many years.

---

**No. 53.**

**Article 13 of a secret instruction given to the Captain of Infantry, Don Antonio de Pereda, Commandant of the Province of Guiana, dated San Ildefonso, September 10, 1776.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo General de Yndias" (Seville), Stand 181, Case 2, Bundle 17.]

"You are not to allow the English, Dutch, or other inhabitants of the foreign provinces to put into and anchor in the ports, coves, or roadsteads of the Province under your command, much less to fell the trees of their forests, although they may have done so with the permission or through the criminal toleration of your predecessors."

---

**No. 54.**

**Extract from letter from Fray Mariano de Sebadel, Prefect of the Missions, to Fray Jayme de Puigcerda, dated Caroni, May 7, 1777.**

[Printed from translation of a note of the archivist (among the copies certified by him) in charge of the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

In a letter from Caroni of May 7th of 1777 from "Fray Mariano de Sebadel, Prefect," addressed to "Father Jayme de Puigcerda at Murucuri" —a letter solely and entirely of administration, without any interest for

**No. 54.**

the history of new facts, there are the following names of several places as stations for Capuchin Missionaries: Murucuri or Morucuri (Carib village); Pueblo de Caroni; Pueblo de Panapana (Carib Indians); Carapo (alias Carap); Bozales Indians; Mission of Suay; Mission of Calvario; Pariagoto Indians; Mission of Tupuquen; Mission (of Observants) of Piritu; Indians of Astasio (island of); Indians of the Windward Islands; Piacoa (where a chapter of Missionaries was held for elections); Mission of Alta Gracia; "this Mission of Caroni is twelve leagues from Villa de Upata."

---

**No. 55.**

**Letter from Fray Felix de Villanueva to Fray Jayme de Puigcerda, dated Cupepuy, July 13, 1777.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

*Pax et salus.* The new Governor has come and his name is Don Antonio de Pereda; he is very humane with every one, and appears to be a friend of peace, but he is in danger, because Oleaga and Velasco continually prompt him to evil. The Rio Negro expedition against the Portuguese still remains there, but we know nothing about its progress, and we are without a guard in our towns because all the soldiers of the Mission and of Angostura have been sent there and we have to do with some neighbors in place of soldiers. In regard to Guirior, every one says that it is lost and that Don Vicente Diez, its Commander, has become crazy, owing to the wounds he received in the revolt.

---

**No. 56.**

**Letter from Fray Bernadino de Verdu to the Prefect of the Missions, dated Divina Pastora, July 14, 1777.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

Greeting and peace in the Lord: In the Mission of Ayma there was an Indian—a fugitive from Guirior. The Commandant of the Guard, Don Alonso Valdés, told me, while on a visit to this place, that the cause of the failure of his health was the hardships that he had undergone in Parime; and I asked him about the health of Don Vicente Diez (Commander of Guirior) and he told me that there was nothing the matter with him, because he received cask upon cask of brandy and wine from Angostura, and on this account he was drunk the better part of the time, and that this was the reason of all the disorder there, and the flight of the Indians, all of which is charged to the Missionary Fathers. For this reason, then, if Your Reverence should meet with the Governor there you could tell him of all these excesses, that he may remedy them.

**No. 57.**

**Letter from Don Luis de Unzaga y Amezaga, Governor of Caracas, to Don José de Galvez, August 14, 1778, relating to the uprising of the Indians of Guirior.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo General de Yndias" (Seville), Stand 180, Case 7, Bundle 14.]

*No. 159.*

**MOST EXCELLENT SIR:**

I am informed of the contents of a letter from Don Antonio de Pereda, Governor of Guayana, to His Majesty, dated on the 22d of November of the past year, in reference to the uprising of the Indians of Guirior, who after having attempted to kill the officer in command of the expedition of the Parime, a resident there, took flight to the woods, from whence he strove to get them out, and to pacify and reduce them to the town, having sent twice to this end the infantry soldier Juan Marcos Zapata, who, with sixteen men, succeeded in collecting about two hundred souls of the Guadamura nation. The Indians upset the boats in which they were transported, causing the death of twelve men of said expedition, some by drowning and some by wounds. For this reason, and because the troop of that Presidio had been detached to Rio Negro and other places, and the detachment sent from Cumaná was doing service there, he concludes that he cannot give any assistance to the expedition of the Parime, nor aid in the reduction of the fugitive Indians of the City of Guirior, stating the poor condition which it is in, being reduced at present to eighty-two inhabitants of both sexes and all classes, and suffering for lack of provisions, and by reason of its unhealthy climate. Said letter is accompanied by the Royal Order, dated at Aranjuez on the tenth of May last, commanding me to report whatever I may deem proper and efficient in the matter.

I beg to inform Your Excellency that the differences between our Court and the Court of Portugal in reference to the boundaries of said territory having ceased to exist, by reason of the preliminaries of peace, I issued the proper orders under date of June twenty-fifth to its Governor to withdraw the troops detached in Rio Negro and the Parime, leaving at these points the ordinary garrison, and keeping the detachment sent as assistance from the province of Cumaná for said expedition to the Parime in order to defend said town until His Majesty may decide. By this means and the measures, a copy of which I send, taken in the matter of the disputes of said commandancy with the Catalonian Capuchin Missionary Fathers sent under date of June fourteenth through the Council in consequence of the Royal Cédula of October nineteenth last, ordering me to bring it to an end; and by the aid of fourteen monks of the same province of Catalonia, the maintainance of the City of Guirior may be in-

**No. 57.**

sured; also that of some towns abandoned by the Indians, the reduction of the latter and the conquest of others, all of which has my most careful and earnest attention, as so important a matter deserves.

May Our Lord keep your Excellency's important life as many years as it is needed.

Caracas, August fourteenth, seventeen hundred and seventy-eight—  
Most Excellent Sir—Kissing your Excellency's hand; your humble servant.

LUIS DE UNZAGA Y AMEZAGA.

To His Excellency Don José de Galvez.

**No. 58.**

Letter from Fray Benito de la Garriga, Prefect of the Missions, to Fray Joseph Francisco de Barcelona, Commissary-General, dated Altagracia, February 1, 1779.

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

REV. FATHER AND SIR: I inform you that I have finished the visit and that I have gone further on and have seen all the settlements in our charge. I have found all the Indians well. In order that Your Reverend Paternity may be well informed in regard to our Missions, I forward the registers of all the villages and those of the settlements of Spaniards which we have founded at the common expense, which are that of Barceloneta and that of Upata; though for the present they have few inhabitants, yet withal they greatly serve for the service of God and the King; Barceloneta is both harbor and port to up to Guirior by the Parana river and to the Parime and is respected by the Indians of those frontiers. That of Upata we founded, the Governor of Cumaná being Don Joseph de Diguja, and by his leave, as a security for the Missions on account of the Caribs being so prone to uprisings and in special cases of rumors of Indians the settlers keep us company; it is quite true that these villages cause us trouble enough, but we are obliged to bear with them, for there are few Spaniards in this large and miserable Province; all the fruit that this Province is able to produce could not fill a brig, and, were it not for those fruits which come down from Barinas, the Registers would go back empty to Spain. On another occasion I wrote to Your Most Reverend Paternity that in Parime, the Portuguese of Rio Negro and the Amazonas of the great Pará took a detachment of Spanish soldiers that came down from Guirior to Parime and the mouth of the River Maho to discover the El Dorado of Centurion, and that afterward the temporary Commandant of Guayana Don Joseph Linares sent an expedition to the Upper Orinoco and Rio Negro to avenge the attack of the Portuguese, but he had little success on account of the lack of troops and the enemy being well armed; but afterward the Intendent of

**No. 58.**

Caracas, by order of the King, sent three hundred more men for the same purpose of retaliation; and this gentleman wrote to me charging me to provide rations of meat, cassave, all to be delivered in Barceloneta; curi-aras, Indians, pack and saddle horses, all that were necessary, and when said men had embarked in La Guayra to come on, the same Intendent sent word to me to suspend said order, because contrary orders had just been sent from the King and he thanked me on his part and on that of His Majesty for my fulfillment of the royal service; and at the present time we have advices and sure signs that the Spanish Commisaries are about to ascend the Upper Orinoco, and that together with others of the King of Portugal they will draw the dividing line on the land of the two Crowns of Spain and Portugal; the four Commisaries came from Spain on this errand in the year 54; they remained a long time at these Missions, and at the coming of our Monarch to Spain this Royal Expedition was ordered to retire. I pray Your Most Reverend Paternity to commend us to God whom I pray to preserve Your Reverence many years.

**No. 59.**

**Letter from Don José de Avalos to Don Antonio de Pereda, Governor of Guiana, relating to the appointment of José Felipe Inciarte, to found towns in eastern Guiana, dated February 4, 1779.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo General de Indias" (Seville,) Stand 125, Case 4, Bundle 7.]

DEAR SIR: By the Royal orders I have received relative to the important matters of the development of population agriculture and commerce, in the Department of the Intendencia in my charge I am instructed, as regards the eastern section of the territory, to place in your charge and in charge of the person I may appoint to aid you, the duty of effecting the occupation of the respective territories under its jurisdiction, the instructions relative to this matter being already given you. I have issued several instructions on the same matter, relative to Trinidad and other places and the time has arrived to carry out those in reference to that province, and in view of this fact I have issued the instructions forwarded to you and have also appointed Don José Felipe de Inciarte to aid you Honor in this Commission, he being a man worthy of recommendation by reason of his acknowledged good conduct, his talent, instruction and ability. I do not know whether the urgent business of your office and your necessary presence in this capital will permit you to repair in person to the lands to be inspected, occupied and peopled. Should you be able to do so, said Inciarte will accompany you in the expedition to aid you in the fulfillment of the orders according to my instructions. But, should it not be possible for you to go in person, the aforesaid Inciarte will go as instructed by me,

**No. 59.**

under the terms and conditions set forth in the afore-mentioned instruction. I have therein endeavored to embrace and to specify what I have deemed most imperative and efficient in the matter, but as it is not possible to foresee everything from such a great distance, and in reference to an unknown land, I am aware that difficulties may occur which could only be determined upon in the presence of them, as it is natural that, in such cases, difficulties should be solved upon the same ground where they occur. Although the foundation of towns, the development and commerce and other matters pertaining to agriculture devolve upon my office as the Intendent of these Provinces, I must inform you that the first occupation of the territories in Guayana devolves upon you as the political and military commander of the same and as such, if you could not in person undertake the expedition, it is necessary that you issue the proper authority to Don José Felipe de Inciarte so that he may enter and exercise over all that territory, and over whatever territories be allotted to the new towns (as they will be situated in territories under your command), the proper and necessary jurisdiction. The most urgent thing at present is to find families to go and establish themselves in the new lands to be discovered and inhabited, and as, in my desire to gain time, I have not been able to give instructions to obtain them from other places it becomes necessary that the first settlers in the largest possible number be taken out and conducted from that province, employing to this end the most efficient means, as upon this depends that the success of the undertaking be not delayed nor its importance impaired. I will bend all my energies toward obtaining from other places as many settlers as possible and to send them to that province for their final settlement there. It is also necessary that the equipment of the vessels, the purchase and transportation of provisions and other necessaries, which must be done at this port, be under your charge, with the assistance of the Royal Officers. Everything in relation to this matter and whatever be needed in future shall be defrayed by the Royal Treasury, and thus you may draw upon the Treasury for the amount spent to this end. In the Instructions which I have issued it is provided that the first exploration be accompanied with from twenty to thirty armed men, so that thus protected they may go into the interior of the country with more security or less risk; I think that this number will be sufficient for the purpose; however, if you think it necessary that a larger number should go, you may so order it, so that there may be no failure for lack of protection. I must state that I do not mean by this that they should be soldiers, although it will be useful that some few go, because the very presence (or name?) of soldiers is sufficient to impart a certain respect to this kind of aid. In the supposition that arms and ammunition are to be found in the King's arsenals in that city, I have not issued instructions to send any. But in case there should not be enough on hand, or that some may be lacking, Your Honor will inform me of that fact so as to forward the necessary arms, and notwithstanding this, I expect that



**No. 59.**

you will endeavor to equip the men in order that there may be no delay. As regards tools and implements for the first explorers and the new settlers that should go, I have been able to collect hastily, so far, those comprised in enclosed statement, and send them all by sloop Santa Lucia which sails from La Guayra to that port of Guayana, and hereafter I shall upon your request, forward all others that may be required. Out of the twelve thousand head of black cattle promised to His Majesty by the Capuchin Fathers, and that His Majesty condescended to order me to accept in his Royal name, I have provided in the instruction, that from four to six thousand be set aside and destined to be divided among the new settlers as I think these will be enough for the purpose. But, notwithstanding this, if you should deem a larger number to be necessary, you may increase it, the same being understood with regard to the twenty-five head I have allotted to every settler, which, should you deem it advisable, you may increase to thirty head each so that they may more willingly go to the new colony. I ask you to acknowledge receipt of this letter as well as of the enclosed Instructions, informing me of whatever is done, in compliance with these Instructions according as the work progresses so that I may be acquainted with the matter and be in a position to take the proper steps and issue the necessary orders. I rely upon Your Honor's zeal and efficiency in everything relating to the better service of His Majesty, and in consideration of the importance of this commission and the necessity of carrying it forward with despatch, you will endeavor to lose no time in its execution nor fail to employ whatever means may be conducive to render it effective in all its parts. May God keep Your Honor many years. Such are my wishes.

Caracas, February 4th, 1779. Kissing Your Honor's hands, your devoted servant.

JOSÉ DE AVALOS.

To Señor Don Antonio de Pereda.

---

**No. 60.**

**Extract from letter from Fray Felix de Tarraga to the Prefect of the Missions, dated Caroni, July 8, 1779.**

[Printed from translation of a note of the archivist (inserted among the certified copies) in charge of the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

In a letter from "Caroni July 8th of 1779" of Father Felix of Tarraga to the "Most Rev. Father Prefect," all on administration matters, mention is made of the settlements of Upata, of Las Bocas, of Barceloneta, of Santa Ana, of Caruaxi, of Aguri, of San Antonio, of Cupapuy, of Santa Maria, of San Pedro de Las Bocas, of the Divina Pastora, of Cumamo, of Caroni, as settlements subject to the King of Spain.

**No. 61.**

**Royal order communicated by Don José de Galvez to the Governor of Guiana, relating to the Commission entrusted to Don José Felipe de Inciarte of founding towns in eastern Guiana, dated March 9, 1780.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo General de Indias" (Seville), Stand 135, Case 4, Bundle 7.]

By your Honor's letter of the twenty-seventh of last May, the King has been informed of the arrival in that city, on the seventh of the same month, of Don José Felipe de Inciarte, commissioned by the Intendant of those Provinces, to carry out, under your orders, the occupation of lands and new towns to be built in the eastern portion of said Province in accordance with the instructions of February fourth of same year, given by said Intendant, which has been approved by his Majesty, together with your Honor's determination to wait until the proper time to undertake the exploration of the lands, stated in the above mentioned instructions, and to select the most appropriate site for the foundation of the first town which will serve as capital for the others which shall be founded in time. By Royal Command I beg to inform your Honor of this fact for your Honor's guidance. May God keep your Honor's life many years.

El Pardo, March ninth, seventeen hundred and eighty.

JOSÉ DE GALVEZ.

To Señor Governor of Guayana.

**No. 62.**

**Letter from Don José de Galvez, to the Intendant of Caracas, as to permit to France to export mules, January 3, 1782.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the archives in charge of the "Registrador Principal Intendio del Distrito Federal," at Caracas].

On this date the Intendant, Don José de Avalos, is informed of the permit granted by His Majesty to the Court of France to export from that province and from the Province of Cumana, through the person who may be commissioned for the purpose, the number of two thousand mules for the work and transportation in her colonies. The aforesaid Intendant is charged with the enactment and the arrangement of the concession. It is His Majesty's will that you give him any help that he may need in the matter, and I, therefore, in compliance with His Royal Decree, beg to inform you of the fact for your own guidance and the strict fulfillment thereof. May God keep your life many years.

**No. 63.**

**Letter from Fray Benito de la Garriga, to Fray Mariano de Sebadel, Prefect of the Missions, dated Altagracia, October 29, 1782.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

Greeting. Your favor received and the papers sent by the Governor read. In regard to the Pueblo de Cura I should say that its stream does not facilitate the journey to Essequibo; said stream is in the Juruario and has other streams; though this river dries up in summer, it enters into Cuyuni river, and this latter into the Essequibo River; according to information, no river of importance enters into the Cuyuni; it is well to tell all this to the Governor, and also that Don Santiago Bonaldes can better inform His Excellency as he has navigated the Juruario and Cuyuni, when he went to take the Dutch guard, and he knows how many days of navigation he spent, and that it took three days to go from the location of said guard to the Dutch Fort (Castillo) of the Governor. On account of the order that was given us, that we should acquire land ahead towards the south, with the purpose of preventing the French of Surinam from approaching I placed Indians in Cura; because no progress can be made towards the south unless there should be some settlements there, etc. The Governor may be told that to remove any suspicion he may have of Essequibo; also that it is necessary to place 15 or 20 thousand cows in those savanas of Cura in order to reduce the undomesticated cattle, because the ranch cannot be arranged by any other means; but by taking it and changing it to another place, according to the opinion of every one. That is what I judge should be said in regard to the papers mentioned, and I remain the servant of Your Very Reverend Paternity and praying God to preserve Your Reverence many years.

Altagracia, *October 29th of 82.* Kissing your hand the most useless of Your Reverend's subjects,

FRAY BENITO DE LA GARRIGA.

It agrees with the original, which is in the archives of this Mission of Guayana; which was taken out by order of the Very Rev. Father Prefect.

This is certain and true in accordance. And in proof whereof I sign in Caroni on the 30th day of January in the year 1789. By order of our Very Reverend Father Prefect.

**No. 64.**

**Arrivals and departures of vessels at Angostura, September to December, 1782; being the report of Antonio de Pereda, Governor of Guiana, to the Intendant-General of Caracas, dated December 31, 1782.**

[Printed from a certified copy of original in the "Archives in charge of the Registrador Principal Interino del Distrito Federal" at Caracas.]

Statement showing the crafts leaving this port of Angostura for the friendly colonies, specifying their condition, class of vessels, their owners,

**No. 64.**

captains or masters commanding them, their crews, cargoes exported, their nature, weight and number, and their return to port; made to be forwarded to the Intendencia-General, in compliance with its order of October 18th of the last year of 81, including from the 23d of September, of the present year, to this date inclusive.

[September 23, 1782.]

On this date entered on her return trip from the Colony of Demerara, the launch N. S. del Carmen, the same which under command of her master Gomez sailed on the 23rd of July for Essequibo, bringing 13 pieces of Irish linen and a letter of exchange for 236 pesos and 6 reales. On the same day returned from the same Colony the Launch San Pedro; the same which under command of Pedro Sanchez left for that port on the 29th of July bringing 10 pieces of crash, 10 do. gray duck, 4 tierces of brandy and a letter of exchange for 456 pesos. . . .

[October, 1782.]

On this [2d] day returned from Tavaco the schooner N. S. del Carmen which on the 3d of September sailed for said island under command of Juan Beltran, and brings 180 blankets, 21 pieces of crash, 5 do. striped crash — and 666 pesos.

5th day.—On this date returned from Martinique the sloop N. S. de la Concepcion, under command of and belonging to Don Joseph Luis Basanta. who sailed for said island on the 27th of June and brings 100 pieces of Bretagnes — 3 do. Rouen Labal — 100 do. Bretagnes, medium width — 100 do. striped cotton, book shaped pieces — 24 dozen linen handkerchiefs — 8 pieces Rouen Labal — 49 pieces platillas — 48 do. do. — 62 do. Bretagne narrow — 1 do. black Serge — 1 do. blue Lisle — 1 do. do. red — 48 doz. steels and flints — 38 pieces Bretagne narrow — 3 do. platillas — 30 do, striped Brussels — 30 do. do. 4 pieces Rouen Belfallo — 1 piece blue Lisle — 1 do. ordinary goods for napkins — 6 pieces of gray platillas — 74 pieces striped cotton No. 2 — 4 pieces Russian ticking 3 do. sail canvass — 285 blankets — 14 pieces of crash — 12 pieces of blue linen Holland — 60 cutlasses — 84 hoes — 100 pieces cotton striped lengthwise — 900 sheets of tin — 100 pounds of beads — 5 pieces of gray twine — 2 pieces of rope — 3 pieces of fine cord — 2 small boxes with 50 pounds of candles — 88 hams — 2 jugs of linseed oil. . . .

8th Day.—On this day there left for Demerara the launches S. Franco Xavier and N. S. del Carmen, belonging to Rafael Velez and Gaspar Vidal, under command of their Masters Tiburcio Velez and Matheo Gomez, each with a crew of 4 men and a cargo of 20 calves between the two by account of Senor Mascas, Commissioner of the French Nation, sent to this Capital by the Quarter Master of said Colony with the view of soliciting provisions for the maintainance of the troops of said colony. . . .

**No. 64.**

9th Day.—On this day there left for said colony the Launch N. S. del Rosario, owned by Don Martin Joseph Lizardi under the command of Master Pedro Juan Roger with a crew of six men and a cargo of 7 mules and two horses. . . .

14th Day.—On this day there returned from Martinique the sloop N. S. del Rosario which left on the 1st of August, bound for that Island under command of Salvador Berenguel carrying 100 pieces striped cotton No. 2 = 50 do. do. = 50 do book shaped = 14 do crash = 4 do. blue Lisle = 10 do. flowered lawns = 12 pieces of ordinary linen handkerchiefs = 157 pounds of manufactured wax = 450 sheets of tin = 90 pounds of Castile pepper = 2 pieces of rigging = 20 dozen looking-glasses = 9 pieces of Bretagne, narrow = 9 do. striped No. 2 = 2 do. bookshaped = three do. of lawn = 2 pounds gall nuts = 2 do. Copperas = 8 ounces of gum = 4 bolts blue cloth = 3 dozen large silver buttons = 2 dozen small do. do. = 4 yds. of Taffetas = 2 and 5 eighth ounces of silver braid and 2,888 pesos, 1 real gold and silver coin. . . .

16th Day.—On this day there sailed the bilander N. S. del Carmen of 14½ tons, bound for the Island of Tavaco, said sloop belonging to Gaspar Vidal and commanded by Juan Beltran with a crew of 13 men and a cargo of 35 calves and 20 horses.

17th Day.—On this day there left bound for the Colony of Demerara the bilander San Antonio of 36 tons, owned by Don Manuel Terran under command of Joseph Domingo Nufiez with a crew of 15 men and a cargo of 62 mules, 20 hogs, 3 dozen chickens and 50 turtles.

21st Day.—On this day there left bound for Granada the launch N. S. de la Candelaria, owned by Don Francisco Duazan, under command of Francisco Diaz with a crew of 8 men and a cargo of 550 *arrobas* of salt beef, 45 do. do. tallow and 80 raw hides . . . .

24th Day.—On this day there left, bound for the same Island of la Granada the launch N. S. de los Dolores, under command of Joseph Joaquin Isasa, owned by Don Patricio Alvarez with a crew of six men and a cargo of 12 mules. . . .

On said day there returned from Martinique the sloop San Antonio, the same which left on the 31st of July bound for Martinique under command of Miguel Arrieta and carrying 3 pieces of blue lisle = 1 do. red = 4 do. black stripes = 4 do. platillas = 8 do. linen ticking = 6 do. platillas 4 do. wide crea (linen) 72 do. striped no. 2 = 80 do. wide Bretagne = 88 do. crashes = 90 kettles = 4 ells of silk serge = 16 pieces of narrow Bretagne = 5 do. striped No. 2 = 1 do. Carandali = and 564 *pesos* in silver coin and 3 Portuguese women.

30th Day.—On this day there left bound for Martinique the sloop N. S. del Rosario of 20½ tons owned by Don Juan Jaureguí, commanded by Juan Domingo Montañez with a crew of 13 men and a cargo of 52 calves = 12 hogs = 50 *arrobas* of cheese = 2 dozen chickens = and 20 turtle (*morrocayes*). . . .

**No. 64.**[*November, 1782.*]

On this [6th] day there left bound for Tavaco the launch N. S. del Carmen, owned and commanded by Pedro Montero, with a crew of 7 men and a cargo of 100 arrobas of suet and 18 calves. . . .

12th Day.—On this day there left for Demerari the launch N. S. de la Merced, owned by Don Juan Wanderrosen and under the command of Domingo Tadei with a crew of 8 men and a cargo of six loads of tobacco and 8 horses. . . .

13th Day.—On this day there left for Essequibo the launch Sta. Teresa, belonging to Don Carlos Langres and under the command of Joseph Patricio Caravan, with a crew of 5 men and a cargo of 325 arrobas of salt beef . . .

18th Day.—On this day there sailed bound for la Granada the coaster (guairo) Sta. Rita, owned by Don Patricio Alvarez, of 16 tons, under command of Benito Orfila with a crew of 8 men and a cargo of 24 mules and 6 calves. . . .

23rd Day.—On this day there returned from the Colony of Demerari the launches Sn. Franco Xavier and N. S. del Carmen, the same which left bound for that port on the 8th of October under their respective masters, Tevurcie Velez and Matheo Gomez and return empty. . . .

27th Day.—On this day there left, bound for Martinique, the schooner N. S. de la Concepcion of 27 tons, owned by Don Joseph Luis Basanta and commanded by Don Franco Tarreras with a crew of 15 men and a load of 3,000 raw hides, 12 horses and 10 arrobas of cheese.

28th Day.—On this day entered from Demerari the bilander N. S. del Rosario and the schooner San Franco Xavier where they were bought by Don Manuel Terran and Don Martin Joseph Lizardi in virtue of permit given by the Intendencia General, said vessels having come in ballast, the former in charge of Pedro Juan Rojer, and the latter in charge of said Terran, each vessel with a crew of 9 men; the Launch, N. S. del Rosario, owned by the same parties, entered with them and in ballast; this is the same that sailed on the 9th of October for said colony in charge of the aforesaid Rojer.

30th Day.—On this day entered from Martinique the bilander San Antonio which on the 17th of October sailed for the colony of Demerari (which port she could not make owing to bad weather) bringing 8 negroes, male and female, and 1216 pesos [in coin].

[*December, 1782.*]

On this [2d] day sailed for Martinique the schooner N. S. del Carmen of 14½ tons, owned by Gasper Vidal, in charge of Juan Beltran with a crew of 13 men and cargo of 300 raw hides, — 40 mules, — 52 chickens, — 86 turtles and one hog. . . .

Day 3d.—On this day sailed for Demarari the launch N. S. de la Concepcion, chartered by Don Fermin de Sansinenea to Don Bartholome

**No. 64.**

Romero, in charge of Matheo Gomez with a crew of 6 men and cargo of 47 loads, 5 arrobas and 20 pounds of leaf tobacco. . . .

Day 10th.—On this day sailed bound for Martinique the coaster San Joseph 10 tons burden owned by Franco Capillas in charge of Maceo Belt-ran, crew of 6 men and a cargo of 17 calves. . . .

Day 13th.—On this day returned from Grenada the launch N. S. de los Dolores which on the 24th of October sailed for that place, under command of Joseph Joaquin Isasa bringing = 55 pieces Bretagne narrow — 26 do. striped cotton No. 2 — 2 do. platillas — 3 do. common linen handkerchiefs . . .

Day 17th.—On this day returned from Grenada the bilander N. S. del Rosario, which on the 3rd of October sailed for Martinique (which she could not make owing to bad weather) in charge of Juan Domingo Montañez bringing — 98 pieces book-shaped striped cloth — 24 do. Bretagne — and 442 pesos [in coin].

Day 19th.—On this day sailed for Grenada the launch N. S. de los Dolores, owned by Don Patricio Alvarez, in charge of Joseph Joaquin Isasa, with a crew of 7 men and a cargo of 12 mules. . . .

Day 23rd.—On this day sailed for Grenada the schooner N. S. de la Asuncion, 16 tons burden, owned by Salvador de los Rees, in charge of the same with a crew 16 men and a cargo of 81 cwt. and 65 pounds of cocoa — 1450 raw hides — 30 calves — 9 hogs — 8 turkeys and 4 dozen chickens. . . .

Day 30th.—On this day returned from Demerari the launch N. S. de la Merced, the same which on the 12th of November sailed to that destination under command of Domingo Tande; she only takes one letter of exchange amounting to 1039 pesos. . . .

On the same day returned from same place the launch Sta. Teresa, which on the 13th of November left for the same port, in charge of Jph. Patricio Garaban bringing — 12 pieces crash — 1 do. brin. — 10 do. striped cotton No. 2, and 1 do. double stripe. . . .

\* \* \* \* \*

GUAYANA, December 31st, 1782.

(Signed) ANTONIO DE PEREDA.

Don Pedro de Echeverria, Treasurer, Comptroller General of the Royal Revenue in this Province, etc.:

I hereby certify in the best possible form that the foregoing statement is, in all its parts an accurate copy of the entries and sailings that have taken place during the time stated in the same.

GUAYANA, December 31st, 1782.

(Signed) PEDRO DE ECHEVERRIA.

**No. 65.**

**Letter from Josef Tarriur and Pedro de Echeverria, Treasurer of Guiana, to Don José de Abalos, Intendant-General of Caracas, March 28, 1783.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of original in the archives in charge of the "Registrador Principal Interino del Distrito Federal," at Caracas.]

SIR: We have received on this date three hundred and forty-four reals that the Assistant Director of the Royal Treasury of the Royal Crown has sent as the donation he received from the Indians of the town of Platanal, which donation we mentioned in the reported statement we addressed to you, embodying the other contributions made by those of this Province for the same purpose.

May our Lord keep your life many years.

**No. 66.**

**Resolutions of the Reverend Fathers and Associated Judges, dated San Joseph de Cupapuy, February 15, 1785.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

On the fourteenth of May, 1784, as a result of the visit in the chapter celebrated on the 12th of the same month and year in the town of San Joseph de Cupapuy . . . the Reverend Fathers and associate judges decided upon the following points . . . On the 15th of February, 1785, in a meeting held by the Reverend Fathers Prefect and associated judges to take the last resolution for the founding of the new ranch in the savanas of Cura, and said Rev. Fathers Prefects having surveyed them in person and found them to be good and suitable for breeding, agreed that said new founding should be established (settled) under the name of Sta. Angel Custodio de Aycava, and this being so we sign it on this day, *ut supra*.

FRAY HERMENIGILDO DE VICH, *Prefect*.  
FRAY BUENAVENTURA DE SAN CELONIO.

Fray Thomas de Mataró associate judges . . . In a meeting held by the Rev. Fathers Prefect and associate judges in order to determine and nominate for the presidencies the new Missionary Fathers, according to Our Royal Regulations, the following was agreed upon: President of *Allagracia*, Father Thomas de Olot; of *Murucuri*, Father Justo de Barcelona; of *Santa Ana*, Father Juan Bautista de Olot; of the *Divina Pastora*, Father Francisco de Darnius; of *San Miguel de Unala*, Father Luis de Castelltersol; of the *Angel Custodio* or *Ato-nuevo*, Father Henrique de Putuxes; of *Santa Clara*, Father Mathias de Olot; of *San Serafin*, Father Mariano de Perafita; of *Sta. Magdalena de Currucay*, Father Ignacio de Olot; of *Carachi*, Father José María de Mataro; of *Avechica*,



**No. 66.**

Father Juan Bautista de Tivia;—and this being so, we sign this day, February 15th, 85; FRAY HERMENEGILDO DE VICH, *Prefect.* . . . FRAY BUENAVENTURA DE SAN CELONIO, *Associate judge.* . . . FRAY THOMAS DE MATARO, *Associate judge.*

---

[Translation of a note of the archivist (appearing among the certified copies) in charge of the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña" at Rome:—In another of *Allagracia*, 21st of July, 1784, mention is made of a road from *Aguacayma* through *Guayana la Vieja* (old Guiana) "which was wretched and bad", belonging to this Mission.]

**No. 67.**

Letter from Francisco de Saavedra, Intendant-General of Caracas, to Don Manuel Gonzalez, February 21, 1785.

[Printed from a certified copy of original in the archives in charge of the Registrador Principal Interino del Distrito Federal," at Caracas.

SIR: With your dispatch of the 15th instant you are pleased to send me a copy of the duplicate of the Royal Decree which your predecessor sent to mine with another dispatch dated on September 12th, 1780, requesting his advice on the most expedient means to carry its provisions into effect; you also state that having received no reply thereto and the Capuchin monks of the Missions urging most strenuously the necessity for its fulfilment, you expect that I should inform you in regard to the most expedient means for the enactment of His Majesty's orders, so as to enable you to dictate the suitable measures for their fulfilment.

It is shown from the data and reports on the matter collected by my predecessor, that the escorts of the missionaries of Guiana, which as proposed by your predecessor, the King ordered by the aforesaid Royal Decree, should be made up of volunteers from the same countries, on half rations, established on this footing, will cost each year from ten thousand to twelve thousand pesos, amount which the Treasury of Guiana cannot pay at present nor can it be supplied by any of the Departments of the Intendencia, on account of their being so encumbered with other pensions.

Under these circumstances and after mature consideration of the matter no other more adequate means or measures can be taken to comply with the King's will than those I am about to lay before you:

Each town may cultivate every year a plantation of corn, rice and manioc to defray the cost of the escort and other expenses of the Missions; later on, and to the same end, some cocoa plantations could be established in suitable lands the same as done by the Governor of said Province, Don Manuel Centurion in several towns of Rio Negro, where he left these plantations already founded which must be yielding now unless they have been left to run to waste.

**No. 67.**

It would be advantageous that the command of the escort in each Mission be intrusted to persons of recognized honesty, sound judgment and activity, experience having shown the drawbacks and misfortunes that have occurred for the lack of these qualities in those persons formerly appointed; it would also be expedient to invest them with the ordinary jurisdiction under the title of Captains, Territorial Judges, or any other title that might seem more adequate, so that they may preside over the Primary Courts on the cases of the Indians and the Spaniards and also to attend to the management of the plantations belonging to the Indians in common, to pay from their products the escorts, the necessary expenses of the same towns and whatever expenses it may be necessary to incur for the reduction of the Indians of the wilds.

The Guiana Missions in charge of the Capuchins and Observants, each in its own territory (except in the Upper Orinoco and the Rio Negro) possess, as I am informed, enough cattle to pay the escort and, although by their being poorly managed, they would not produce at present enough for the purpose, proper measures could be adopted to this end and in benefit of the management of said farms.

These are the measures which I judge to be more expedient to the fulfilment of His Majesty's orders, and in view of them you may dictate whatever should seem most expedient on the subject.

May God keep your life many years.

---

[Note of the archivist (among the certified copies) in charge of the " Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome: In another from Caruachi, 5th of July, 1786, mention is made of Tauachi.]

---

**No. 68.**

**Letter from Fray Thomas de Olod to the Prefect of the Missions, dated Altagracia, June 5, 1787**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

Greeting: Though it is true that in Cupapúy we spoke of having the road repaired, and I said that I would gladly have it cleaned; provided that these Indians who heretofore and always at least, since I am here, should be relieved from the care of the road from Platanal to the Presidio, and Your Prefectship said yes, adding that you would write me later of it, as the Indians of Altagracia would clean the road from here to Aguacayma; remaining thereby relieved from cleaning the other; and as Your Reverence had not written me, I thought that things would remain as they were; that is to say that the Indians of Cupapuy would continue to repair it, so Your Reverence need not wonder that it should not be repaired; I shall send the Indians to repair it next Monday; meanwhile Your Reverence will please write me as to whether the Indians of Altagracia are relieved

**No. 68.**

from cleaning the old road and are bound to do the other; and I pray you to do it so that I may have proofs when necessary; meanwhile I pray God to preserve you many years as is the desire of your subject.

**No. 69.**

Letter from Fray Mariano de Cervera to Fray Jayme de Pulgerda, dated Dolores, December 9, 1787.

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

Greeting, peace and grace in the Lord.—Last year I went to the mouth of the Orinoco to an "entrada" among the Guaraunos. I took but two soldiers and Guayanos from Caroni. The "entrada" was short and successful because in a few days I made my haul and returned with 149 souls and every one arrived here except eight who escaped from us in San Antonio, though afterwards they were caught. At the beginning of this year I made another "entrada" at the Cuyuni River and Father Antonio de Martorel accompanied me with his Caribs from Cumámu, and we could only get 81 Guaycas (souls) because the same day that we went out a Guayca escaped from the Cura Mission and warned those in the wilderness and we found all in the wildest excitement.

Your Reverence knows already that the Paraua being so far away it is looked upon almost as another province, and that I having been the first Father of the Mouths and having suffered and been through so much as I have all alone, I am called the Prefect of the Paraua and the highest Superiors approve of it. This being so, every year I go to pay them one or two visits, and to this end I always write to the Reverend Fathers and they always send me full authority. This year, two months after chapter, which was the feast of San Pedro de las Bocas, and I was invited as usual by Father Felix de Vique, we arrived at *San Serafin* which is two leagues from the mouths (Las Bocas), two days before the feast day. Half a quarter before arriving at the Mouth (Las Bocas) there is a wood of half a league, and all along the road there are patches of cultivated land. Here I made all the people take palms, and went along making all leave their plantations to follow us with palms which they did. Two months later the Reverend Father (Prefect) departed to pay his visit, and from San Antonio he wrote to me that on such a day I was to meet him half way from *Guri* and that I was to bring food along because the journey from *Guri* here is a long one, and that he was coming in company with Father Felix de Vique. I went on Thursday to *Orutuyma*, which is half way, and they were to arrive there on Friday. After having been two days there I accompanied him as far as *Barceloneta* which, as it is so long a road, it is very sad to travel alone, though true it is that we can go in a day from

**No. 69.**

Sta. Clara to San Serafin and there is no need to sleep there as in this past year I opened a new path there, in which I was accompanied a whole week by Father Hilarion de Tarragona who offered to go with me. Friend, the paper is coming to an end and I must close, praying you not to forget me in your prayers, and I shall not cease to pray to God and to the Virgin that they may preserve you many years in love and grace.

**No. 70.**

**Report of Miguel Marmion, Governor of Guiana, to Don Antonio Valdes, Secretary of State for the Department of the Indies, July 10, 1788, containing description of the province.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo General de Yndias" (Seville), Stand 181, Case 2, Bundle 17.]

Yndice General que comprende los tres particulares de sus respectivos Expedientes y Documentos que acompañan á la Relacion Corografico-mixta de la Provincia de Guayana, al Estado y Plan de defensa; y al informe acerca del reconocimiento de Montes que acava de practicarse en las Bocas y Caños del Orinoco, y sobre el establecimiento de los Cortes de Maderas de Construccion que por el Gobierno se remiten en el dia de su fecha, al Exmo. Sr. Baylio Fray D. Antonio Valdes, Secretario de Estado y del Despacho de Yndias.

*Los que acompañan á la Relacion Corografico-mixta:*

Un oficio de remision.

Plano del Rio Orinoco desde sus Bocas á la Mar, hasta la Ciudad Capital Nueva Guayana.

No. 1. Estado General de la Poblacion, y numero de Almas, con distincion de clases y Castas.

No. 2. Estado del Yngreso que producen las Rentas Reales, y Pensiones á que estan afectas las Caxas Reales.

General index, comprising the three divisions of the respective records and documents accompanying the mixed chorographic description of the Province of Guayana; the statement and plan of defence, and the report regarding the reconnaissance of forests which has just been concluded at the mouths and the channels of the Orinoco, and upon the establishment of lumber camps which, on the day of their date are, by the Government, transmitted to His Excellency Knight Commander Friar Don Antonio Valdes, Secretary of State and of the Department of the Indies.

*Documents accompanying the Mixed chorographic description.*

A letter of transmittal.

Chart of the Orinoco river from its mouth to the capital city, Nueva Guayana.

No. 1. General statement of the population and number of souls, divided into classes and castes.

No. 2. Statement of the revenues from the Royal taxes, and the pensions drawn upon the Royal Treasury.

**No. 70.**

*Los que acompañan al Estado y Plan de Defensa.*

Un oficio de remision.

No. 3. Estado de Fuerzas de las Milicias de Blancos y Pardos, de Ynfanteria y Caballeria, y noticias de servicios de los Oficiales Blancos.

No. 4. Plano y Perfil de las Fortalezas del Presidio de la antigua Guayana.

No. 5. Plano de una porcion, la mas principal de la Ysla de Faxardo.

No. 6. Plano de la Ciudad Capital de Guayana, y sus contornos, existencia de Artilleria, Armas, Municiones, y demas Pertrechos de Guerra.

*Los que acompañan al Ynforme sobre reconocimiento de Montes, y Establecimiento de Cortes de Maderas de Construccion.*

Un Oficio de Remision.

No. 7. Estado General de las Maderas de Construccion reconocidas y marcadas.

No. 8. Ynforme del Gobernador de Guayana, contextaciones del Yntendente de Caracas, del Gobernador de la Trinidad, y del Constructor destinado por el Rey, aprobando la bondad y abundancia de Maderas, con su opinion acerca de Artillero en el Orinoco.

No. 9. Carta en que se manifieste por facultativo el derrotero, disposicion local de la Costa del Orinoco, su Boca de Navios y lo demas que expresa.

No. 10. Noticia de la Resina Ylave, y del Chiquichiqui ó Piasan, producciones ambos del Alto Orinoco, la primera que suple por Brea y la

*Documents accompanying the statement and plan of defence.*

A letter of transmittal.

No. 3. Statement of the forces of the militia, white and colored, of infantry and cavalry, and record of the services of the white officers.

No. 4. Plans and profiles of the fortification of the Presidio of old Guayana.

No. 5. Plan of the principal part of the Island of Faxardo.

No. 6. Plan of the capital city of Guayana and its environs, stores of artillery, arms, ammunition and other war supplies.

*Documents accompanying the report regarding the inspection of forests and establishment of lumber camps.*

A letter of transmittal.

No. 7. General statement of the building lumber inspected and marked.

No. 8. Report of the Governor of Guayana, replies of the Intendant of Caracas, of the Governor of Trinidad, and of the Constructor appointed by the King, approving the good quality and abundance of timber, with his opinion regarding a shipyard on the Orinoco.

No. 9. Chart by an expert showing the course, the local disposition of the coast of the Orinoco, its Boca de Navios, and other matters appearing thereon.

No. 10. A notice of the Ylave resin and the Chiquichiqui or Piasan, both productions of the upper Orinoco, the first of which

**No. 70.**

segunda con que se hacen Cables de experimentada calidad.

Guayana, 7 de Agosto de 1788.

MIGUEL MARMIÓN,  
[Rúbrica.]

NOTA.—Que los Planos expresados arriba, van por separado en un Estuche de Madera, rotulado: Al Exmo. Sr. Baylio, Fray D. Antonio Valdes, Secretario de Estado y del Despacho de Yndias.

Fecha ut supra.

MARMIÓN,  
[Rúbrica.]

*Oficio de Remision.*

EXMO. SENOR:

Por la adjunta Relacion Corografico mixta, de la Provincia de Guayana que dirijo á V. E. verá el deplorable Estado actual de la Poblacion, Agricultura, y Comercio, y las reflexiones que expongo sobre los medios que me parecen mas conducentes para su verificacion y mayor fomento: Si mis pensamientos tienen la fortuna de merecer en alguna parte la aprovacion de V. E. le suplico con la mas profunda veneracion y respeto se digne elevarlos á los Reales pies de S. M.

Por el conducto del Caballero Gobernador de la Provincia de Caracas, dirijo á V. E., el duplicado de la expresada Relacion, a fin de que su informe sirva de ilustracion del asunto de que trata.

Dios Guarda a V. E. muchos anos.  
Guayana 6 de Agosto de 1788.  
Exmo. Sor.

MIGUEL MARMIÓN [Rúbrica].

Exmo. Sr. Baylio, Fray D. Antonio Valdes.

serves for pitch, and with the second of which cables of tried quality are made.

Guayana, August 7, 1788.

MIGUEL MARMIÓN—[a flourish.]

NOTE.—That the plans above mentioned go separately in a wooden case, marked: "To His Excellency, Sir Knight Commander Friar Don Antonio Valdes, Secretary of State and of the Department of the Indias."

Date, *ut supra*.

MARMIÓN—[a flourish.]

*Letter of Transmittal.*

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: From the annexed Mixed chorographic description of the Province of Guiana, which I address to Y. E., you will see the present deplorable state of the population, agriculture, and trade, and the reflections I set forth as to the means which seem to me most conducive to their investigation and greater encouragement. Should my thoughts be fortunate enough to merit in any degree the approval of Y. E., I pray you with the most profound veneration and respect to be pleased to lay them at the Royal feet of His Majesty.

Through the Chevalier Governor of the Province of Caracas I send Y. E. the duplicate of the said description, in order that his report may serve to throw light upon the subject of which it treats.

God preserve Y. E. many years.

Guayana, August 6, 1788. Most Excellent Sir.

MIGUEL MARMIÓN—[a flourish.]

His Excellency Knight Commander Friar Don Antonio Valdes.

**No. 70.**

*Descripcion Corografico-mixta de la Provincia de Guayana, en que se dá razon de los Rios que la bañan, y facilitan sus comunicaciones, de su Poblacion, tierras de Labor utiles, de sus frondosos Montes, Frutos, y Comercio; y se proponen algunos medios los mas aceguibles y conducentes, á su verificacion y aumento.*

La Provincia de Guayana en todo su extension, comprehende las posesiones de los Portugueses, Franceses, y olandeses; tiene mil leguas, poco mas ó menos, de circunferencia, desde las bocas del Orinoco á San Carlos en la desembocadura de Casiquiare en Rio Negro, siguiendo sus aguas abajo con el de las Amazonas, que sale al mar atlantico, y dando vuelta por el oeste costeano hasta las mismas bocas del Orinoco, que la ultima de sotavento cae al Golfo triste, frente de Puerto de España de la Isla de Trinidad.

La porcion de este terreno que posehe España por la parte del Este, confina con las Colonias olandesas de Esquivo, Demerari, Bervis, y Surinam, y con la francesa de Cayena: Por la del Sur con las Portuguesas de Amazonas, y Rio Negro: Por el Oeste y Norte con el alto y vajo Orinoco, que la divide del Reyno de Santa Fee, y de las Provincias de Barinas, Caracas, y Cumaná; quedando ocupada mucha parte de este vasto continente, en particular hacia su centro, de diversas Naciones de Indios barbaros, muchas de ellas no bien conocidas, y de muy dificit reduccion por las grandes distancias que median á los terrenos Poblados,

*Mixed-chorographic description of the Province of Guiana, in which is given a relation of the rivers bathing it and affording its communications, of its population, its adaptable arable lands, its dense forests, products, and trade; and in which some means best adapted and conducive to their investigation and advancement are proposed.*

The whole of the Province of Guiana includes the possessions of the Portuguese, French, and Dutch. It has a thousand leagues, a little more or less, of circumference from the mouths of the Orinoco to San Carlos, where the Casiquiare empties into the Rio Negro, its waters following on down with those of the Amazon, which empties in the Atlantic Ocean, and, taking a turn to the west, following the coast up to the very mouths of the Orinoco, the last of which to the leeward flows into the Triste Gulf, facing Port of Spain, on the Island of Trinidad.

The part of this territory which Spain possesses on the east borders on the Dutch colonies of Essequibo, Demerari, Bervis, and Surinam, and on the French colony of Cayenne. On the south, on the Portuguese colonies of Amazonas and Rio Negro. On the west and north, on the upper and lower Orinoco, which separates it from the Kingdom of Santa Fé, and from the Provinces of Barinas, Caracas, and Cumaná; a great part of this vast continent, particularly towards its center, being occupied by several nations of savage Indians, many of them not well known and difficult to subjugate, owing to the

**No. 70.**

y por su modo de vivir siempre errantes ó emboscados en la espesura de sus montes y selvas, y sobre todo por su apego y sumo amor á la independencia que prefieren á todas las mayores comodidades de la vida civil y racional.

Es esta Provincia, por su situacion la mas ventajosa, y primera posesion, ó Cabeza de todo el Continente de tierra firme en America, y la que por medio del caudaloso Rio Orinoco, debe considerarse puerta que da entrada á lo interior de las de Cumaná, Caracas, Barinas, y Reyno de Santa Fé, y que sirviendo de autemural, en caso de invasion ha de impedir al enemigo su internacion á todas ellas: ofrece una breve navegacion á España y Comercia el mas ventajoso, siempre que llegue á fomentarse, por la facilidad de conducir por agua los frutos de todas aquellas Provincias á la Capital, ó Puerto Maritimo de esta por los Rios Navegables que desaguan al Orinoco: Es un pais por ultimo cuya importancia y seguridad de su posesion, exige Justicia, y en todo tiempo el mas cuidadoso desvelo porque de su conversacion depende en gran parte la de las Provincias expresadas: Para probar esta verdad vastará la Descripcion de las circunstancias locales del Orinoco, y de las avenidas que por medio de los Rios subalternos que le tributan presenta á unos y otros territorios; pero antes de entrar en esto, y para no confundir los objetos convendrá dar una idea de los Rios de Esquivo, Masuruni, y Cuyuni por su importancia en si, y por la relacion que dicen al supuesto principal.

great distances separating the populated territories, and to their manner of living, always wandering or ambushed in the density of their forests and woods, and above all owing to their attachment to and great love for independence, which they prefer to all the greater comforts of civil and rational life.

This Province, owing to its most advantageous situation, and being the first mainland to be occupied on the Continent of America, and the one which through the great Orinoco river should be considered as the gateway to the interior of the Provinces of Cumaná, Caracas, Barinas, and the Kingdom of Santa Fé, and which, serving as a protecting wall in case of invasion, must prevent the enemy gaining access to all of them, affords a short voyage to Spain, and the most advantageous commerce, whenever it shall be encouraged, owing to the facility of transporting by water the products of all those Provinces to the Capital, or maritime port thereof, by the navigable rivers which flow into the Orinoco. Lastly, it is a country whose importance and the certainty of whose possession justly demands on all occasions the most careful vigilance, because upon its retention depends in great part that of the said Provinces. To prove this, a description of the local features of the Orinoco and of the avenues it furnishes all the territories through the minor rivers tributary to it will suffice; but before entering upon this, and so as not to confuse the subject, it is advisable to convey an idea of the Essequibo, Masuruni, and Cuyuni rivers, because of their own importance and because of the relation they have to the principal subject.



## No. 70.

## RIO ESQUIVO.

Desagua á la mar 28 leguas á Barlovento de la Boca de Navios del Orinoco; corre Norte-Sur 18 leguas tierra adentro, a cuya distancia se le unen Masuruni y Cuyuni: Desde aqui se inclina al Sueste, y llega á las faldas del Cerro Dorado y Margenes de la Laguna Parime donde tiene sus Cabezeras, y á la parte del Este de ellas estan las de los Rios Berbis y Surinam en el terreno que ocupan los negros fugitivos de aquellas Colonias olandesas, que su procreacion y union con los Indios salvajes, pueden algun dia causar cuidado á los habitantes de estas Provincias.

## MASURUNI.

Desde su desembocadura en el Rio Esquivo, sigue al Sur, y á distancia de diez á doce leguas, forma una figura de media estrella de tres brazos, que tirando á distintos rumbos tienen sus cabeceras entre los Rios Esquivo y Caroni chico.

## CUYUNI.

Objeto de la mayor atencion por esta parte de la Provincia, desde su desembocadura en el Rio de Esquivo, corre del Este á Oeste hasta cerca del de Caroni, donde le entra el Yuruari por el Nordeste y el Supamo por el Sur que vaja este desde sus cabeceras en los Cerros del propio nombre, cerca de la orqueta que forman los Rios Caroni y Paragua: corre bañando las Misiones de Padres Capuchinos Cathalanes, y recibe las aguas de muchos Rios menores que no se señalan en el Plano; tiene

## ESSEQUIBO RIVER

Flows into the sea twenty-eight leagues to windward of the *Boca de Navios* of the Orinoco; it lies north and south for a distance of eighteen leagues inland, at which point the Masuruni and Cuyuni disembogue into it. From this point it inclines to the southeast and reaches the foot of Cerro Dorado and the shores of Lake Parime, where its source is situated, and on the east of these are the sources of the Berbis and Surinam rivers in the territory occupied by the fugitive negroes from the Dutch colonies, whose procreation and union with the savage Indians may one day give trouble to the inhabitants of these Provinces.

## THE MAZARUNI

From its junction with the river Essequibo runs to the south, and at a distance of from ten to twelve leagues it forms the figure of a half star with three branches, which, running in different directions, have their sources between the Essequibo and the Caroni chico.

## THE CUYUNI

Claims the greatest attention in this part of the Province, and, from where it empties into the Essequibo river, runs from east to west to near the Caroni river, where the Yuruari empties into it on the northeast, and the Supamo on the south, which latter river flows from its source in the hills bearing its name, near the fork formed by the Caroni and Paragua rivers. Bathing the missions of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, it flows and receives the waters of many minor rivers not shown on the

**No. 70.**

diferentes raudales ó arrecifes, que sirven de algun embarazo para su franca navegacion; pero los olandeses lo transitan en curiaras, piraguas y faluas, y hacen por él su comercio de Indios que esclavizan, y de otras especies y producciones del Pais. El Gobierno de Esquivo mantiene Destacamento en un Fortin llamado el Castillo viejo, situado en la desembocadura de este Rio y de Masuruni, y Guardia avanzada de veinte á veinte y cinco leguas dentro de Cuyuni, en cuyo intermedio tienen haciendas de Café, Caña, y otros frutos, como se via por el año de cincuenta y ocho, y posteriormente es de presumir hayan avanzado y aumentado mas posesiones, segun noticias de Indios que transitan frecuentemente por aquellos parajes. Lo que obliga á advertir aqui de paso, que hallandose tambien apostados en la costa de la Mar á la parte nuestra de Moruca con Casafuerte, Destacamento de Tropas, y un Buque pequeño Armado en Guerra, á poca diligencia podran llegar á ocupar la porcion mas importante y fertil de la Provincia, donde se hallan las Misiones de los Padres Capuchinos Catalanes, y tener muy facil y breve comunicacion á lo mas interior y no habiendo obstaculo que lo impida, entrar y salir cada vez que quieran á registrar nuestras posesiones, observar los movimientos, y adquirir quantas noticias les convengan para sus edeas, y si en algun tiempo llegasen á declararse contra nosotros, ó recayeren aquellos establecimientos en manos de otra Potencia mas ambiciosa, nos hallariamos con el enemigo ya dentro de casa, aposeñado de

map. It has several rapids or shoals which present some impediment to free navigation; but the Dutch navigate it in canoes, launches, and feluccas, and by means of it they carry on their Indian slave trade and trade of another kind with the products of the country. The Government of Essequibo maintains a detachment at a fort called the Castillo viejo, situated at the mouth of this river and of the Masuruni, and a guard thrown out from twenty to twenty-five leagues in the interior of Cuyuni, between which points they have coffee, sugar, and other plantations, as was seen about the year fifty-eight, and it is to be presumed that they have subsequently advanced and increased their possessions, according to the Indians who frequently travel through those localities. Which impels us to remark, in passing, that as they are also settled on the seacoast of our part of Moruca (Moroco) with a stronghold, detachments of troops, and a small armed war vessel, by little effort they may occupy the most important and fertile portion of the Province, where are situated the missions of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, and have a very easy and short communication further inland, and, there being no obstacle to prevent their entrance and exit whenever they may wish to inspect our possessions, observe our movements, and acquire whatever information that may serve their ends, and should they at any time declare themselves against us, or should those settlements fall into the hands of another more ambitious Power, we would find ourselves with the enemy al-

**No. 70.**

modo que no seria tan facil el desalojarlo.

## RIO ORINOCO.

Su importancia lo hacia acreedor á que se entrase en un detall muy por menor de una multitud de objetos, que todos merecen atencion; sus rumbos, distancias, bocas, caños, Isletas, rios mayores y menores que entran en él &c.; pero para evitar la confusion que podria resultar de tanta prolixidad y menudencia de noticias, se dará aqui una idea general, tocando por mayor algunas de sus circunstancias principales, y de los Rios Apure, Meta, y otros que le tributan.

Sobre el origen, ó cabeceras del Orinoco, ha habido variedad de dictámenes, muy distantes entre si, y de demasiada prolixa discusion para este lugar; El Padre Caulin, en su obra moderna, afianzandose en observaciones, y relaciones mas exactas, y confrontando noticias que pudo adquirir de los mismos naturales, y de otros, las pone en grado y medio de latitud Norte, y en los trescientos diez y siete, poco mas ó menos, de Longitud, en la inmediacion de una Laguna, no la del Parime, ó Dorado, como se habia creido, sino otra al oeste de ésta, algunas sesenta leguas. Desde sus cabeceras corre mas de ciento treinta leguas Leste Oeste, con muchas vueltas y revueltas, inclinándose al Norte, hasta el paraje de su union con el Guaviari y el Atavapo, que le entran, este por el Sur, y aquel por el Oeste, habiendo recibido antes al Casiquiaré, ó por mejor decir, despedidolo de si, como brazo conque se une y comunica a Rio Negro, y

ready within our own house, so that it would not be so easy to dislodge him.

## THE ORINOCO RIVER.

Its importance would justify entering into a very minute detail of a multitude of features, all of which claim attention—its direction, distances, mouths, courses, islets, the greater and smaller rivers flowing into it, etc.; but to avoid the confusion that might result from such a prolixity and minuteness of details, a general idea will here be given, touching broadly some of its principal features, and those of the Apure, Meta, and other rivers tributary to it.

As to the origin or source of the Orinoco there has been a variety of very diverse opinions, of too prolix a nature for discussion here. Father Caulin, in his modern work, relying on observations and the most accurate reports, and comparing the accounts he was able to secure from the natives themselves, and from others, locates it at one and a half degrees north latitude, and three hundred and seventeen, a little more or less, of longitude, in the neighborhood of a lake, not the Parime or Dorado, as had been thought, but another about sixty leagues west thereof.

From its headwaters it flows more than one hundred and thirty leagues east and west, with many turns and bends, inclining to the north up to the point of its union with the Guaviari and the Atavapo which join it, the latter from the south and the former from the west; having previously received the Casiquiari,

**No. 70.**

por este al de las Amazonas. Desde el punto de su union con el Guaviari y Atavapo, corre del Sur al Norte, con varias revueltas cerca de cien leguas, hasta frente de Cabruta en la Provincia de Caracas, y de Caycara en esta, en cuya distancia le entran por una y otra banda muchos Rios menores, y algunos principales, como Vichada, Meta, y Apure, que por varios brazos caudalosos desagua en él mas arriba de Cabruta, de aqui sigue su rumbo al Leste, recibiendo siempre nuevos tributarios que le juntan su caudal de Aguas de las vertientes de las Provincias de Caracas, Cumaná y Guayana, con que se vá engrosando mas y mas, hasta su desembocadura a la mar del Norte, por una multitud de Brazos ó Caños, que cada uno por si es, ó parece un Rio caudaloso, habiendo atravesado su esta ultima distancia ciento treinta leguas, poco mas ó menos. Con practicos inteligentes es de buena navegacion este Rio hasta la Isla de Faxardo; y de alli para la Capital tiene algunos malos pasos, particularmente en Rio vajo, de Bancos de Arena, arrecifes y placeres; y siguiendo adelante para Rio Negro, se encuentran varios Raudales, siendo los principales los de Carichena, Atures, y Maypures de malo, y mas ó menos peligroso transito segun la estacion del año, que obliga a pasar las embarcaciones á la sirga, en cuya maniobra demuestran los Yndios su destreza y conocimiento practico, arrojandose en las Piraguas, y Curiaras, y sorteando la violencia de la corriente, y peligro de las peñas, en que parece van á embestir y á hacerce mil pedazos. Crece y mengua una vez todos los años empezando por el mes

or rather sending it away from itself as a branch with which it unites and communicates with the Rio Negro, and by means of this with the Amazon.

From the point of its union with the Guaviari and the Atavapo, it flows from south to north, with several bends, nearly a hundred leagues, up to in front of Cabruta, in the Province of Caracas, and of Caycara therein, in which distance there enter it at either bank many smaller rivers, and some principal rivers, such as the Vichada, Meta, and the Apure, which, through several large branches, empties into it above Cabruta, whence it follows its course to the east, receiving ever new tributaries which join to it their mass of waters from the watersheds of the Provinces of Caracas, Cumaná, and Guiana, whereby it goes on enlarging itself more and more until it empties into the northern sea, through a multitude of branches or arms, each one of which of itself is, or appears to be, a large river, having flowed in the last part over a distance of one hundred and thirty leagues, a little more or less.

With intelligent pilots this river affords good navigation up to Faxardo Island, and from there up to the Capital it has some bad reaches, particularly when low, of sand banks, hidden rocks, and shoals; and advancing towards Rio Negro several rapids are met, the principal being those of Carichena, Atures, and Maypures, of bad, and more or less dangerous passage, according to the season of the year, which renders it compulsory to tow vessels from the bank, in which manœuvre the In-

**No. 70.**

de marzo á subir paulatinamente las aguas, y por el de Agosto en que llegan á su mayor altura, vuelven á bajar con la misma lentitud, hasta el de Febrero en que quedan en su nivel mas bajo; habiendo de este al de su mayor creciente, aqui en la Nueva Guayana, la diferencia de mas de trece brazas. En Rio lleno, inundan sus derrames una extension considerable de terreno de los llanos de Caracas y Barinas, y se navega en Lanchas, Piraguas, y Curiaras, por dilatados campos de Arrozales que podrian cargarse, Barcos de este grano, y sus menguantes deja en seco espaciosisimas sabanas y Playas, que por los meses de Febrero, Marzo y Abril, se ven cubiertas de una multitud inmensa de Tortugas que salen á enterrar sus huebos en las arenas, y brindan á estos vecinos y naturales con una abundantisima cosecha de Aceyte de bastante buen gusto, y de mucha utilidad, y poco costo. Para la subida del Rio favorecen los vientos Lestes, ó brisas, que reinan ocho meses del año. Desde Junio inclusive hasta fines de Septiembre, que es el tiempo de la fuerza de las aguas, se experimentan muchas calmas, y corrientes muy rapidas; para subir se navega en Popa, y para bajar Barloventeando: En rio vajante las mareas vivas son sensibles, aunque poco en la Capital; en Panapana aumenta un pie de Agua, en Faxardo, dos, y á proporcion segun se aproxima á la mar: Entra y sube la marea con la misma rapidez de corriente que vaja, y quando está llena queda quasi sin movimiento; pero en el instante que rompe á vaciar, faltan

dians show their skill and practical knowledge, throwing themselves in their canoes and small boats and courting the violence of the current and the danger of the rocks, upon which it seems they are going to strike and be broken into a thousand pieces. It rises and falls once every year; the waters beginning in the month of March to rise slowly, and in the month of August, when they reach their greatest height, they begin to recede with the same slowness until the month of February, when they reach their lowest level, there being between this stage and that of the highest water, here in New Guiana, a difference of more than thirteen fathoms. When the river is at its highest its waters inundate a considerable extent of land on the plains of Caracas and Barinas, and they are navigated in launches, boats, and canoes over extensive fields of rice, from which vessels could be loaded with this grain, and the receding of the river leaves dry on most spacious savannahs and banks (which in the months of February, March, and April are seen covered with) an immense multitude of turtles, which come out from burying their eggs in the sands, and offer to these residents and natives a most abundant harvest of oil of a fairly good taste and of great utility and little cost. To ascend the river the favorable winds are the east winds or breezes, which reign eight months of the year. From June up to the end of September, inclusive, which is the time of the highest water, many calms and very rapid currents are experienced. In going

**No. 70.**

de pronto las aguas que habia aumentado.

De los Rios que desaguan en el Orinoco, los que merecen mas atencion por el caudal de sus aguas, por las proporciones que ofrecen de un Comercio util, activo, y de mucha extension con las Provincias que bañan, y por las comunicaciones que facilitan hasta lo mas interior de estas, son Meta, y Apure.

up the river one navigates with a fair wind, while to go down one has to tack. When the river is falling the tides are noticeable, although but little at the capital. In Panapana the water rises one foot, in Faxardo two, and so on in proportion as it nears the sea. The tide flows in and out with the same rapidity of current, and when the tide is full it remains almost without movement; but at the instant that it begins to ebb the waters which had furnished the increase promptly leave.

Of the rivers which empty into the Orinoco, those which merit the most attention for the abundance of their waters, for the facilities they offer for a profitable, active, and extensive commerce with the Provinces they bathe, and for the communications which they afford to the farthest interior thereof, are the Meta and the Apure.

**META**

El de Meta, desde su boca hasta las primeras poblaciones del Reyno de Santa Fee en Macuco, proximo á los llanos del Gobierno de Santiago de las Atalayas, está bastante desierto, ó quando mas poblado de Indios Guajivos, nacion volante, incapaz de sugesion, cobarde y muy traidora: Este Rio se navega en Lanchas en todos tiempos, y aunque tiene varios arrecifales, son de poco peligro, por ser de calidad arenosa de poca resistencia ó dureza: En el Verano tiene continuas brisas, muy frescas, y en el invierno calmas, y mucha corriente; pero por los remansos de las orillas, y derrames de las sabanas, se navega con menos

**THE META.**

From its mouth up to the first settlements of the Kingdom of Santa Fé, in Macuco, near the plains of the Colony of Santiago de las Atalayas, is rather deserted, or at the most inhabited by Guajivo Indians, a nomadic nation, incapable of subjugation, cowardly, and very treacherous. This river is navigable in lighters at all times, and although it has several shoals they are of little danger, as they are of a sandy character, offering little resistance or hardness. During the summer there are continual, very fresh breezes, and in the winter calms and much current; but on the still pools of the shores and the overflows of

**No. 70.**

impedimento: suelen vajar algunas veces los Reynos con cargamentos de Arinas, Azucar, Lienzos de Algodon, Paños de Mesa, Hamacas, Fresadas, y otras producciones de aquel Pais, que venden en esta Provincia y la de Caracas, con bastante utilidad, y retornan su producido en dinero efectivo.

**APURE:**

tiene sus cabezeras en el Reyno de Santa Fee, cerca de la Ciudad de la nueva Pamplona, en la Serrania, de donde vaja bañando los llanos de Casanare, y engrosandose con varios Rios que le entran, el de Santo Domingo de la Provincia de Barinas, el de la Portuguesa que la atraviesa, y hace comunicable la jurisdiccion de Guanare y otros menores, con que desemboca por distintos Caños en el Orinoco á los siete y medio grados de Latitud, y ochenta leguas, poco mas ó menos de Guayana. Por él hace algunos años que está corriente la navegacion, hasta las Nutrias en Barinas, y en sus margenes tienen los vecinos de Caracas el principal acopio de Ganado mayor de aquella Provincia. Produce excelentes Mulas que continuamente se estan sacando para los otras Provincias; tiene abundancia de Maderas de superior calidad para construccion y otros usos, de que sus habitantes vajan á Guayana crecidas Balsas para tablazon y vigueria, y vienen sobre ellas navegando con mudra comodidad en sus chozas ó Barracas, que les sirven de vivienda, y de resguardo para otros frutos, que suelen condu-

the savannahs one navigates with less impediment. The people of the Kingdom of Santa Fé are accustomed to sometimes come down the river with cargoes of flour, sugar, cotton cloths, tablecloths, hammocks, blankets, and other products of that country, which they sell in this Province and that of Caracas with considerable profit, and turn the proceeds thereof into cash.

**THE APURE**

Has its source in the Kingdom of Santa Fé, near the city of Nueva Pamplona, in the hills, from which it flows down, bathing the plains of Casanare, and becoming enlarged by the several rivers entering it, that of Santo Domingo, of the Province of Barinas, that of La Portuguesa, which crosses said Province and furnishes communication with the jurisdiction of Guanare, and others smaller, with which it discharges through various courses into the Orinoco at seven and a half degrees of latitude and eighty leagues, a little more or less, from Guiana. Navigation has for several years been carried on over this river as far as Nutrias, in Barinas, and on its banks the residents of Caracas had the principal herds of live stock of that Province. It produces excellent mules, which are continuously being sent to the other Provinces; it has an abundance of woods of superior quality for building and other purposes, from which the inhabitants take down to Guiana large rafts for boards and beams, and they come down on these, navigating with considerable comfort in

**No. 70.**

cir; y sin embargo de que venden con bastante equidad, les queda una regular ganancia por los pocos costos que sufren de conduccion.

Desde Guayana á la boca de Apure hay otros muchos Rios de menos consideracion; pero que abundan algunos de ellos de Bosques y tierras de Labor, que son á la parte de Cumaná y Caracas, los nombrados Cari, Pao, Manapire, y Guarico, y por lade Guayana, Aruy, Caura, Cuchivero, con otras muchos Riachuelos, á una y otra costa, que por todos ellos se facilita la conduccion de frutos, con mucho alivio de los habitantes que estan fundados en sus margenes (que estan). Entre todos, el de Caura merece preferencia por la abundancia que tiene de montes y de superiores tierras de Labor, en donde se cultivan por los Indios aquellos frutos de primera necesidad, y se han empezado algunas cortas plantaciones de Algodon por los Morenos fugitivos de Esquivo, de que se van remitiendo por el Gobierno varias familias, vajo la Direccion del Sargento Comandante de aquella Escolta; en donde aplicandose al cultivo de este ramo, podran ser de alguna utilidad, y al contrario en la Capital, y sus contornos, aumentado ya considerablemente su numero, empezaran á ser perjudiciales, y á dar cuidado.

**POBLACION.**

La Poblacion actual de esta Provincia consiste en once vecindarios cortos de Españoles, repartidos en

their huts or cabins, which serve them as a living place and as a storehouse for other products which they are accustomed to bring with them; and although they sell at reasonable prices, they make a fair profit, owing to the slight expense of transportation.

From Guiana to the mouth of the Apure there are many other rivers of less importance; however, some of them abound in forests and arable lands, which are, on the side of Cumaná and Caracas, those known as the Cari, Pao, Manapire, and Guarico, and on the side of Guayana, the Arny, Caura, Cuchivero, with many other smaller streams, on both banks, all of which furnish transportation for products with great ease for the inhabitants established on their banks. Among all of these, that of Caura merits preference, owing to its abundance of woods and its superior arable lands where the Indians cultivate products of prime necessity; and some small plantations of cotton have been begun by the fugitive Negroes from Essequibo, of which the Government is sending several families under charge of the Sergeant commanding that escort; where, applying themselves to the cultivation of this plant they may be of some service, while at the capital and its environs, their number already considerably increased, they will, on the contrary begin to be prejudicial and cause trouble.

**POPULATION.**

The present population of this Province resides in eleven small settlements of Spaniards, divided



**No. 70.**

cuatro Ciudades, y siete villas, que unas y otras, á excepcion de la Capital, lo son solamente en el nombre, y sesenta y dos Misiones de Indios, que Doctrinan los Padres observantes en el alto y vajo Orinoco, desde Rio Negro, hasta nueva Guayana, y los Padres Capuchinos Cathalanes, de aqui para abajo, que todas componen el numero de veinte y quatro mil, trescientos noventa y cinco vecinos, entre Españoles, gente de color, y naturales de ambos sexos, y de todas edades, como representa el estado numero 1° que acompaña.

Las Misiones que Doctrinan los Padres Capuchinos Cathalanes, consistentes en trece mil Indios de distintas Naciones, situadas en la parte mas importante, de mayor cuidado, y fertil, de este continente, sin embargo de su antigüedad, todavia se hallan en la clase de nuevas reducciones, y con esperanzas muy remotas de que lleguen al Estado de civilizacion que sé desea, por mas que se fatiguen los Religiosos, en darles a conocer quanto les importa la vida sociable y Christiana; pues no teniendo particular arrahigo de bienes, y contentandose con una costa Labranza de Maiz, Casabe, y algunas raizes, para su preciso sustento, todo lo demas lo miran con repugnancia, y como sugesion de que hayen quanto pueden para entregarse al ocio, y al libertinaje, con no poco riesgo de los mismos Misioneros que quieren contenerlos. Estas Misiones manejadas vajo el sistema Economico que hasta el presente se há seguido, sin que por esto sea, segun todo probabilidad el mas acertado, ni deje de tener que enmendar a mayor beneficio y utilidad comun

into four cities and seven towns, both, with the exception of the capital, being such only in name, and seventy-two Indian missions taught by the Franciscan Fathers on the upper and lower Orinoco, from Rio Negro to New Guiana, and by the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers from here down, all making the total of twenty-four thousand three hundred and ninety-five residents, comprising Spaniards, people of color, and natives of both sexes and of all ages, as is shown by the statement number one hereto annexed.

The missions conducted by the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, comprising thirteen thousand Indians of different nations, situated in the most important, best cared for, and most fertile part of this continent, notwithstanding their antiquity, are still to be classed among the newly subjugated, and with very remote chances of their reaching the state of civilization which is desired, however much the pious Fathers may exert themselves in bringing to their knowledge (so important to them) a social and Christian life. For not having any individual landed property and contenting themselves with cultivation on a small scale of corn, *casabe*, and some roots for their necessary sustenance, they look upon everything else with repugnance, and as a subjugation from which they flee as well as they can to give themselves up to idleness and to licentiousness, with no little risk to the missionaries themselves who endeavor to restrain them. These missions managed under the economic system which has been followed up to the present, without its

**No. 70.**

de la Provincia, son no obstante las mas bien provistas, y las que se hallan mejor asistidas.

Los Padres observantes, como se acaba de decir, tienen á su cargo los Pueblos que hay fundados desde la Capital hasta San Carlos de Rio Negro, habiendoseles entregado ultimamente los que gobernaban los Jesuitas expatriados, que hasta fines del año de ochenta y cinco, estuvieron sin Ministro Apostolico, como igualmente los del alto Orinoco y Rio Negro, en donde los Naturales son mas laboriosos, hacen sus buenas sementeras para su alimento, cosechan Cacao silvestre, algunas Resinas, frutas, y especias aromaticas, que venden á los Españoles, con otros varios renglones, que dan á conocer su ambicion al interes, y lo que han adelantado con el trato y comunicacion que han tenido con la Tropa: La carencia de Carne de Baca en aquellos parajes, la suple la pesca, y abundante cazeria que encuentran en sus selvas; estas segun noticias abundan de Maderas esquisitas, de diferentes cualidades, que no se hallan en el resto de la Provincia el todo de su variedad; pero se hace muy dificil, y costoso su transporte, por los muchos malos pasos de raudales, y arrecifales, y gran distancia que media á esta Capital.

El partido de Guirior, de dia en dia, va en mayor decadencia, y aniquilandose el numero de Españoles y Naturales que lo habitan. El corto Destacamento de Tropa que guarnece este puesto, experimenta mucha carestia de viveres, á excepcion del Casabe y Platanos, y estos nada abundantes; carecen de ganado bacuño, y para conseguir alguna vez

being, in all probability, the best adapted system, or one which should not be changed for the greater common benefit and advantage to the Province, are nevertheless the best provided for, and those which are the best conducted.

The Franciscan Fathers, as has just been stated, have under their charge the settlements which are established from the capital to San Carlos of the Rio Negro, they having lately had delivered over to them the settlements which were governed by the expatriated Jesuits, which up to the end of the year eighty-five were without an Apostolic Minister, as also those of the upper Orinoco and Rio Negro, where the natives are more laborious, sow their own fields for their alimentation, take in crops of wild cacao, some resins, fruits, and aromatic spices, which they sell to the Spaniards, with some other lines which indicate their ambition for gain, and how they have advanced through trading and communicating with the troops. The lack of fresh meat in these localities is supplied by fishing and abundance of game to be found in the forests. These forests, according to reports, abound in exquisite woods of different qualities which are not to be found in the rest of the Province; but its transportation is rendered very difficult and expensive, owing to the many rapids and shoals, and the great distance to this capital.

The district of Guirior is daily falling into worse decay, and the number of Spaniards and natives inhabiting it is diminishing. The small detachment of troops guarding this locality experiences a great lack

**No. 70.**

carne salada, necesitan embiar á Barceloneta, en distancia tan larga y penosa, que llega sinó corrompida de muy mala condicion: La numerosa gentilidad, que hay en aquellos montes, dan muestras algunas vezes de querer volver á su antiguo orgullo saliendo de quando en quando, á insultar á los Poblados y Españoles, con quienes han tenido en el año pasado de ochenta y cinco, encuentros en que fueron rechazados, aunque con algunas muertes de una y otra parte.

**TIERRAS, SU CULTIVO Y FRUTOS.**

La costa del sur del Orinoco, desde punta Barima, veinte leguas poco mas ó menos Rio arriba, es anegadiza á las orillas, pasta cerca del caño de Caruina donde la serrania de Imataca toma su direccion hacia la mar al sur-sueste, de modo que con el cañon del Rio forman una espaciosa peninsula triangular, por donde vajan fertilizandola los Rios de Amacuro, Arature, y Aquire. Toda ella se compone de Montes y Arboledas de excelentes cualidades de Maderas de construccion y demas usos aque se quieran aplicar. Tiene muchas tierras de Labor, singularmente á las faldas de la propia Serrania, en donde se encuentran libres de inundaciones, y retiradas de la caxa del Orinoco, abundantes y hermosos valles que por varias abras se dirigen á lo interior del Pays, y tambien se hallan algunas sabanetas de buenos pastos, para Ganado. Por los Rios explicados y caños que

of food supplies, excepting the *casabe* and plantains, and the latter are not at all abundant; they lack cattle, and to secure at any time salt beef they have to send to Barceloneta—so long and greivous a distance that it arrives, if not spoiled, in a very poor condition. The numerous heathens there are in those forests give at times evidences of desiring to return to their ancient arrogance, coming out every now and then to insult the settlers and Spaniards, with whom they have had, during the past year, eighty-five encounters in which they were repulsed, although with some deaths on both sides.

**ARABLE LANDS AND PRODUCTS.**

The southern bank of the Orinoco, from Point Barima, twenty leagues more or less up stream, is liable to overflow, up to near the Caruina channel, where the Imataca ridge of hills takes a direction towards the sea, south-southeast, so that with the channel of the river it forms a spacious triangular peninsula where the Amacuro, Arature, and Acquire rivers flow, fertilizing it. The whole of it is composed of forests and woods of excellent qualities in the way of building lumber and for other uses to which it may be put. It has much arable land, principally on the slopes of the ridge where may be found, free from inundation and retired from the course of the Orinoco, abundant and beautiful valleys, which through several openings lead towards the interior of the country, and there are also to be found some stretches of good pasture for cattle. The rivers named, and the

**No. 70.**

despiden estos, y cruzan de unos á otros, hay comunicacion facil á toda la extension de esta Peninsula, y proporcion de conducir los frutos, quando los haya, á la costa del Orinoco, á muy poca costa. La distancia que media de estos terrenos al Hato de Ganado mayor de las Misiones de Padres Capuchinos Cathalanes, es menos de lo que hasta ahora se habia creido; pues habiendole faltado viveres a la expedicion del reconocimiento de Maderas de construccion, el Comisionado de ella despachó gente por tierra, desde el Rio Aquire al pueblo de Cumaná, que llegaron en un dia á pie, y se proveyeron de carne y casabe.

Desde Carucina corre la Serrania por la misma costa del Orinoco, dejando entre las dos una corta distancia de sabanas de pastar Ganado, y montañia que en el Rio Carony termina y toma la Cordillera para el sur; tirando desde aqui para el oeste hasta la Capital, parece otra esfera, conociendose sensiblemente una diferencia grande en el temperamento que se extraña por lo mas calido, como á la vista la desnudez de la tierra, en donde en distancias muy largas, solo se ven algunos manchones de Morichales, pero buenas sabanas para Hatos de Ganado mayor.

Por la mucha distancia de las tierras de Labor, y costosa conduccion de frutos, han adelantado poco los vecinos de la Capital consistiendo sus Labores por la mayor parte en comestibles, que apenas alcanzan para el consumo interior. De las producciones extrahibles se podran cosechar annualmente algunas seiscientas cargas de tabaco; y se

branches they shoot out, crossing from one to the other, afford easy communication over the whole extent of this peninsula, and facilities for the transportation of products, whenever there shall be any, to the banks of the Orinoco at very little cost. The distance between these lands and the cattle ranches of the Missions of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers is less than has been supposed up to this time, since the expedition to inspect the building lumber having lacked provisions, the Commissioner thereof sent men by land from the Acquire river to the town of Cumaná, who arrived in one day on foot and provided themselves with meat and *casabe*.

From Curucina the ridge of hills runs along the coast of the Orinoco, leaving between the two a short extent of savannahs for pasturing cattle, and mountains which terminate at the Caroni river, and the range follows on to the south, deflecting from here towards the west as far as the capital. It appears like another sphere; a great difference is noticeable; the temperature is much warmer and the land barren for long distances except for some clumps of *morichales*, but good savannahs for cattle ranches.

Owing to the distance of the arable lands, and the expensive transportation of products, the residents of the capital have advanced little, their cultivation consisting chiefly of food products, which barely suffice for the domestic consumption. Of the productions exportable, there may be harvested annually some six hundred loads of tobacco. A larger supply of this article could be

**No. 70.**

haria mayor acopio de esta especie, si á los vecinos se les diese mas amplitud para la siembra. La mitad ó mas se recoge en la jurisdiccion de la villa de Upata, y lo demas en los contornos de esta Capital, y de los demas Pueblos de la Provincia; se recogen ocho mil cueros, poco mas ó menos, la mitad de ellos de las inmediatas Provincias: Cacáo, no alcanzando el que se dá, para el abasto interior, se hace preciso traerlo de Caracas y Barinas; pero si se hiciesen plantaciones de este fruto, se produciria sin duda muy bueno y abundante, por la excelente calidad de los terrenos; y lo mismo se puede afirmar del añil, á que se ha dado principio con algunas cortas siembras, que han dado las mejores muestras y aseguran copiosas cosechas, si hubiese labradores de tal qual mediano arraygo que fomentasen este ramo. El Algodon quasi sin cultivo alguno se dá en qualquiera parte, de aventajada calidad, y rinde cada Arbol quasi otro tanto mas que en las Islas de Barlovento, siendo al propio tiempo menos expuestas las cosechas por lo mas arreglado aqui de las Estaciones del año; pero como en este Comercio se le ha dado poca estimacion hasta ahora por el Directo á España, y no se le proporcionaba salida á otra parte, han empezado á desmayar los Labradores, á quienes por parte del Gobierno se les habia estimulado al cultivo y fomento de este importante renglon.

Las existencias de Ganado mayor se consideran poco mas ó menos, de docientas y veinte mil Cabezas, las ciento y ochenta mil en el Hato del comun de las Misiones de los Padres Capuchinos, y las restantes quaranta

had if the residents were given more extent for planting. The half or more is gathered in the jurisdiction of the village of Upata, and the rest in the environs of this capital and the other towns of the Province. Eight thousand hides, more or less, are collected—the half of which from the neighboring Provinces. The production of cacao not being sufficient for the interior demand, it becomes necessary to bring it from Caracas and Barinas; but should plantations of this fruit be laid out, there undoubtedly would be produced a very good quality and great abundance, owing to the excellent quality of the lands; and the same may be said with regard to indigo, a few small plantings of which have been begun, which have produced good samples and give assurance of large crops, if there were planters with small holdings who should patronize this branch. Cotton, almost without any cultivation, grows in any place, of fine quality, and each tree produces almost as much again as the trees of the Windward Islands, at the same time the crops being less exposed, owing to the evenness of the seasons of the year; but as the local commerce has given but little thought up to the present to direct trade with Spain, with respect to this commodity, and export to other places has not been afforded it, the planters, who had been previously stimulated and encouraged in this important cultivation by the Government, have begun to be discouraged.

The supply of live-stock is estimated to be two hundred and twenty thousand head, more or less, one

**No. 70.**

mil, en los vecinos particulares. La cria de Mulas es escasa, como tambien la de bestias caballares; pera lo aparente de los pastos, y los atajos de Yeguas que se trahen de las Provincias inmediatas, prodran facilitar dentro de poco numero de años, la multiplicacion de una y otra especie.

No obstante el numero de cabezas de Ganado Bacuno expresado, se hace indispensable muchas veces ocurrir para el abasto de esta Capital, á los llanos de Caracas y Cumaná, porque del Stato de las Misiones, es costosa y dificil su conduccion, y el que tienen los criadores particulares, se reduce á hembras y reses nuevas, hallandose entre ellas muy pocas de Carniceria.

## COMERCIO.

## INGRESO EN LAS CAXAS, Y PENSIONES DE LA PROVINCIA.

El Comercio directo de esta Provincia á España, ha hecho pocos progresos; en tiempos anteriores, vinieron algunos Registros de Cadiz que retornaron con tal qual utilidad, Cargados con el tabaco, que vajaba de Barinas, sobrante del numero de cargas que entonces daba aquella Provincia á la Real Compañia Guipuzcoana, con el que se cosechava en esta, con Cueros y algun Cacao de Caracas; pero ultimamente, no quedandole otro renglon que el de los Cueros en poca abundancia, no siempre de mayores ventajas, y sin otro algun recurso, cesó este xiro, y despues solo han venido dos

hundred and eighty thousand in the herds of the communities of the Missions of the Capuchin Fathers, and the remaining forty thousand held by the private residents. The broods of mules are small, as also those of horses; but the suitability of the pastures and the bands of mares which are brought from the neighboring provinces can bring about within a few years the increase of each species.

Notwithstanding the number of head of cattle above mentioned, it is often indispensable to resort to the plains of Caracas and Cumaná for the supply of this capital, because to meet it from the herds of the Missions is expensive and difficult, and those owned by private breeders are limited to cows and yearlings, there being very few beef cattle among them.

## COMMERCE.

## RECEIPTS IN THE TREASURY AND PENSIONS OF THE PROVINCES.

The direct trade between this Province and Spain has made little progress. In former times some vessels came from Cadiz, which returned with a fair profit, loaded with tobacco brought down from Barinas, the surplus of the number of *cargas* which that Province then gave to the Royal Guipuzcoana Company, with that which was harvested in this Province, with hides, and with some cacao from Caracas; but lately, there remaining to them no other line except that of hides, little abundant, not always profitable, and without any other recourse left them, this trade ceased, and since

**No. 70.**

Registros, por Mayo del año de ochenta y seis, una Goleta del vecino Don Joseph Luis Basanta con diez y ocho á veinte mil pesos en caldos y efectos, y en Marzo del año de ochenta y siete, un Bergantin de Don Manuel Ferran, tambien de este vecindario, con diez á doce mil pesos de Cargamento en vinos y aguardiente, quedando el Pais en la misma necesidad que antes, de lo preciso para el abasto comun, y fomento de su Agricultura.

Lo limitado del comercio interior de la Provincia, se infiere de lo que se acaba de decir de sus frutos y producciones, y el que los vecinos en sus pequeños Buques, hacen á las yslás extrangeras en virtud de concesiones de la intendencia de Caracas, se reduce á extraher cargamentos de tal qual corto numero de Cueros, y de Ganado Bacuno y Mular, que para este fin compran en las Provincias inmediatas: ademas de la mortandad de animales, y otros quebrantos que sufren en la navegacion, llegando á aquellas Colonias se ven precisados, muchas ó las mas veces, á vender á precios vaxos, con motivo de la concurrencia que hay de otras partes, particularmente de la nueva Inglaterra con las mismas especies, y de mejor condicion: si retornan Negros, es forzoso venderlos al fiado, por no haber comprador á dinero contante, perdiendo en la plata un treinta y siete y medio por ciento; y ultimamente quando la necesidad ha obligado permitirles el retorno en efectos de la tercera ó quarta parte del producido de sus cargamentos, es poco ó nada lo que han adelantado; de suerte que fuera de ser un engaño

then only two vessels have arrived —about May, of the year '86, a schooner belonging to a resident, Don Joseph Luis Basanta, with from eighteen to twenty thousand pesos in spirits and goods, and in March of the year '87 a brigantine belonging to Don Manuel Ferran, also a resident, with from ten to twelve thousand pesos in a cargo of wines and liquors, the country remaining in the same need as before of the necessary for the common supply, and for the encouragement of its agriculture.

The meagreness of the interior trade of the Province is inferred from what has just been said of its products; and that which the residents in their small vessels carry on with the foreign Islands, by virtue of concessions from the Intendency of Caracas, is limited to the transportation of cargoes of a small number of hides and of cattle and mules, which they buy for the purpose in the neighboring provinces. Moreover, owing to the mortality of animals and other great losses they suffer in transit, on reaching the said Colonies they find themselves forced, many or the majority of times, to sell at low prices, by reason of the competition from other places, particularly from New England, with the same articles and in a much better condition. If they return with negroes it is necessary to sell them on credit, as there is no purchaser for cash, losing in silver thirty-seven and a half per cent. And lastly, when necessity has forced them to bring back a third or a fourth part of the proceeds of their cargo in goods, they have made little or noth-

**No. 70.**

manifiesto, esta cualidad de xiro que alucina á las gentes, ya una vez engolfados, se hallan en la precision de continuar para conservar su opinion, exponiendose á la ultima ruina, que han experimentado algunos, siendo muy pocos los que han aumentado sus intereses al punto de vivir desempeñados, y con una mediana comodidad y decencia; y de aqui los medios indebidos de que se valen algunos, y los arbitrios del contrabando: contrabando ratero, y de poca consideracion, proporcionado á sus cortisimos fondos; pero perjudicial siempre á los Reales intereses, y al comercio Nacional, que se cela por lo tanto como es debido, sin perdonar quantos medios ordinarios y extraordinarios dicta la razon y el conocimiento local del Pays.

El ingreso que por razon de distintas contribuciones, tienen las Caxas de Guayana, alcanza un año con otro, á catorce mil pesos, y las pensiones á que se hallan afectas, ascienden á cinquenta y seis mil seis cientos ochenta y nueve, como demuestra el Estado numero 2 que acompaña, resultando quedar en el descubierto de quarenta y tres mil pesos, y en la necesidad de ocurrir á las de Caracas, que hallandose recargadas de sus propias obligaciones, no siempre pueden asistir y socorrer con la puntualidad que requieren las urgencias.

Lo expuesto hasta aqui, manifiesta lo desvalido, lo miserable y atrasado de la Provincia de Guayana, despues de tan larga serie de años de su conquista y ocupacion, y de tantos auxilios de caudales, gracias y franquicias, con que la Corte conociendo

ing; so that, besides being a manifest deception, this class of trade which deceives people, who, once engaged in it, find themselves in the necessity of continuing in order to preserve their reputation, exposing themselves to ultimate ruin. This has already been the experience of some, there being very few who have increased their capital to the point of living free from debt, and with moderate comfort and decency. This gives rise to the undue methods which some follow, and smuggling—petty smuggling, and of little moment, in proportion to their short funds, but ever prejudicial to the Royal interests and the national trade which watches, therefore, as it should, without overlooking all the ordinary and extraordinary means that reason and the local knowledge of the country may dictate.

The revenues from different contributions coming into the Treasury of Guiana is, one year with another, fourteen thousand pesos, and the pensions to which it is subject amount to fifty-six thousand six hundred and eighty-nine pesos, as is shown by the statement number 2, hereto annexed, a deficit resulting of forty-three thousand pesos, and a necessity of resorting to the Treasury of Caracas, which, being taxed with its own obligations, cannot always render assistance and succor with the punctuality which pressing needs demand.

What has been said up to this point shows the helplessness, the wretchedness and the backwardness of the Province of Guiana after so long a period of years since its conquest and occupation, and of



**No. 70.**

la importancia de su conservacion la ha favorecido y procurado su mayor fomento, á que han correspondido tan mal como se está viendo los efectos que debian prometerse de la piadosa Real liberalidad. Atribuyese en algun modo este atraso á las inquietudes y frecuentes hostilidades en tiempos anteriores, de tanta multitud y diversidad de Naciones de Indios Barbaros que infestaban el Pays; pero aun mas que á esto parece debe achacarse á haberse errado en los principios la eleccion de los terrenos para la Poblacion, á que contribuiria no poco la perplexidad de lo inculto é impenetrable de un Pays nuevo, y la obscuridad é incertidumbre, que inducen las circunstancias de las primeras fundaciones, dificiles de desvanecer, hasta que el tiempo haya ido descubriendo los obstaculos que impedian sus progresos.

**IDEA DE POBLACION QUE SE PROPONE, Y ALGUNOS MEDIOS PARA REALIZARLA.**

En la Real Instruccion de cinco de Junio de mil Setecientos sesenta y dos, se previno que para la mayor custodia de la Provincia de Guayana, las internas y Reyno de Santa Fee, por la introduccion que facilita la conocida navegacion del Rio Orinoco, se mudase la antigua Poblacion de Guayana, á la Angostura del mismo Rio, donde actualmente se halla; que se hiciesen conducir los Ganados, y se les diesen pastos de alli para arriba, y que no

so many riches, privileges, and franchises with which the Court, appreciating the importance of its preservation, has favored it and worked for its encouragement; wherefore, better results ought to be expected from the merciful Royal liberality, than so poor a return as is here noted. This backwardness is attributed in some way to the unrest and frequent hostilities, in times gone by, of such a multitude and diversity of nations of savage Indians which infested the country; but even more than to this, it seems that it should be attributed to having made an error at the beginning in the selection of the lands for settlements, to which the perplexity of the uncultivated and impenetrable state of a new country contributed not a little, and also the obscurity and uncertainty incident to the circumstances of the first settlements, difficult to overcome, until time shall have gone on disclosing the obstacles which prevented its advancement.

**IDEA OF THE SETTLEMENT PROPOSED, AND SOME MEANS OF REALIZING THE SAME.**

In the Royal Instructions of the fifth of June of seventeen hundred and seventy-two it was provided that for the better custody of the Province of Guiana, the interior Provinces, and the Kingdom of Santa Fé, owing to the introductions which the well known navigation of the Orinoco river affords, the old settlement of Guiana should be moved to Angostura on the same river, where it now is; that the live stock should be taken there and be

**No. 70.**

sé permitiese hacer nuevas sementaras de viveres en las margenes del Orinoco de la Angostura abajo, con lo demas que en ella se expresa. Por la de diez y seis de Mayo de mil setecientos sesenta y nueve, á representacion de este Gobierno se mandaron demoler los quatro pueblos de upacóa, Tipurua, Piacoa, y Unata que estaban situados mas abajo de las fortalezas, y las razones que impulsaron esta soberana resolucion, fue que se hallaban desabrigados, y bien distantes de dichas Fortalezas, de suerte que siendo la Boca grande de Navios por donde los enemigos podrian dirigir qualesquiera invasion que intentasen se encontrarian precisamente antes de llegar á alguna accion, con los referidos Pueblos que les facilitarían auxilios, particularmente de viveres, y guias, para internarse en la Provincia, y encaminarlos prontamente donde les conviniese; quando por el contrario los conseguirian con mucho trabajo, dilacion y riesgo, si esto les faltase. No desconviniendo de la solidez estas razones en el tiempo que se tuvieron presentes, y contrayendo á ellas mismas el discurso, y á lo que parece exigen las ya distintas circunstancias del dia, se expondrá lo mas conveniente á lo que por tal se estima, al mejor servicio del Rey, y al fomento de este Pays.

La Costa del Norte del Orinoco desde la Capital hasta Barrancas de Guarupo, ocho leguas mas abajo de los Castillos de la antigua Guayana, se halla Poblada de fundaciones de Hatos de Ganado mayor por los vecinos de la Provincia de Cumaná, teniendo inmediatas las

pastured from there up, and that no new plantings of food products be permitted on the banks of the Orinoco from Angostura down, with the rest therein set forth. By the Royal Instruction of the seventeenth of May of seventeen hundred and sixty-nine, upon representations from this Government, it was ordered to demolish the four towns of Opacoa, Tipurua, Piaeva, and Unata, which were situated below the forts; and the reasons which impelled this sovereign resolution were that they were unprotected and far distant from the said forts, so that the large *Boca de Navios* being the point from where the enemy could direct any invasion it might attempt, it would, before engaging in any action, come upon the said town, which would afford them assistance, particularly in the way of provisions and guides, to get into the interior of the Province and promptly put them on the road to wherever they wished to go, while on the contrary they would secure these with much labor, delay, and risk, were the towns out of the way. Not disagreeing with the soundness of these reasons at the time that they were considered, and limiting the discussion to them, and to what it seems the different conditions of the present demand, I shall express what I deem to be more advisable for the better service of the King and the advancement of this country.

The northern coast of the Orinoco from the capital to Barrancas de Guarupo, eight leagues below the castles of old Guiana, is settled with establishments of herds of live

**No. 70.**

nuevas reducciones de Padres Capuchinos Aragoneses, quienes en el propio terreno, segun noticias, pretenden hacer Pueblo de naturales. La del Sur, siguiendo de la Angostura ó Capital para abajo, tambien está ocupada con Hatos, y varias Labranzas y sementeras hasta el Rio de Caroni, y desde aqui á las Fortalezas se hallan situadas las Misiones de Carony, San Feliz, San Miguel, y Santa Ana de Puga, en terreno fertil para la Agricultura y abundante de Maderas de construccion, y no obstante, que en virtud de las Reales disposiciones citadas, se demolieron y transmigraron los quatro Pueblos, de Piacoa, Upacóa, Tipurua, y Unata; no por esto se ha quitado al enemigo la proporcion de poder se proveer mas abajo de los Castillos, de los viveres, y de mas auxilios que necesitase, ante sbien los hallaria ahora con mas comodidad en las Sabanas llenas de Ganado del Pueblo del Palmar, veinte y cinco leguas mas abajo de la antigua Guayana, cerca del Rio de Imataca, por donde los mismos Misioneros, en tiempo de Guerra, manifestaron sus temores de ser sorprendidos; causando no pocos cuidados al Gobierno lo expuesto y desabrigado de su situacion. Hallarials internando por el Rio de Aguire, en las Misiones de Cumaná, Miamo, Tupuquen, y otros que demoran aun mas al Leste, de donde, como ya queda dicho, se proveyó de Carne y Casabe la gente de la expedicion de reconocimiento de Montes que se acaba de practicar, y finalmente, los encontraria tambien en la Costa del Norte jurisdiccion de Cumaná, á las ocho ó mas leguas

stock by the residents of the Province of Cumaná, having near them the new subjugations of the Aragonese Capuchin Fathers who, on the same land, according to information, intend to make a settlement of natives. The coast of the south, following from Angostura, or Capital, down stream, is also occupied with cattle ranches and several farms and sown lands to the Caroni river, and from here to the fort are situated the Missions of Caroni, San Felix, San Miguel, and Santa Anna de Puga, on fertile lands adapted to agriculture and abounding in building woods, and, notwithstanding that pursuant to the Royal provision cited, the four towns of Piaeva, Opacoa, Tipurua, and Unata were demolished and removed, the enemy has not been thereby prevented from providing himself lower down than the castles with the provisions and other assistance he might need, but rather can he find them to-day with more ease on the savannahs covered with cattle of the town of Palmar, twenty-five leagues below old Guiana, near the Imataca river, where the missionaries themselves in time of war made known their fears of being surprised, their exposed and unprotected position causing no little care to the Government. They would find them going inland by the Aguire river, in the Missions of Cumaná, Miamo, Tupuquen and others which lie more to the east, where, as has been already said, the expeditionary party exploring the forests, which has just finished its work, provided itself with meat and *casabe*, and, finally, they would

**No. 70.**

antes de llegar á las Fortalezas, y la comodidad de poder marchar por tierra llana á donde quisiese dirigir sus operaciones. Deduciendose de lo expuesto, no solamente no haberse conseguido el fin de privar al enemigo de los auxilios de viveres, practicos, y demas, sino antes bien, por los accidentes explicados haberselos facilitado con ventajas de aumento y mayor abundancia, y por lo tanto quedar desvanecidas aquellas causas, ó consideraciones que han impedido la Poblacion desde la Boca de Navios, á las Fortalezas de la antigua Guayana, y de consiguiente deberse mudar de sistema en esta parte, acomodandose á las distintas circunstancias del dia, y solicitando el remedio por el termino contrario, proceder sin perdida de tiempo á la ocupacion y Poblacion de aquellos terrenos, que se considera ser el mas eficaz, y unico, para impedir la entrada, tanto por la parte del Rio Orinoco, como por la de Cuyuni, en donde introducidos los Olandeses, como en el articulo que trata de este Rio, se ha hecho presente, y alegando posesion, como lo han hecho por su Embaxador en representacion de dos de Agosto de mil setecientos sesenta y nueve, de que se pasó Copia á este Gobierno, es de temer, si no se les opone algun obice, que extendiendo cada vez mas sus limites, aprovechen la primera ocasion, ó pretexto qualquiera de ir adelantando sus Establecimientos, é ideas de su comercio, y trato clandestino, tan perjudicial.

Del Orinoco, al Cuyuni, Norte á Súr, median treinta leguas, y del Leste á Oeste hasta las misiones de Guayana, y Hato de Ganado mayor

also find them on the coast of the north, jurisdiction of Cumaná, eight leagues or more before reaching the forts, and with the comfort of being able to march on level ground wherever they might desire to carry their operations. It being deduced from the foregoing not only that the end of depriving the enemy of the aid of provisions, guides and other assistance has not been secured, but rather, through the incidents set forth, it has been afforded the same with increase and in greater abundance, and therefore those causes or considerations which have prevented settlements from the Boca de Navios to the forts of old Guiana having vanished, the system in this part ought to be changed, accommodating itself to the different conditions of the day, and soliciting the remedy by directly contrary action, to proceed without loss of time to the occupation and settlement of those lands, that may be considered the most efficacious and only means for preventing the entrance, not only by way of the Orinoco river but by that of Cuyuni, where the Dutch already introduced, as has been stated in the article treating of this river, and alleging possession as they have by their Ambassador in his representation of the second of August of seventeen hundred and sixty-nine, a copy of which was transmitted to this Government, it is to be feared, unless some obstacle is opposed, that, daily extending more their boundaries, they may take advantage of the first occasion or pretext to go on advancing their establishments and the ideas of their com-

**No. 70.**

del comun de ellas, mucho menos; de modo que entre estas, las tierras vajas de la costa, y las montuosas, forman un estrecho cañon, facil de llenar con un proporcionado numero de fundaciones utiles; mayormente auxiliando los Reverendos Padres Capuchinos, como se cree de su religioso celo, y amor al servicio del Rey, lo harán gustosos por que de ello les redundará tambien la ventaja de asegurar las Espaldas de sus Misiones, y de poder exercer con mas tranquilidad su Apostolico Ministerio, libres de los sobresaltos con que al presente viven, y como quiera que todo el terreno que media mas allá de Cuyuni hasta las cabeceras del Parime y Curaricara, ya en el día mas explorado, se halla noier, nicon mucho de la extension que hasta ahora se habiá imaginado, puede esperarse con razonable fundamento, que dentro de poco número de años, se hallaria ventajosamente ocupado, interpolando Pueblos y Hatos, extendiendo sus fundaciones los criadores, los labradores y vecindarios, sus Plantaciones y sus reducciones los Reverendos Padres Misioneros, quienes estrechándose mutuamente, unos y otros continuarian sus establecimientos en las grandes Sabanas, y margenes de los Rios que tiran al Sur, hacia las expresadas cabeceras. Facilitaria por otra parte, y ayudaria mucho al intento el ser por lo mas Pais de llanuras, y de temperamento benigno y saludable, como lo comprueba la experiencia de las nuevas reducciones de Padres Capuchinos, avanzadas en razonable distancia; cuya proximidad de sus Misiones y Hatos de comunidad, proporcionando el

merce and clandestine trade which are so prejudicial.

From the Orinoca to the Cuyuni, north to south, is thirty leagues, and from east to west, to the Missions of Guiana and the community herds of cattle, much less, so that between these, the low lands of the coast and the mountain lands form a narrow cañon easy to be filled with a proportionate number of profitable settlements, especially by the assistance of the Reverend Capuchin Fathers, which it is believed, because of their religious zeal and love for the service of the King, they will gladly give, since thereby there will redound to them the advantage of securing the rear of their Missions, and of being able to more tranquilly exercise their Apostolic Ministry, free from the surprises to which they are now exposed; and since all the land lying beyond the Cuyuni up to the sources of the Parime and the Curarieara, now better explored, is found to be much less in extent than was imagined up to the present, it can be hoped on reasonable grounds that within a short number of years it will be advantageously occupied, introducing settlements and ranches—the breeders extending their establishments, the farmers and residents their plantations, and their subjugations the Reverend Missionary Fathers, who, becoming mutually firmer bound together, would carry on their establishments to the great savannahs and banks of the rivers that flow to the south towards the said sources. On the other hand, the purpose would be greatly assisted and aided by the fact that the coun-

**No. 70.**

abasto de Pan y carne, allanaria el obstaculo mayor de todo nuevo Establecimiento.

Parece convendria, por las razones insinuadas, dar principio á la Poblacion en aquellos terrenos mas inmediatos á los terminos de las posesiones extrangeras; pero los indispensables, crecidos gastos que se causarian, la dificultad de conducir Ganados, viveres, y demas auxilios, á tanta distancia, y la de encontrar colonos que quisiesen desde luego establecerse en unas tierras nuevas, remotas, y faltas por ahora de comunicacion, persuaden á que la primera fundacion se haga á orillas del Orinoco, en el Caño de Carucina, ó bien en el de Zacaupana, distante veinte leguas, poco mas ó menos de las bocas, de tierras altas, bien ventiladas, y fertilisimas, donde en la actualidad se hallan congregados mas de tres mil Indios Guaraunos, que servirian mucho para el intento, y adonde con menos repugnancia concurririan Pobladores, por la comodidad de tener mas proximos los viveres, socorros prontos en caso de necesidad, maderamen abundante para fabricar sus casas, sus Labores á la vista, y facil conduccion y salida de sus frutos.

**PUERTO DE REGISTRO.**

Esta primera fundacion en Carucina, ó bien en Zacaupana, como que

try is largely level and of a generous and healthy temperature, as is proven by the experience of the new subjugations of the Capuchin Fathers, advanced for a reasonable distance, the proximity of whose missions and community herds, affording the supply of bread and meat, would dispel the greatest obstacle to all new establishments.

It seems it would be advisable, for the reasons suggested, to begin the settlements on those lands nearest the boundaries of the foreign possessions, but the indispensable heavy expenses which would be necessary, the difficulty of carrying live-stock, provisions, and other necessities, for such a distance, and that of finding colonists who would wish to at once establish themselves on new lands, and the present lack of communication, suggest that the first establishment be located on the banks of the Orinoco, either on the Carucina channel, or on that of Zacaupana, distant twenty leagues, more or less, from the mouths, high land, well ventilated, and most fertile, where at the present time there are congregated more than three thousand Guarauno Indians who would be very serviceable for the purpose, and where settlers would come with less reluctance, owing to the comfort of having provisions nearer, prompt help in case of necessity, abundant lumber for the construction of their houses, their farms in sight, and easy transportation and an outlet for their products.

**PORT OF ENTRY.**

This first settlement in Carucina, or in Zacaupana, as it must be the

**No. 70.**

ha de ser el punto de apoyo de las demas, y de donde les han de ir los auxilios necesarios, merece la mayor atencion, y que desde el principio se ponga todo el esmero posible en fomentarla y aumentarla. Su situacion favorable en uno de los brazos principales del Orinoco, ofrece muchas ventajas, y a mayor comodidad del Comercio un Puerto de Registros seguro, facil de defender, á proporcionada distancia de la Boca principal, ó entrada del Rio, y sin el inconveniente que ahora se padece de haber de subir las Embarcaciones, ochenta ó mas leguas, hasta esta Capital, por varios malos pasos que hacen penosissima su navegacion y recargan de costos los generos y efectos, por la mucha dilacion; habiendose experimentado en algunas ocasiones, haber gastado mas tiempo desde las Bocas aqui, que de España á las Bocas: agregase que en el de Rio vajo (á lo menos quatro meses del año) no pueden salir cargados los Barcos de este Puerto á causa del poco fondo en el paso que llaman de Mamo, que obliga ir á tomar la carga en Carony, á donde con anticipacion es necesario remitirla; resultando de esta practica, ademas de los perjuicios que reporta el comercio legitimo, el facilitarse en algun modo el clandestino, sin que el celo y vigilancia de los ministros principales, por mas que se esmeren pueda estorvarlo del todo.

Formada esta primera Poblacion con el fin expresado, se seguirá fundando tres, quatro, ó mas Pueblos hacia lo interior de aquella Provincia, y ultimamente una Villa de Españoles á orillas del Cuyuni, en el

supporting point for the others, and the place whence the necessary assistance is to go to them, merits the greatest attention, and from the beginning all possible care should be taken in encouraging and advancing it. Its favorable situation on one of the principal branches of the Orinoco offers many advantages, and, for the greater benefit of commerce, a safe port of entry, easy to defend, at a proportionate distance from the principal mouth, or entrance of the river, and without the inconvenience which is now felt of the vessels having to go up eighty or more leagues to this Capital, over many bad places, which make the navigation very difficult and load merchandise and goods with expenses, owing to the great delay, it having been the experience on some occasions to spend more time from the mouths here than from Spain to the mouths. Add to this, that at low water (at least four months in the year) loaded boats cannot leave this port, owing to the little depth at the place called Mamo, which compels the cargo being taken on at Caroni, where it is necessary to transport it beforehand, there resulting from this practice, aside from the injuries to legitimate trade, the facilities for the clandestine trade, the zeal and vigilance of the principal officials, however hard they strive, being insufficient to prevent it.

This first settlement, once founded for the purposes expressed, three, four, or more towns would be founded towards the interior of that Province, and ultimately a city of Spaniards on the banks of the

**No. 70.**

punto, poco mas ó menos, de la union de este Rio con el de Supamo, que será conducentisima en dicho paraje, para auxiliar los progresos ulteriores de la Poblacion, para cubrir esta avenida á las Misiones, é impedir la fuga de los Indios, su comunicacion con los Olandeses de Esquivo, y la internacion de estos, á sus tratos y perjudicial comercio de Poytos.

**COLONOS.**

La experiencia practica de algunas nuevas fundaciones en estos Payses, ha hecho ver que el metodo de traer familias á todo costo de Europa, ú obligadas de las mismas Provincias vecinas, no siempre produce los mejores efectos, antes al contrario, se han visto desvanecer semejantes colonias, en muy breve tiempo despues de fundadas, y de haber causado al Real Herario considerables infructuosos gastos: Por lo tanto, seria muy de desear que los nuevos Pobladores acudiesen voluntariamente, atraidos de la conveniencia de un Establecimiento mas ventajoso que el que dejaban, y de las gracias y prerrogativas con que se les debe brindar: De los que vienen en estos terminos subcede ser la mayor parte gente pobre que no tienen principio alguno para emprender labores de consideracion, cifiendose unicamente á las que con su trabajo personal pueden cultivar para sacar una escasa subsistencia: Aj estos para animarlos y atraerlos, convendria se les subministrase de cuenta de la Real Hacienda, con que mantenerse en los quatro, ó seis meses primeros de su llegada, tiempo en que podran fabricar sus casas,

Cuyuni, at or near the confluence of this river with the Supamo, which would be most beneficial at the said point to assist the subsequent progress of the settlements, to cover this avenue to the missionaries, and prevent the flight of the Indians, their communication with the Dutch of Essequibo, and the entry of the latter, or their traffic and injurious trade of Poytos.

**COLONISTS.**

Practical experience in some new settlements in these countries has shown that the method of bringing families at every expense from Europe, or compulsorily from the neighboring Provinces, does not always produce the best results; but rather, on the contrary, such colonies have been seen to vanish in a very short time after their establishment and to have caused the Royal Treasury considerable fruitless expenses. Wherefore it would be desirable for the new settlers to come voluntarily, attracted by the conveniences of settlement more advantageous than the one they have left, and by the privileges and prerogatives which should be offered them. The greater part of those coming under such terms happen to be poor people, who have no capital whatever with which to cultivate fields to any extent, being limited solely to such as by their own work they can cultivate to eke out a scanty existence. To stimulate and attract these it would be advisable to furnish them at the expense of the Royal Treasury with enough to maintain themselves during the four or six months after their arrival, a time within



**No. 70.**

y hacer sus sementeras de Casabe, Maiz, Platano, y demas necesario: De esta cualidad de pobladores no pueden prometerse progresos rapidos, ni mayores ventajas en los principios; pero puestos y arraigados yá, en unos terrenos, cuya fertilidad les asegura el buen exito, y recompensa mas que regular de sus tareas, se aficionarán al trabajo, se animaran y ayudaran mutuamente, como entre vecinos arbitraran los medios de la pesca, caza, y otros para mantenerse sin costo para economizar y ahorrar, y la emulacion y ambicion del interes los alentará insensiblemente, á que demas de los frutos comestibles y de primera necesidad, promueban poco á poco, el cultivo de otros de mas valor, y como la multitud, aunque de partes diminutas hace cuerpo, muchos pocos engrosarán los ramos, particularmente los del Algodon y Tabaco, si de este á su tiempo se tuviese por conveniente el ampliarles su siembra bajo las reglas generales de Administracion, ú otras que pareciesen mas del caso prescribir por ser capaz este solo ramo de proporcionarles los medios de entablar otros de consideracion, conque vivificar en esta Provincia un Comercio activo Directo á España.

Hombres de caudal, por lo regular son los menos que concurren á nuevas Poblaciones, porque huyen del trastorno que causa la mudanza de Domicilio, y solo el aliciente de gracias particulares que les aseguren conocidas mayores ventajas, es capaz de obligarlos á semejante resolucion, si mediante las que teuga á bien franquear la Real Piedad, se pudiese lograr un numero competente de

which they may build their houses and plant their fields of *casabe*, corn, bananas, and other necessaries. With this kind of settlers there can be no promise of rapid progress nor great advantages at the beginning; but, placed and settled on lands the fertility of which will assure them a successful outcome and a more than fair reward for their labor, they will become addicted to work; they will mutually stimulate and assist each other, as among neighbors; they will arrange the methods for fishing, hunting, and other means for sustaining themselves without cost, in order to economize and save, and emulation and the ambition for gain will insensibly encourage them to (aside from the food products and those of prime necessity) promote little by little the cultivation of others of more value and as a multitude, although made up of small parts, forms a body, so many small quantities will increase the branches, particularly those of cotton and tobacco, if at the proper time it should be deemed advisable to increase the planting of the latter under the general rules of administration, or any others that it may seem more advisable to prescribe, since this branch alone is capable of providing the means for undertaking other means of moment, with which to enliven in this Province an active direct commerce with Spain.

Men of means, as a rule, are the last to come to new settlements, as they fly from the disturbance which the change of domicile entails, and only through the enticement of special privileges which shall assure them certain greater advantages is

**No. 70.**

familias de esta clase, serian muy veloces los adelantamientos; pues á proporcion de los fondos de cada uno, extenderian sus posesiones, pondrian en valor las tierras, y se haria abundante acopio de frutos con que darian vigor al Comercio Nacional; los pobres al arrimo de los mas acomodados hallarian calor y ocupaciones en que lucra ry adelantar sus respectivas Labores é Industrias, y los ricos por su propio interes se moverian á entablar fundaciones de Hatos, y como para su regular multiplico es preciso tengan la extension de una, dos, ó mas leguas, se les repartirian las tierras á proporcion, en cuyo caso era indubitable la ocupacion de las que median hasta el Cuyuni con corto numero de criadores formales, y la continuacion mas alla en las llanuras que siguen hacia las fronteras.

Aun mas necesarios que criadores ó Dueños de mucho numero de Ganados, son los Labradores que tengan copiosa esclavitud para la agricultura, que es en lo que consiste el verdadero principal fomento de un Pays, y con lo que se logra ponerlo en el estado de opulencia de que sea susceptible en las provincias inmediatas, y particularmente en la de Caracas, quanto es facil hallar criadores acomodados, tanto seria dificil conseguir de los otros, que quisiesen mudarse á parajes no bien conocidos, porque ademas de poseer haciendas considerables y suficientes tierras de Labor, disfrutan un comercio que les proporciona el expendio de sus cosechas, y aun quando algunos se inclinassen les frustraria el pensamiento la dificultad de encontrar quien les comprase á precio regular las pose-

it possible to lead them to such a resolve. If, through such privileges as the Royal mercy may be pleased to offer, a competent number of families of this class could be secured, the progress would be very rapid; since in proportion to the funds of each they would extend their possessions, they would make the lands valuable, and there would be an abundant supply of products which would invigorate the national commerce; the poor people would find warmth by contact with the more comfortably circumstanced, and occupations which would bring them money and advance their respective fields and industries, and the rich for their own interest would be moved to establish cattle ranches, and as for their regular increase it is necessary to have the extent of one, two, or more leagues, the lands would be divided among them in proportion, in which case the occupation of the lands up to the Cuyuni would be indubitable with a small number of regular breeders, and the extension thereof over the plains which lie further on towards the frontier.

Even more necessary than breeders or owners of large herds of cattle are the farmers having many slaves for agriculture, in which the true or principal advancement of a country consists, and with which it will be possible to place it in the state of opulence of which it is susceptible in the neighboring Provinces, and particularly in the Province of Caracas. In the proportion as it is easy to find moderately rich breeders would it be difficult to secure concessions from the others who might not wish to change to localities not well known,

**No. 70.**

siones que dejaban, ó los retraherian las contingencias insuperables de una transmigracion de esa naturaleza, que en gente de algun acomodo y arraigo son de consideracion.

Estos inconvenientes prodrian vencerse del mismo modo que en la Isla de Trinidad de Barlovento, si tal vez no resultasen mayores de dar entrada á familias de las Colonias extranjeras, en que se omite por lo tanto mas explicacion, dejando á la superior, sabia penetracion de quien puede y debe deliberar en materia de tanta importancia; y se propone por ahora que para dar principio á la ocupacion de los terrenos, se heche mano de algunas familias de la propia Provincia, en el numero que permita su escasa poblacion, y de las que quieran pasar voluntariamente de las de Cumaná, Caracas, y Barinas, que no dejen de presentarse algunas, que en los parajes que abandonan no haran mayor falta, y en estos podran con el tiempo ser de mucha utilidad. Si en la Capital se dejase al arbitrio de los Vecinos, no hay duda que muchos, ó los mas, de los antiguos transmigrados abrazarian gustosos la suerte de ir á establecerse del Presidio para abajo, por la experiencia y conocimiento que tienen de la fecundidad de aquellas tierras, de la abundancia de pescado, cazerias y otras conveniencias de que conservan aun frescas las especies, y muy tierna memoria. Pero admitiendo á los que se tuviese por conveniente, á los demas séles deberá contener, porque en ningun tiempo se ha de permitir siga atraso á la Capital, antes al contrario, se há de procurar su mayor fomento, respecto que ademas del

because besides possessing considerable haciendas and sufficient arable lands, they enjoy a trade which gives them a market for their crops, and even though some should be so inclined they would be deterred by the thought of the difficulty of finding purchasers at fair prices for the possession they leave, or they would be restrained by the contingencies inseparable from a removal of that character, which, among people of some wealth and property, are considerable.

These objections might be overcome in the same manner as in the Island of Trinidad of the Windward, if perhaps greater objections should not result by allowing the entrance of families from the foreign colonies, upon which point, therefore, further explanations are withheld, leaving it to the superior wise judgment of him who can and should deliberate in a matter of such importance; and it is proposed for the present that in order to give a beginning to the occupation of the lands, some families of the Province itself be taken hold of to the extent that its small population may permit, and also of those that may desire voluntarily to go from the Provinces of Cumaná, Caracas, and Barinas (and some will not fail to present themselves), as in the localities they abandon their loss will not be much felt, and in the latter they may in time be of much benefit. If at the capital it should be left to the judgment of the residents, there is no doubt that many, or the greater part of the former emigrants, would gladly embrace the chance to go and establish themselves from the garrisons.

**No. 70.**

valor con que en el dia se halla, es por su situacion un puesto importante, y por la comodidad de su comunicacion con las Provincias inmediatas.

Los Reverendos Padres Capuchinos Cathalanes en el año de setenta y siete, por un efecto de su celo y amor al servicio del Rey, hicieron la oferta de doce mil Cabezas de Ganado Bacuno, que S. M. se dignó admitir, y mandar sé distribuyesen entre los habitantes pobres para aumentar la cria; lo que por varias casualidades no tuvo entonces efecto, ni despues, y se hace presente en esta ocasion como un arbitrio favorable al asunto de que se trata, y que en ningun tiempo pudo tener mejor aplicacion que ahora; pues con este alivio y tal qual principio de fomento, se animarian algunas pobres familias á establecerse en las nuevas fundaciones, á quienes luego que tubiesen casa Poblada, se les distribuirian á prorrateo, y proporcion de su numero de veinte y cinco á treinta, ó mas Bacas con sus correspondientes toretes á cada familia, con la condicion de que no pudiesen matar, vender, ni enagenar, hasta pasados lo menos tres años; para que de esta suerte, ademas de hallarse despues con una mediana comodidad, sé lograrse con el multiplico en poco numero de años la extension de las posesiones, y mayor ocupacion de los terrenos.

Conseguida esta en los terminos propuestos, desde Carucina hacia adentro, y fundada la ultima villa de Españoles en el paraje señalado, resultaria una Barrera de no poca seguridad contra las correrias y perjudicial trato de los olandeses, se haria transitable el Pays por caminos abiertos para la correspondencia

on down, owing to the experiences and knowledge they have of the fertility of those lands, of the abundance of fish, game, and other conveniences, of which they still retain a fresh and a very tender memory. But after admitting those it may be advisable to admit, the rest should be restrained, because at no time should the capital be allowed to retrograde, but, on the contrary, its greater advancement should be secured, since besides the value it today has, it is, owing to its situation and to the ease of its communication with the neighboring Provinces, an important post.

The Reverend Catalonian Capuchin Fathers in the year seventy-seven, as the effect of their zeal and love for the service of the King, made an offer of twelve thousand head of cattle, which Your Majesty was pleased to accept and to order to be distributed among the poor inhabitants to increase the breed, which, for several reasons, was not carried out at the time, nor afterwards, and it is referred to on this occasion as a contribution favorable to the matter in hand, and which at no time could have had better application than now, for with this help and some fair encouragement some poor families would be stimulated to establish themselves in the new settlements, to whom so soon as they should have a house built, there would be distributed among them, pro rata, in proportion to their number, from twenty-five to thirty or more cows, with their corresponding bulls, to each family, upon the condition that they could not kill, sell, nor dispose of them until the expiration of at

**No. 70.**

mutua de los Labradores con los criadores y entre los Pueblos, y se facilitarían las demás exploraciones que se quisiese y conviniese hacer por las grandes sabanas que tienen al Sur, y por esta misma Dirección se iría á dar con los parajes del Establecimiento, ó como republica independiente de los negros fugitivos de Esquivo y Surinam, y como estos lo que pretenden es mantener su libertad, podría serles grato, el que de nuestra parte se ofreciese conservarsela, vajo de ciertas condiciones, que podrían redundar en utilidad y mayor aumento de la Poblacion; pero con las precauciones y desconfianza que requiere siempre usarse con semejante casta y qualidad de gentes. Y finalmente se lograría la reduccion de tantas Naciones de Indios Gentiles que habitan este dilatado Centro, los que viendose estrechados por todos lados, se darían á partido, que de otro modo es imposible pueda conseguirse en mucho tiempo y con muy crecidos gastos.

Las noticias de los progresos de las nuevas fundaciones animarían probablemente á muchas familias de los Distritos de Caracas, Cumaná y Barinas, á venir á establecerse en los terrenos del Presidio abajo, ó en los de la Capital, donde se aplicarían á la labor, ó cria de Ganado, á que generalmente propende la mayor parte de estas Gentes, á quienes del mismo modo que á los primeros fundadores se les repartirían solares y tierras, con lo que se aumentarían los vecindarios españoles, y á su vista y exemplo se civilizarían los Naturales, inclinando á estos á vivir en los Pueblos de aquellos y viceversa, sin que por parte de los Misioneros se pudiese impedir; particularmente en los que

least three years, so that by this means, besides finding themselves afterwards with a fair profit, there would be obtained by the increase in a short number of years the extension of the possessions, and a larger occupation of the territory.

This secured in the manner proposed from Carucina inland, and the last Spanish town founded in the locality designated, there would result a barrier of no little safety against the hostile incursions and prejudicial trade of the Dutch; the country would be rendered traversible by open roads for the mutual communication of the farmers with the breeders, and between the towns, and the explorations that it might be desired and convenient to make of the great savannahs to the south thereof would be rendered practicable, and in this same direction could be reached the localities of the establishment or independent Republic of the fugitive negroes from Essequibo and Surinam, and since the latter endeavor to maintain their liberty, it might be agreeable to them that we offer to preserve the same under certain conditions which might redound to the profit and greater increase of the population; but with the precautions and distrust which it is ever incumbent to exercise with such castes and kinds of people. And finally there would be obtained the subjugation of so many nations of Indians inhabiting that extensive center, who, seeing themselves shut in on all sides, would be willing to treat, which can not possibly be secured in any other way in a long time and with very great expense.

**No. 70.**

se fundasen de nuevo, por haber acreditado la experiencia, á lo menos en estas partes de America, que los Indio mientras los mantienen separados del trato comun y general, nunca se apartan enteramente de las ideas de sus antiguas supersticiones, antes bien permanecen, con muy corta diferencia tan rusticos y poco racionales como quando salieron de sus selvas, aun que no sin transcendencia y bastante astucia para lo malo.

The report of the progress of the new settlements would probably stimulate many families from the Districts of Caracas, Cumaná, and Barinas to come and establish themselves on the lands from the garrison down, or on those of the Capital, where they will apply themselves to agriculture or the breeding of cattle, to which the greater part of these people generally take, who, in the same manner as the first settlers, will have distributed among them building lots and lands, by which means the Spanish residents would be increased, and by their touch and example the natives would become civilized, and the latter would be led to live in the towns of the former, and *vice versa*, without the missionaries being able to prevent the same, particularly in those to be founded anew; as experience has shown, at least in these parts of America, that the Indians, while they are kept separate from the common and general contact, never entirely get away from the ideas of their ancient superstitions, but rather remain, with very little difference, as rude and little rational as when they emerged from their forests, although not without sagacity and considerable astuteness for evil.

**COMERCIO POR META Y APURE.**

Con dolor se ven malogradas las ventajas que brindan al Orinoco los Rios de Meta y Apure, por falta de ampliarles un xiro regular á sus habitantes con la capital de Guayana, xiro que en otros tiempos no muy remotos, mientras estuvo corriente, rindió el solo á las Cajas Reales mas

**TRADE BY THE META AND THE APURE.**

The advantages offered to the Orinoco by the Meta and Apure rivers are seen with regret to be frustrated, owing to the failure of affording regular communication to their inhabitants with the capital of Guiana—a communication which, at other times, not very remote,

**No. 70.**

que al presente todos los ramos juntos, y á la Poblacion muy considerable aumento, como lo patentifican la Villa de Caycara, y otras, que deben su tal qual incremento, á aquel corto tiempo de franquicia, y la Capital muchos de sus vecinos que vajaron de Barinas y otras partes á establecerse, y que cesando este Comercio, cesó su concurrencia, y aun se retiraron varios, perdidas las esperanzas del adelantamiento que solicitaban, y no obstante que por Real Cedula de creacion de la Comandancia de Barinas, se reune expresamente su comercio por Apure al de esta Provincia, hasta el presente, sin embargo de haber pasado algun tiempo, es poco lo que se ha adelantado del estado en que antes se hallaba; debe consistir esto sin duda en la falta de fondos de los Registros de Guayana, para los retornos, pues sin estos no pueden experimentar ventajas los habitantes de una ni otra Provincia, viendose por esta razon los de aquella en el sensible caso de malograrseles algunos frutos que pudieran aprovechar con utilidad, si el xiro de España á Guayana estuviese corriente.

Los mismos ó mayores perjuicios reporta el Comercio por el Rio de Meta, respecto á la distancia en que se hallan aquellos habitantes de los Presidio del Reyno de Santa Fee, y de su Capital, que por los costosos transportes por tierra, no se empeñan en adelantar sus Labores todo lo que pudieran; quando sin disputa lá pinguedad de aquel suelo pudiera producir copiosas cosechas de Trigo, Añil, Algodon, Lanas, Cueros, Cordovanes, Azucar, &c., con que engrosar utilmente este comercio, y el directo

while it was in existence, alone rendered unto the Royal Treasury more than at the present time is rendered by all the branches together, and it gave to the population a very considerable increase, as is evidenced by the village of Caycara, and other villages, which owe their fairly good increment to that short time of privilege, and brought to the capital many of its residents, who came down from Barinas and other points to establish themselves, and when this trade ceased their presence ended, and several even left, having lost hope of the advance they desired, and notwithstanding that by the Royal Rescript creating the district of Barinas, its commerce by Apure is expressly joined to that of this province, up to the present, notwithstanding that some time has passed, it has advanced little beyond the state in which it formerly was. This without doubt must be due to the want of funds from the Registers of Guiana, for the returns: for without these, the inhabitants of both Provinces cannot secure advantages; for this reason those of the former Province find themselves in the painful case of losing some products that they might take advantage of with profit were the commerce between Spain and Guiana in operation.

The same or greater injuries are borne by the trade of the Meta river, owing to the distance that those inhabitants are from the garrison of the Kingdom of Santa Fé and of its capital, since, owing to the expensive transportation by land, they do not endeavor to advance their agriculture all that they might when,

**No. 70.**

á España por la via del Orinoco, los que por falta de este xiro estan sin mas salida que lo que emplean en sus fabricas de Mantas, Colchas, Lienzos de Algodon, y otros renglones ordinarios para el consumo interior; de que vajan de tarde en tarde porciones cortas, y alguna harina y azucar á esta Provincia, retornando su producido en dinero efectivo, por no permitirseles en otra cosa, con grave perjuicio de este Pays por la extraccion de su corto numerario, y de los propios Reynosos que se ven imposibilitados de proveerse de herramientas y demas utiles necesarios para la Agricultura, de que padecen mucha escasez, y en sus labores considerable atraso; y padeceran mientras no se establezca el comercio reciproco entre Orinoco y los partidos de Meta y Casanare, Macuco y Santiago de las Atalayas, y se proporcione á aquellos moradores la extraccion de sus frutos, y el retorno de lo que les produjeran en los efectos expresados, y demas renglones propios para el uso y consumo del Pays.

Incorporados estos partidos al Comercio de Guayana, no seria dificultoso, aun en el estado presente despachar á España dos ó tres Registros al año, con el Cacao, Cueros, Algodon, y otros frutos, que en aquellos territorios, y en los de esta Provincia pudieran recogerse. El xiro de Santa Fé por Cartagena podria padecer algun menoscabo, en la desmembracion de unos Distritos, que le contribuyen con su industria; pero concedida la importancia de la Provincia de Guayana, por su situacion, y demas circunstancias que la recomiendan, y

without dispute, the wealth of that soil could produce large crops of wheat, indigo, cotton, wool, hides, cordovan, sugar, etc., with which to profitably enlarge this trade and the direct commerce with Spain by way of the Orinoco, said inhabitants, owing to the want of this communication, being without any outlet other than that which they employ in their manufactures of cotton cloths, quilts, and other ordinary fabrics for domestic consumption, of which they bring down daily small quantities, and some flour and sugar, to this Province, taking back their proceeds in cash, as they are not permitted to convert it into anything else, to the serious detriment of this country through the extraction of its small money supply, and of the people of the Kingdom who find it impossible to provide themselves with tools, and other implements necessary for agriculture, which are very scarce amongst them; and this retards the cultivation of their fields. And they will suffer these deficiencies until there shall be established a reciprocal trade between the Orinoco and the districts of Meta and Casanare, Macuco and Santiago de las Atalayas, and until those inhabitants are permitted to export their products and take back the proceeds thereof in the articles mentioned and in other lines fitted for the use and consumption of the country.

These districts once incorporated with the trade at Guiana, it would not be difficult, even in the present state to dispatch to Spain two or three vessels a year with the cacao, hides, cotton, and other products



**No. 70.**

atendida su actual miserable constitucion, y la necesidad de fomentar—la; parece no hay consideracion á que no debe preponderar la de poner—la en el estado mas respetable de Defensa, que solo podrá conseguirse aumentando su Poblacion y Agricultura; extendiendo su Comercio, animando en sus habitantes la aplicacion é industria, mediante las gracias que se les quieran dispensar, y concediendo á los transmigrados y nuevos Colonos, ademas del repartimiento gratuito de solares y tierras de Labor y Criar Ganado, excepcion de derechos de entrada de esclavos, herramientas, y efectos precisos de Agricultura y del consumo de los trabajadores y Peones, por el termino de diez años, y para este fin la extraccion á las Colonias extrangeras, de Mulas, Ganado Bacuno, y primeros frutos de sus cosechas, por un tiempo señalado, y vajo una moderada unica contribucion, la que la Real piedad teuga á bien imponerles. Guayana diez de Julio de mil setecientos ochenta y ocho.

MIGUEL MARMIÓN.

which might be collected in those lands, and in the lands of this Province. The communication of Santa Fé by Cartagena might suffer some diminution, by the dismemberment of some Districts which contribute to it with their industry; but conceding the importance of the Province of Guayana, through its situation, and other conditions which recommend it, and bearing in mind its present miserable condition and the necessity to encourage it, it seems that there is no consideration over which there should not preponderate that of placing it in a most respectable condition for defence, which can only be secured by increasing its population and agriculture, extending its trade, stimulating in its inhabitants application and industry, through the privileges that it may be desired to dispense to them, and conceding to the emigrants and new colonists, besides the gratuitous distribution of building lots and arable lands and cattle, exemption from import duties on slaves, tools, and agricultural implements, and those necessary for the use of laborers and *peons* for the term of ten years, and to this end the exportation to foreign colonies of mules, cattle, and the first fruits of their farms for a stated time, and under a moderate single tax which the Royal mercy may be pleased to impose thereon.

Guayana, July tenth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MIGUEL MARMIÓN.

---

NOTE OF THE ARCHIVIST [Translation]:

There is annexed a statement of the receipts from various taxes, coming into this Royal Treasury in a year, and of the pensions it has to pay out.



## No 72.

t from the report of Miguel Marmion of July 10, 1788 (re-written by him in 1793)  
—showing the foot note printed in the British Case, Appendix, vol. V, p. 67.

ced from a certified photograph of a page of the original document in the " Archivo General de Simancas," Secre-  
taria de Guerra, Bundle 7241.]

por los diversos Castros q. se agitan al golfo triste, con  
lanchar, soltar, y embarcaciones anexas; y fi-  
nalmente la se pease, y con esta misma con dexa  
facilidad el tracto ilícito, e impedia la entrada de  
las vacas, alas Embarcaciones extranjeras, espe-  
cialmente que han solido introducirse, y auer de un  
deseo de hacer sus ganancias, apasar, acortar,  
y sacar, y sacar, alear, y sacar, y sacar el  
pio, como se ve en practicando con la ultima  
guerra, una solta de la Embarcacion Inglesa, que  
somo las Colonias de Enquibo, Karbir, y Guianacora  
hasta que veyendo por estos vesinos, salieron con sus  
lanchar de madera, y su corta la, y su corta la  
En la villa de Sevilla el 10 de Julio de 1788

En copia de con la corrección que se ha podido sobre los papeles de  
y papeles sueltos, que por casualidad quedaron con mi papeles  
mer que zaniti, con su misma letra, y en el año de 1788 de los N. Cap.  
en D. Juan Guillelmi, e Interd. G. D. Juan de Guianacora,  
interd. de la via reverenda con excohuca, con los señores G. Guianacora  
Karnos, Estados, Klaciones, y comprobantes por D. Juan de Guianacora,  
y no acompañan de ahora por no haberse quedado copias. Con  
D. de Octubre de 1793

**No. 73.**

**Extract from Letter from Fray Buenaventura de San Celonio, Prefect of the Missions, to Fray Joaquín de Berga, Commissary-General, November 9, 1788.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

In a letter from "Caroni November 9th of 1788," from Fray Buenaventura de San Celonio Prefect" to the "Very Reverend Father Joachin de Berga Commissary General," the Missions of Murucuri, Caruaxi, Calvario and San Miguel" are mentioned, "we had exiled a number of Indian families and moved them to the site of Tumeremo for the care of the new cattle ranch. Our predecessors exiled many Indian families to make other new settlements as when the Mission of San Antonio was founded, on which occasion two hundred Guayano Indians were exiled (driven away) from the Mission of Cupapuy. Others in order to begin the Mission of Palmar; others for the Mission of Puedpa, etc. and no one had a word to say, not even the Governors."

**No. 74.**

**Report of Don Miguel Marmion, Governor of Guayana, to Don Francisco Saavedra, Intendant-General of Caracas, January 4, 1788.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the archives in charge of the "Registrados Principal Interino del Distrito Federal," at Caracas.]

The Governor, sub-delegate of Guayana, reports on having captured one of the Indian murderers of the Spaniard who was at the new settlement of Imataca, and other matters.

The Indians of the new settlement of Sacaupana as they promised, have brought to me as a prisoner one of the murderers of the Spaniard who governed over the Imatacans; although they say that the other Indian died of a snake bite, others state he was killed by arrows by one of the Chieftain's sons who heard him make several threats against his father. Notwithstanding this occurrence, they are quiet and continue in their settlement, their number increasing so largely that the Spaniard who assisted in Imataca by my orders, has come to me stating that he does not dare live with them, he having become afraid to find himself alone among over three thousand Indians, who have gathered together as I surmise according to reports. This determination grieves me mainly on account of the pity I feel in seeing the boys that used to come to the Capital who have advanced so much in such a short time in the doctrine which the Spaniard taught as is done in the towns. The worst of it is that no proposition can be made to them to accept a Missionary, they being so fearful of the Capuchin monks on account of the several incursions made

**No. 74.**

by the Indians of the towns and for other reasons which they allege in their rustic way. On this account I fear that should we force them now or while there are no means of insuring safety in those places, they may run away and then, if not altogether impossible to them, at least their reduction will be more difficult to accomplish, and their lack of confidence will increase, while their faith in our promises will be less.

The usefulness of the establishment of these people in their own place of habitation is already being practically shown by the aid which they are giving to the expedition now in search of wood for construction; and their progress, according to the beginnings which I now see, will, I believe, become of some importance to the service of the King, which I will, at the proper time, communicate to Your Lordship individually.

May God keep your life many years.

---

[Translation of a note by the archivist (among the copies certified by him) in charge of the " Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome: A letter from Fray Augustin de Barcelona is dated: " In this Sta. Maria del Yucario on the 29th of January of 1788."

In another before this, from the same, 16 November, 1788, it says: " In the answer to Your Reverence made to Father Domingo, when this latter, through my advice, wrote Your Reverence from Ayma or Avechica——"

Another letter addressed to the Father Perfect is dated: " Caraschi, November 25th of 1788—Fray Buena Ventura of San Colonio."]

**No. 75.**

**Extract from the Index to the Official Correspondence of the Governor of Guayana, Don Miguel Marmion, dated Guayana, June 9, 1790.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo General de Indias " (Seville), Stand 181, Case 2, Bundle 17.]

" 22.—Another: Accompanying a copy of the inspection of lands made at Cuyuni for the construction of a sentry-box or house surrounded with a moat, for the purpose of impeding the passage of the Indians and Hollanders over that river and reporting the death occurred at the port of Guasipati. Guayana, June 9, 1790.—Miguel Marmion."

**No. 76.**

**Letter from Antonio de Ventura de Carauco to the Provincial of the Catalan Capuchins, dated Madrid, June 4, 1791.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the " Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña," at Rome.]

In regard to the statement of Don Miguel Marmion, Governor of the Province of Guayana, in a letter of Oct. 3rd, 1787, with reference to the

**No. 76.**

coming of Fray Justo de Barcelona to these Kingdoms—the Governor himself has informed, with documents, in a letter of September 22nd 1789,—that the Prelate with various individuals countenanced the proceedings opposed to the Royal Service of founding settlements and Ranches (Hatos) of full grown cattle in places exposed to furtive stealing by the Dutch of Esse-quiibo, especially the new one of Tumeremo without previous knowledge of the Governor; of transferring to other places those already founded and causing the Indians to remove from these to those against their will—and two other letters from the same Governor of March 8th and of June 4th of the past year, in which he gave information that—the town of Panapana being left without a Missionary due to the permission to retire given by His Majesty to Fray Josef Antonio de Xerez, it seemed proper to him, to appoint the aforementioned Fray Thomas de Olot for this position—the Judge (Señor Fiscal) has agreed to charge Your Reverence (as I do) to give information of all that you know in regard to these matters referred to, and to present any document that Your Reverence may have received from those Missions relative to those particulars mentioned by said Governor, declaring everything else that you wish, to the end that with all due knowledge the most suitable course may be determined upon. God preserve Your Reverence many years.

**No. 77.**

**Letter from Fray Luis de Barcelona, Provincial of the Catalonian Capuchins, to Antonio Ventura de Carauco, dated Barcelona, July 3, 1791.**

[Printed from translation of a copy of the original in the "Archivo de la Antigua Provincia de Capuchinos de Cataluña" at Rome.]

SIR: In compliance with yours of the 4th of last June which I have received in which you commission (or charge) me to state all that I know in regard to the coming of Fray Justo de Barcelona to these kingdoms I will say: That so many, so varied are the papers and letters which have been addressed to my predecessors that I am unable to give a clear report, even after arranging them, from the confusion in which they have been written, and from having no practical knowledge of those very distant lands. Notwithstanding, in order to obey the precepts of Your Excellency whom I venerate I will declare with all possible exactness all that I have been able to comprehend in the matter. Another complaint has been made owing to the moving of some Indians. This has been deemed always necessary with regard to the welfare of the Missions since the Indians who are already reduced and obedient, are more able to reduce the other Indians to obedience, and check their frequent flights, or serve to similar ends. This point is expressed in Declaration 25 of the Ordinances approved by His Majesty. The moving of two Indian settlements, which was done on account of their being situated in useless places, is another of the com.

**No. 77.**

plaints brought forward. This change, according to the information given me, was made by previous and express permission of the Superior Tribunal and with approval of the Governor of the Province. The Justifying Instruments are in the Archives of the Religious Community. Another similar complaint, if not greater than the foregoing, is the establishing of a new ranch (Hato) of horned cattle in Tumeremo: this establishment, according to these few discontented missionaries, did not meet with the approval of the Governor when he was made aware of it. The ranch (Hato) was located in the site and Mission of the Angel Custodio, and was left as insufficient and useless for the purpose intended; an opinion formed not only by the most intelligent religious Fathers but also by the most experienced laymen. It is true that they judged it as being suitable for a simple town; this opinion and censure is signed by oath or sworn to, as having been passed without passion. It is well to call attention to the fact here that the Mission of Angel Custodio is only 4 leagues from that of Tumeremo: this latter faces the north, the former the south. The adverse party says that Tumeremo being near the Cuyúni river is more exposed to smuggling with the Dutch Colonies of Essequibo; they should say the same of Angel Custodio, which is at the same distance from the river. But in one, as well as in the other place, the motive of smuggling is merely in appearance. It is added that the effort to found the ranch at Tumeremo was made not only because the other was in a very poor condition and backward for lack of pasturage, but also in order to facilitate the foundation of new settlements for which the cattle are necessary.

This step, during the time of Señor Lunares, Governor *pro. tem.* of this Province, was suggested to them by Royal Decree published at the Capital; so that in those years, some heads of cattle were sent to the savanas of Cura for the settling of a ranch (Hato) in the care of Guayano Indians, (the only ones to take care of ranches) who were taken away from the Mission of the old Hato—called Divina Pastora. Hence to the same end and same purpose the number of Indians considered necessary was taken from the three Missions Altagracia, Cupapuy and Angel Custodio, by reason of which the malcontents gave information that the superior authority expatriated the Indians: but it is plain to be seen how different one thing is from the other. This is all that I can say in obedience to the Precepts of Your Excellency. May God preserve Your Excellency many years.

## No. 78.

Letter from the Captain General of Caracas to the Count de Lerena, dated August 3, 1791, mentioning incidentally the construction of the fort on the Curumo.

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Antiguos Archivos de la Capitanía General é Yntendencia de Caracas."]

*Confidential No. 3.*

THE CAPTAIN GENERAL OF CARACAS

YOUR EXCELLENCY:

Reports the results of the commission entrusted to Don Ignacio Zavala Goyena to find out whether two nephews of the rebel Tupa-Amaro are among the fugitives of Surinam, and explains what he proposes doing in prosecuting the matter.

who, though he did not ascertain all that was desired, has secured important information leading to the object in view, and which agrees with that furnished me by Captain Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, commissioned by me for the construction of the blockhouse of Curumo, and of the town to be built there, who is also a person worthy of confidence, who has had considerable dealings with the Caribs and other neighboring nations of the interior, understands their languages, and knows their proclivities, as shown by his report to me while in the city, copy whereof I enclose under No. 2.

I dare not act upon the suggestions of Zavala Goyena as to the capture or seizure of the fugitive negroes at the fishery of the Cupanama river, but am disposed to carry out his other propositions, he to be accompanied by the aforesaid Lopez de la Puente, whom I shall summon and instruct upon everything concerning thereto.

This expedition cannot be undertaken until the latter part of November, on account of the storms.

For your Excellency's guidance I beg to observe that the Prefect of the Catalonian Capuchin missionaries of Guayana has, no doubt, greater influence than anyone else over the Indians on the shores of the Orinoco, and perhaps through them the desired information could be obtained as to the whereabouts of the nephews of Tupa-Amaro, and, at least, it could be learned if the Dutch of Essequibo and Demerari sustain suspicious intercourse with the Indians of the margins of the Orinoco, and whether they supply them with arms and ammunition.

In this supposition I had intended to come to an understanding with the Prefect himself, but I shall await the instructions which it may be your Excellency's pleasure to communicate to me.

God, &c., Aug. 3, 1791.

To His Excellency COUNT DE LERENA.

By the copy, which I enclose under No. 1, your Excellency will see the results of the inquiries made by Don Ignacio Zavala Goyena, a most trustworthy person, to whom I confided this delicate investigation, and

who, though he did not ascertain all that was desired, has secured important information leading to the object in view, and which agrees with that furnished me by Captain Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, commissioned by me for the construction of the blockhouse of Curumo, and of the town to be built there, who is also a person worthy of confidence, who has had considerable dealings with the Caribs and other neighboring nations of the interior, understands their languages, and knows their proclivities, as shown by his report to me while in the city, copy whereof I enclose under No. 2.



## No. 79.

## Statement of three accounts relating to Spanish expenditures in Cuyuni and Essequibo, 1792.

[Printed from translation of certified copies of the originals in the "Antiguos Archivos de la Capitanía General é Yntendencia de Caracas"; ledger of the Royal Treasury of Guayana, pp. 60 *et alia*.]

In the Ledger of the Royal Treasury of Guayana, in charge of the only Minister of the Royal Exchequer, Don Josef Farrius, Accountant.—For the account of the year 1792. The Index has the following entries: "Royal Assets of the Cuyuni . . . . . 60," and upon that page the following:

## A.

Dr.—Royal Assets of the Cuyuni.

Cr.—Stock balance old  $\frac{1}{2}$ , Day-Book, folio 8, the following, viz.:

[1792.]		Pesos.	Reals.			Pesos.	Reals.
Dec. 31.	To General Account for balance.. Day-Book, fo. 160.	92	6	2	chisels.....	2	"
/				7	planes.....	1	2
				4	hand-saws.....	1	4
				4	cast nets.....	7	"
				2	guavales (?).....	6	"
				4	crooks.....	1	"
				7	lever drills.....	1	"
				3	grinding stones.....	"	6
				160	fish-hooks.....	12	2
				17	axes.....	21	2
				11	cutlasses.....	11	"
				73	spikes.....	1	4
				2	chicoras (?).....	3	"
				4	adzes.....	12	"
				6	drills.....	2	1
				4	iron hoops.....	2	"
				1	arroba ammunition.....	6	"
				132	flint stones.....	1	1
		92	6			92	6

## B.

Dr., Ordinary expenses of Fortification.

Cr.

[1792.]		Pesos.	Reals.	[1792.]		Pesos.	Reals.
Jan'y 31.	To Cash: paid laborer..... Day-Book, fo. 15, back.	7	4	Dec. 31.	By Royal Treasury conjointly for balance. Day-Book, fo. 159 & 160...	217	1
Febr'y 16.	To Supplies from Cash Book to reimburse subministra- tions made to the negroes of Essequibo, Day-Book, fo. 26, back....	202	4	/			
		210	"				
Oct. 18.	To Cash: paid Ribero. Day-Book, fo. 117, back....	7	1			217	1
		217	1			217	1

(Signed) JOSEF FARRIUS.

Audited by me,  
(Signed) PEDRO GORROCHOTEGUI.

## No. 79.

## C.

Dr. The Cuyuni settlement.

Cr.

		Pesos.	Reals.			Pesos.	Reals.
[1792.] Febr'y 15.	To Cash: paid Basanta. Day-Book, fo. 35 back.....	194	2	[1792.] Dec. 31.	By royal Treasury conjointly for Balance. Day-Book, fo. 159, over...	501	5
April 23.	To Cash: paid Basanta. Day Book, fo. 55.....	76	3	/			
		180	5				
Aug. 27.	To Cash: paid Basanta. Day-Book, fo. 99, over.....	71	5				
		232	2				
Oct. 23	To Cash: paid Basanta. Day-Book, fo. 119, over.....	181	2				
		453	4				
Dec. 1.	To Cash: paid Basanta. Day-Book, fos. 148 & 149....	68	1				
		501	5	501 5			

(Signed) JOSEF FARRIUS.

Audited by me,

(Signed) PEDRO GORROCHOTEGUI.

## No. 80.

Extract from letter from the Spanish Ambassador at the Hague to the Duque de la Alcudia, dated The Hague, June 10, 1794, forwarding account of Governor of Surinam for the maintenance of certain Spanish prisoners escaped from the French.

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Archivo General de Indias" (Seville), Stand 181, Case 2, Bundle 17.]

"Year 1794. The Hague. June 10. Monsieur de Six, Secretary of the Dutch West India Company, sent me day before yesterday an authorized statement wherein mention is made of the good reception accorded by the Governor-General of Surinam to the captain, mate and crew of the Spanish merchantman 'Nuestra Señora de la Concepción,' from Cartagena, captured by the French, and who succeeded in escaping and putting into Surinam, and were caused to be landed upon Spanish territory. He at the same time forwards the account for said transportation and maintenance of the ten men at Surinam, which together amount to 957 florins, 14 sous, the reimbursement of which is requested by the company owning said colony. July 4. Let *monino* (?) be notified and reply, giving thanks.

Done as per minutes, on July 9th, to the Navy and on the 28th to the Treasury.

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: I received day before yesterday a letter from Monsieur de Six, Secretary of the Dutch West India Company, enclosing a diary of what occurred to Captain José Sariol, his mate, Manuel Col, and eight sailors of the crew of the Spanish merchantman 'Nuestra Señora de la Concepción,' which, sailing from Cartagena on January 12, 1793, for said Indies, was captured on May 23d, one hundred miles east of Cape St. Vincent, by the French corvette 'La Blonde' and taken to

**No. 80.**

Cayenne on April 13, where, after a detention of three months they succeeded in effecting their escape on a pirogue with which they put into Surinam on July 14; that the Governor-General of said colony having treated them with the greatest humanity and generosity until the 24th of said month, he had ordered them to be shipped that day on board the Spanish ship 'Gloria,' J. Schaepfler, master, who returning from Demerari on the 23d of August, had brought the certificate showing that he had conveyed and landed said captain, mate and sailors at Port Maroco, west of the Essequibo river."

\* \* \*

**No. 81.****Statement of account of the Military Commandant of the Cuyuni, 1799.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Antiguos Archivos de la Capitanía General é Yntendencia de Caracas."]

In the "Cash Book of the Royal Treasury of Guayana in charge of the only Minister of the Royal Exchequer, Don Josef Reguero. For the account of the year 1799. In the "Index" there is the entry: "Royal Assets of the Cuyuni..... 84," and upon that page the following:

**THE MILITARY COMMANDANT OF THE CUYUNI.***Dr.**Cr.*

[1799.] Jan. 18.	To the account of arrears for Royal Effects or Assets. Day-Book, fo. 18 over, viz.:	Pesos.	Reals.	[1799.] Dec. 31.	By Arrears a/c for Balance Day-Book, fcs. 86 & 87.....	Pesos.	Reals.	
	6 cutlasses.....	6	"		/			
	61 sab-hooks.....	5	4					
	1 guanal (?).....	3	"					
	2 drills.....	"	6					
	1 crock.....	"	3					
	10 axes.....	13	4					
	3 lbs. ammunition.....	"	6					
	83 fint-stones.....	"	6					
	2 chisels.....	2	"					
	1 plane.....	1	2					
	1 hand-saw.....	1	4					
	1 sab-net.....	7	"					
	1 lever drill.....	1	"					
	3 chicoras (?).....	3	"					
	4 adzes.....	13	"					
		57	2				57	2

(Signed) JOSEF REGUERO.

Audited by me.  
(Signed) PEDRO GORROCHOTEGUI.

## No. 82.

Statement of certain Military accounts relating *inter alia* to the Cuyuni,  
1799.

[Printed from translations of certified copies of extracts from the originals in the "Antiguos Archivos de la Capitanía General é Yntendencia de Caracas."]

In the "Second Day-Book of the Royal Treasury of Guiana, in charge of the only Minister of the Royal Exchequer, Don Josef Reguero:

Which is legalized to continue therein the entries of the first, whose pages have all been written up. It contains one hundred and ninety-eight, not including the present. Counted by order and in the presence of Senor Don José Felipe de Inciarte, Governor and Commandant-General and Intendant of the Treasury of this Province, and of aforesaid Señor Minister, by me, Don Juan Alvarez Rodil. Done in Guiana, this seventeenth day of September, one thousand seven hundred and ninety-nine.

(Signed) JOSÉ FELIPE DE INCIARTE.  
(Rubric)

JOSÉ REGUERO,  
(Rubric)  
Minister of the Royal Exchequer.

Before me,  
DON JUAN ALBAREZ RODIL.  
(Rubric)

---

[At folio 9, back, the following entry is found.]

October 11.

M. 97 Debit in extraordinary charges of fortifications and other  
C. 15 military expenses, and credit to the Treasury *forty tin* (sic)  
entered eighty-two pesos, four reals, paid to Carlos Acosta  
for the same amount due in August and September last, to the Indians, at  
the rate of two reals each *per diem*, who are assigned as messengers at the  
Post of Pogayos. It consists of two statements drawn by the Sergeant of  
Infantry Marcos Acosta, which with the decree of this Intendancy ordering  
said payment, is attached hereunto under No. 499..... 82. 4.

(Signed) CARLOS ACOSTA.  
(Rubric)

No. 82.

[Folios 86, back, and 87.]

Dec. 31.

C...21. Debit in arrears and credit for balance of sundry accounts to be specified, nine thousand one hundred and ninety pesos three-quarter *real*, which in different kinds are held in stock by persons in charge of the Royal Assets of the Cuyuni, medicines, hospital implements, Commissary of subsistence, Papal bulls, stamped paper and excise of lands of Altagracia, whereof the administrator has not produced the account, and the following:

C... 56. To the Sergeant of Altagracia whatever may be the proceeds from the excise of lands in his district.		
84. To the Military Commandant of the Cuyuni, value of Royal Assets .....	57.	2.
87. To the receiver of Bulls in this Capital .....	228.	"
88. To same at Upata .....	68.	"
89. To do. at Borbon .....	15.	4.
90. To do. at Real Corona .....	32.	"
91. To do. at Piedra .....	15.	4.
92. To do. at Altagracia .....	27.	4.
93. To do. at Cay-Cara .....	46.	"
94. To the Parish Priest at Panapana for bulls .....	19.	4.
95. To the Treasury of Cumaná .....	5497.	4.
96. To do. of Trinidad .....	469.	2.
112. To do. of Barceloneta .....	39.	6.
99. To receiver of stamped paper at Upata .....	23.	"
100. To do. of Real Corona .....	25.	5.
101. To do. of Piedra .....	34.	1.
102. To do. of Altagracia .....	24.	5.
103. To do. of Cay-cara .....	60.	3.
104. To do. of Borbon .....	7.	1½
111. To do. of Barceloneta .....	14.	½
116. To the Clerk of the Royal Hospital for the Army .....	1158.	4½
110. To the practising Apothecary .....	928.	6.
114. To the Commissary of Subsistence .....	400.	"
	9190.	"½

Entered

2.

(Signed) REGUERO.

Audited by me,

(Signed) GORROCHOTEGUI.

**No. 83.****Commandant of Sacaupana to Governor of Guiana as to seizure in 1800 of American frigate *Defiance* by the Spanish in the lower Orinoco.**

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Antiguos Archivos de la Capitanía General é Yntendencia de Caracas." In the file bearing the endorsement Sept. 11, 1800, Guayana.]

Certificate of the proceedings relating to the arrival at this port from the port of New York, in the United States, of the American Frigate *Defiance*, "whereof Edward Jeffrey is Master, and Pliny Brewer, owner and supercargo, with a cargo consisting of 18 cannons and other munitions of war, as per contract, and provisions and other merchandise according to invoices."

At folio 4 the following document occurs:

**OFFICAL COMMUNICATION OF THE COMMANDANT OF SACAUPANA.**

[SACAUPANA, September 4, 1800.]

"Señor Governor and Commandant-General:

My most revered Sir:

I hereby inform your Excellency that on the first day of the present month, the soldier of the Post of Pagayos, Miguel Tarnos, come here relieved from duty, with the three other soldiers who were with him in said Post, and on the fourth day of the same month, at ten o'clock in the morning, said Miguel Tarnos, accompanied by the other soldiers of his Post, appeared before me and stated that on the seventeenth of last month, at about three o'clock in the afternoon, the mate of the Frigate taken by the corsairs came up in a boat to the Post of Pagayos in quest of a pilot to steer his vessel into the Orinoco, and declaring that he had ordnance on board and a letter for the Governor, at the same time announcing that he was in danger. Whereupon said soldier, in view of the urgency of the case, and considering that there was nobody in the place that could be entrusted with such a commission, decided to leave a soldier in whom he had confidence in charge of the Post with another companion, and went out for the purpose of bringing the Frigate up to the Post. Leaving at four o'clock in the evening, he reached the vessel the following day at seven in the morning. While getting ready to weigh anchor at eight o'clock, they sighted a corsair, which, coming up, fired two shots at them. Said soldier immediately hailed them with the speaking trumpet and informed them that there was already a Spanish pilot on board. They were not deterred by this, but at once boarded the vessel, causing no little alarm; and taking charge of the helm, they proceeded to steer her into the river. I asked him why he had not immediately returned to his Post. He replied that he had no boat, as they had come for him in one belonging to the ship. I then asked him why he had not reported to me her cargo. His reply was that he had not examined the vessel, and that the corsairs had dispatched a courier to the Capital. To my question why he had not men-

**No. 83.**

tioned the matter at the time of his arrival, he replied that it was because he had thought there was nothing wrong about the Frigate. Being asked why he had failed to report yesterday, when Don Manuel Féran arrived, instead of waiting until the next day to do so, he said that he was afraid then, but now he came with the soldiers of his Post to tell me about it, because he had heard that the vessel was a good prize; that as some other party might have profited by it, it seemed to him better that the King should enjoy the advantage; and that the shares that might have gone to the corsairs could fall to the Detachment, as also any other favor that the mercy of our Sovereign might vouchsafe to grant; and that if your Excellency doubted his word, the facts could be ascertained through the English captains themselves; for the vessel was about to enter as far up as the Post of Pagayos when the guard would have been placed aboard. From all this it seemed as if the corsairs did not wish this soldier to tell me anything, and I am inclined to think such was the case, in view of the offers made by them to said Miguel Tarnos. Having thus obtained this information, I hasten to send a courier to the Fortresses of Guiana, so that without loss of time it may reach your Excellency, who will decide in the matter as he may deem advisable. God our Lord preserve your Excellency many years.

Sacaupana, September fourth, at four o'clock in the afternoon of the year one thousand eight hundred. Your Excellency's subject and servant who kisses your Excellency's hand.

MANUEL JOSEF QUIROGA."

**No. 84.**

Four extracts (marked A, B, C and D), from proceedings had in 1801, as to complaint made to Spanish officials by Canacunama, an Arawak Indian.

[Printed from translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Antiguos Archivos de la Capitanía General é Yntendencia de Caracas."]

**A.**

In the proceedings instituted in consequence of the complaint of the Indian Canacunama, belonging to the Aruaca nation, against some soldiers of the detachment of the advance guard at Sacaupana, about sundry robberies and acts of violence committed against him, his companions and Indians who were with him, "*File No. 188, No. 1,*" there appears the following:

[Page 33.]

YAMA, January 13th, 1797.

"I, Father Felix de Tarraga, Apostolic Missionary, having repaired with the proper permits to the Amacuru river and by it to the channel of the Yama river and met some families of Indians belonging to the Aruaca nation who have pledged their word to come and settle at the town of San

**No. 84.**

Miguel, they being unable to come with me owing to the lack of ready provisions and failure to speak with their Chief, whose name is Jorse;

I, therefore, entreat the authorities at the places through which they may pass, not to impede their progress, not allow them to be despoiled of any of the effects they may bring with them for their personal use and for their labors, wherewith service will be rendered to both their Majesties.

Dated *ut supra*.

(Signed)

FELIX DE TARRAGA.

**B.**

In the proceedings instituted in consequence of the complaint of the Indian Canacunama, belonging to the Aruaca nation, against some soldiers of the station of the advance guard at Sacaupana, regarding sundry robberies and outrages which he declares were committed against him, his companions, and Indians who were with him, *File No. 188, No. 1*, there appears the following:

[*Pages 28, 29 and 30.*]

To the Governor and Commandant-General:

I transmit to your Excellency the accompanying justification, executed by Lieutenant Don Juan Damaso Soler, in behalf of the Indian Canacunama, and in view thereof your Excellency will determine what he may deem best. Meantime, both soldiers of the Veteran Corps are detained as prisoners in their barracks.

God preserve your Excellency many years.

Fortresses of Guiana, April 11th, 1801.

(Signed)

MANUEL ASTOR.

SEÑOR DN. JOSÉ FELIPE INCIARTE.

*This document contains the following endorsement:*

GUAYANA, April 16th, 1801.

Let this communication be attached to the justification mentioned therein, and the whole matter referred to the Military Judge (Auditor de Guerra) in order that he may decide according to justice.

(Signed)

INCIARTE.

**C.**

[May 16, 1801.]

SEÑOR GOVERNOR AND COMMANDANT-GENERAL.

I have examined this justification, instituted by order of your Excellency, in consequence of the verbal complaint which, through the medium of an interpreter, was brought before you by the Aruaca Indian called Canacunama, regarding the conduct of the three soldiers of the Post of Sacaupana, who, while in a village of Guarano Indians, at the Araguas channel, robbed him and his companions and women, of two pirogues and <sup>two</sup> canoes, together with the movables, effects, and other property they



**No. 84.**

had in them, as specified in the order mentioned above. As regards the outrage committed by said three soldiers (who turned out to be only Miguel Tarnos and Marcos Morillo) upon two squaws, whom they violently seized during the night and forced in the presence of their husbands; one of said women being seriously injured thereby, as she was quite young, and, though married, her husband had not yet cohabited with her, it appears that said soldiers were not guilty of the atrocious act, according to the testimony of the four Guarano Indians, named Anaguey, Maroaima, Arana-gua, and Coratagua, as recorded at folios twenty-five to twenty-seven, these Indians having gone as rowers with said soldiers; in proof whereof the Indian Canacunama referred in his complaint to the Guaranno called Baguay (who is understood to be Anaguey), and to his son. Therefore, considering the difficulties presented by the justification itself for the procurement of more specific evidence of the facts in the case,—which under the circumstances would be necessary to convict said soldiers,—I am of opinion that this part of the complaint brought before your Excellency by the Aruaca Indian Canacunama, should be dismissed. But as to the theft of the two pirogues, two canoes, movables, effects, and other property specified in aforesaid complaint, inasmuch as said soldiers and the sergeant Manuel Quiroga, who at the time was Commandant of the post, stand confessed as to the share that fell to each in their distribution, though not wholly in accord with the representations made in his complaint by the Indian Canacunama, I am of opinion that you order the restitution to said Indian by Sergeant Quiroga, of the pirogue, which, according to his testimony, must still be in his possession, and that he pay into his hands twenty *pesos* for the value of the other pirogue and canoe, which as therein stated, were appropriated by him for the service of the King at the Post of Sacaupana. That privates Antonio Velazquez, Marcus Morillo and Miguel Tarnos return to said Indian the other movables, effects and goods which, as they severally confess, fell to their share in the distribution thereof; and in case the restitution of the same objects could not be made, owing to their disappearance, let them be ordered to pay him, conjointly with Sergeant Quiroga, the value of said objects, according to adjustment made by two intelligent and impartial experts. And as regards the fowling-piece or gun, only the estimated value thereof be paid him, inasmuch as it is not advisable to allow Indians to carry such weapons. And, finally, that your Excellency order said soldiers to be set at liberty, and that they, as well as Sergeant Manuel Quiroga, be made to understand the serious irregularity of their conduct in the matter, having acted beyond their powers, especially when under the circumstances they should have awaited your Excellency's decision, in response to the report that should have been forwarded to your Excellency by said Sergeant, as Commandant of that Post; and that they be admonished to abstain in future from such arbitrary proceedings, as otherwise they shall be punished with all the rigor demanded by the circumstances and nature of the case. And that upon compliance with

**No. 84.**

the foregoing recommendations, record thereof be made in these proceedings, and the case again referred to your Excellency, who, however, shall determine according to his best judgment. Guayana, May sixteenth, of the year one thousand eight hundred and one.

(Signed) PHELIPE SANCHEZ.

**D.**

GUAYANA, May 16th, 1801.

The foregoing opinion is approved by me; and to the end that each and every one of the recommendations made therein be fully carried out, let this record of the proceedings (protocol) be returned to the Commandant of the Fortresses of Antigua Guiana, who, upon the execution thereof with all the legal formalities, shall forward same to this Government.

(Signed) INCIARTE.

**No. 85.**

Letter from Don José Felipe de Inciarte, Governor of Guiana, to Don Manuel de Guevara Vasconcelos, dated February 10, 1802, regarding the proceedings had upon the complaint of the Arawaka Indian Canacunama.

[Printed from a translation of a certified copy of the original in the "Antiguos Archivos de la Capitanía General é Yntendencia de Caracas."]

The GOVERNOR OF GUAYANA.

Complying with the Decree of Sept. 30, last, in which he was ordered to report in the matter of the complaint brought against him by the unattached Lieutenant of Veteran Infantry, Don Juan Dámazo Soler, to which is added in 54 valid folios record of the proceedings referred to therein, instituted at the instance of the Aruaca Indian Canacunama.

Caracas, March 11, 1802.

With the accompanying record of proceedings, let it be referred to the Auditor.

(Signed) GUEVARA.

SEÑOR CAPTAIN-GENERAL.

In compliance with the order contained in your Excellency's Decree, in reference to the memorial which on the 19th of September last was addressed to him by the unattached Lieutenant of Veteran Infantry, Don Juan Dámazo Soler, complaining of the affront which he imagines was offered him by my official communication of 12th of same month, wherein, by reason of his having without authority abstracted from an

Indian of the Aruaca nation, called Canacunama, a paper that had been given the latter by the Rev. Father Fray Felix de Tarraga, in the Yama channel, where he had found him, by way of license or permit, that he might go with his family to settle in the town of San Miguel, I qualified his conduct as one devoid of rational principle, and so singular that there was no foundation upon which it could be based; for, aside from the bene-

**No. 85.**

fit redounding to the heathen Indians themselves out of their intercourse with the Spaniards throughout the Province, of which I was not obliged to remind him, since this was no concern of his, he had arrogated to himself functions that were purely of a gubernative character, from the exercise of which he should abstain in future, and thus endeavor not to meddle in affairs that were outside his province, nor afford occasion to be censured for such proceedings, contenting himself with representing no more authority than corresponded to his station. Upon this communication, and especially upon the expression which he quotes: *that his conduct was devoid of all rational principle*, he has based his complaint, garnishing it with matters wholly opposed to the truth in reference to the proceedings instituted upon complaint of aforesaid Indian Canacunama, in support of the justice of what he has set forth against me, in consequence of said communication, without taking into account—either himself or the person directing him—that the underlined clauses, taken in their clear and genuine sense, and as applied in the present instance, do not admit of any interpretation of an offensive character, unless prejudice or hastiness should consider adequate the one imagined by Soler; for, who does not know that to conduct oneself without rational principle in any determination is nothing else than to act without authority or a just motive in the matter, and that inasmuch as Lieutenant Soler had neither, at the fortresses of Antigua Guayana, where he executed the act, it is evident that he had no rational principle on which to base his singular determination?

This is indeed so obvious, that addressing Your Excellency, I might omit further digression, because I am so firmly convinced that the whole of my official communication of September 12, quoted above, and especially the aforesaid underlined clauses, signify nothing else than what I have already explained, for we repeatedly see them used by classical authors, and generally applied in the same sense; and even were this not so, they are frequently met with in the Royal Ordinance relating to marriages of the year seventy-six, and subsequent royal declarations which speak of the rationality or irrationality of the dissents wherewith the marriages of persons of the most exalted hierarchy are very often opposed by their parents, grandparents, guardians and others who are called upon to give assent, against other persons no less qualified, in which cases the current provision for the Courts of the Kingdom is conceived in the most concise expressions, for example: "Examined: the dissent is declared rational (or irrational) and let the corresponding certificate be given forthwith." So then if these words were to be understood as interpreted by Lieutenant Soler, there would be no Court that was not empowered by His Majesty (whom God preserve) to inflict upon the most illustrious family the affront that is supposed to be involved when designated as irrational, simply because they have failed to prove their case. And as such an inference could not be made by the least enlightened intelligence, it is evident that by my

**No. 85.**

using said expressions no affront has been offered Lieutenant Soler; having only, as his superior, called his attention to the fault he had committed, so that in future he might abstain from repeating it, this alone being the spirit of my aforesaid official communication of which he complains.

But as he bases his complaint upon the merits of the aforesaid proceedings, which he prayed your Excellency to ask of me, said proceedings being already terminated as regards the soldiers, notwithstanding the flaws noted therein for their determination, *owing to the difficulties presented by the justification in the matter of more specific proofs of the act, which, from the nature of the case, were indispensable for the conviction of said soldiers* against whom the proceedings had been instituted, I placed with record of them the memorial of Lieutenant Soler and the official letter of Your Excellency with which you were pleased to address it to me, that I might inform you of all, and for the greater justification of everything that had occurred thereanent. In consequence thereof, I began to note, among many others, some flaws, of which I took account in a decree placed at foot, passing in silence others, so as not to give to the subject a character other than the one which, from its nature, rightfully belonged to it, and terminated by ordering the whole subject to be referred to my Counsellor, that he might decide whether said flaws really existed, and if he had embodied them in the last underlined expressions which he had made use of in the opinion rendered by him in support of said finding. He having examined them with the attentive consideration and wisdom which is his wont, the text of his reply relieves me from repeating to your Excellency the manner and terms wherewith he has elucidated the subject, and I enclose it herewith in confirmation of all the original proceedings, comprising 54 valid folios.

I therefore hope that in view of the above mentioned complaint of the aforesaid Lieutenant Don Juan Dámaso Soler, and the motives upon which it is based, as also the considerations resulting from the proceedings referred to therein, your Excellency will be pleased to provide the needful to restrain him within the bounds of his duty, so that in future he may abstain from repeating same, thereby detracting not only from the frankness wherewith an officer of honor should conduct himself in all his dealings, but also from the subordination and respect due me as his superior, in order that he may set an example to the individuals of his class, as I expect from your Excellency's well-known love of justice.

God preserve your Excellency many years. Guayana, February 10, 1802.

(Signed) JOSÉ FELIPE INCIARTE.

Señor DON MANUEL DE GUEVARA VASCONZELOS.

## No. 86.

## Table of the Missions of Guiana in the year 1816.

[Translated from Blanco (José Félix) Documentos para la Historia de la Vida Pública del Libertador, etc., 4<sup>a</sup> Caracas, 1876, vol. 5, pp. 557-558.]

Names.	Date of foundation.	Indian Tribes.	Baptisms.	Marriages.	Deaths.	Now living.
La Purísima Concepción de Caroni.....	1734	Guayanos and Paríagotos.....	1,496	728	1,265	945
Santa María de Tacarico.....	1730	Guayanos and Pansosyos.....	1,926	722	1,361	981
San José de Oupapuy.....	1733	Guayanos.....	1,226	872	1,790	1,108
San Francisco de Altigracia.....	1734	Guayanos.....	3,637	868	1,969	754
San Miguel del Palmar.....	1734	Guayanos and Caribs.....	2,681	488	1,778	1,015
La Divina Pastora del Tacarico.....	1737	Guayanos.....	1,856	304	666	823
Nuestra Señora de Monserrate del Maimo..	1748	Caribs.....	2,500	361	1,470	1,041
San Fidel del Carapo.....	1752	Caribs.....	2,451	404	681	1,009
Santa Eulalia de Murucuri.....	1754	Caribs and Guaranos.....	1,757	340	888	780
San José de Leonis de Ayma.....	1755	Guaycas.....	2,547	277	1,467	710
Nuestra Señora del Rosario de Guacipati..	1757	Caribs.....	2,038	340	1,084	984
Santa Ana de Puga.....	1760	Arawaks, Caribs, and Guaranos..	1,981	226	1,962	878
Santa Cruz del Calvario.....	1761	Guaranos and Salibas.....	2,041	169	1,129	517
San Ramon de Carnachi.....	1763	Caribs.....	1,033	163	431	684
San Antonio de Huicatonzo.....	1768	Guayanos.....	1,891	468	868	965
La Conversion de San Pablo del Cumamo..	1767	Caribs.....	1,329	29	866	364
Nuestra Señora de Dolores de Paedpa.....	1769	Guayanos and Guaycas.....	1,088	108	541	412
San Félix de Tupuquen.....	1770	Caribs.....	1,692	46	892	786
San Pedro de las Bocas.....	1770	Guaycas.....	1,807	168	1,114	626
San Buenaventura de Guri.....	1771	Guaycas and Caribs.....	1,744	74	771	758
San Miguel de Unata.....	1779	Arawaks and Guaycas.....	1,360	230	740	781
Santa Clara de Yavaragana.....	1779	Guaycas.....	420	26	292	362
San Serafin de Arabatayma.....	1779	Guaycas.....	788	87	322	267
Santa Rosa de Lima de Cura.....	1782	Guaycas.....	969	22	830	651
Santa Magdalena de Currucay.....	1783	Arinagotos.....	461	56	200	365
San Juan Bautista de Avelchico.....	1783	Guaycas and Arinagotos.....	1,498	39	476	732
Nuestra Señora de Belen de Tumeremo....	1788	Guayanos.....	206	180	406	692
Villa de San Antonio de Upata.....	1782	Spaniards.....	2,110	390	706	1,698
Id. de San Isidro de la Barceloneta.....	1770	Spaniards.....	1,084	226	521	484
			48,308	8,268	28,280	21,245

## No. 87.

Act of the Congress of Venezuela, approved May 11, 1842, providing *inter alia* for a lighthouse at the entrance of the Orinoco River.

[Reprinted from Blue Book "Venezuela No. 1 (1896)," pp. 241-242.]

*Legislative Decree establishing Lighthouses on several Parts of the Coast.*

(Translation.)

The Senate and Chamber of Representatives of the Republic of Venezuela assembled in Congress. Having taken into consideration the representation of the Municipal Council of Puerto Cabello respecting the establishment in aid of the navigation of that coast, on Punta Brava, of a Pharos, which, for that purpose, the Junta of Beneficence of that city has procured, and offers; and considering, that it is of great utility to the navigation of the coasts of the Republic to extend to other points thereof those establishments, concurring with the suggestions of the Executive,

Decree:

There shall be established on Punta Brava, opposite the Bay of Puerto Cabello, the Pharos offered by the Junta of Beneficence of that city;

**No. 87.**

and there shall be constructed one on Los Roques, another at the entrance of the Orinoco, where the Executive may determine, and another at the entrance of the Bar of Maracaibo, each at an elevation in proportion to the necessity of the locality to which it belongs.

Art. 2. The Executive shall give the necessary directions for the erection of the lighthouses ordered to be established by the foregoing Article, and for keeping them continually lighted every night of the year.

Art. 3. For the objects expressed in the two foregoing Articles, there shall be collected from the 1st July of this year, in Angostura, La Guaira, Puerto Cabello, and Maracaibo, 6 cents for every ton measured by vessels, with or without cargo, that enter those harbours, proceeding from foreign ports; and on vessels proceeding from other open ports of the Republic, that enter Angostura, Puerto Cabello, and Maracaibo, only 3 cents per ton shall be charged for every ton over and above 25 tons. A general fund shall be formed of the product of either duty.

§. Vessels of war and national and foreign packets or mail-boats are excepted from the payment of this duty.

Art. 4. The collection of this duty as established by the foregoing Article shall be realized when the port dues are collected, and by the same officers appointed by law to collect them.

Art. 5. The sum required, in order that the four lighthouses, of which this Law speaks, may be erected immediately, shall be aided by the surplus accumulated from entry dues established in the Law of port dues, taken on condition of being repaid from the duties established by the present Law, and in the following manner: for the Pharos of Los Roques, from the entry dues collected at La Guaira, and for the others from the entry dues collected at the port to which each Pharos belongs.

Given at Carácas on the 5th May of 1842, 13th year of the Law, and 32nd of Independence.

The President of the Senate,

(Signed) T. MANUEL DE LOS RIOS.

The President of the Chamber of Representatives,

(Signed) FRANCISCO DIAZ.

Secretary of the Senate,

(Signed) JOSÉ R. BURGILLOS.

The Secretary of the Chamber of Representatives,

(Signed) RAFAEL ACEVEDO.

*Carácas, May 11, 1842, 13th year of the Law,  
and 32nd of Independence.*

Let it be executed.

(Signed) JOSÉ A. PAEZ.

For his Excellency the President of the Republic:

The Secretary of the Interior and Justice,

(Signed) ANGEL QUINTERO.

## APPENDIX

### PART 3

## DOCUMENTS FROM BRITISH SOURCES





**No. 88.****Extract from Proclamation Revising the Militia Laws and Regulations of Demerara and Essequibo, February 12, 1824.**

[From "Royal Gazette," Demerara and Essequibo, Thursday, November 25, 1824.]

By His Excellency Major-General Sir Benjamin D'Urban, Knight Commander of the Most Honorable Order of the Bath, of the Royal Guelphic Order, and of the Portuguese Royal Military Order of The Tower and Sword, Lieutenant-Governor and Commander in Chief in and over the United Colony of Demerary and Essequibo, its Dependencies, &c., &c., &c.

Whereas, I have received the King's commands to promulgate the following Order of His Majesty in council, the same is hereby published for general information:

At the Court at Carlton House, the 14th of August, 1824.

*Present: The King's Most Excellent Majesty in Council.*

Whereas, Major General John Murray, heretofore Lieutenant-Governor and Commander in Chief in and over the Colony of Demerary and Essequibo, and the Court of Policy of the said Colony, on the 12th day of February, 1824, promulgated a certain Ordinance or Law, entitled, "An Act for the better Government of the Militia of the United Colony of Demerary and Essequibo," and which Act was in the following words, that is to say:

"An Act for the better Government of the Militia of the United Colony of Demerary and Essequibo."

Publication—By His Excellency Major-General John Murray, Lieutenant-Governor and Commander-in-Chief in and over the Colony of Demerary and Essequibo, with the Dependent Districts, &c., &c., &c., and the Honorable the Court of Policy of the said Colony, unto all whom these Presents shall concern, greeting! be it known—

Whereas, we have deemed it expedient to revise the Militia Laws of the Colony, in order to establish that force on a more efficient footing:—We hereby revoke the former Militia Laws and Regulations, and in place thereof, do enact as follows:—

ARTICLE 1.—The Militia of the United Colony shall consist of two Regiments, viz., one of three battalions in Demerary and one of two battalions in Essequibo, composed as follows:

In Demerary, the first battalion shall consist of all the inhabitants able and liable to carry arms, residing in Georgetown and its environs from plantation Thomas to Plantation La Penitence. The second battalion shall consist of all the inhabitants of the East Coast, from Plantation Thomas inclusive, to Abary Creek; including the Creeks of Mahaica and Mahai-

**No. 88.**

cony. The third battalion, of all the inhabitants of both sides of the river and the West Sea Coast as far as Borasira Creek; including the Creeks and Settlements on both sides;—and the Militia shall further consist of a Company of Artillery, a troop of Cavalry, and a Rifle Corps, in Georgetown, of such numbers and under such particular arrangements as His Excellency the Governor and Commander-in-Chief may, from time to time, think proper; but in every other respect subject to the general Militia Laws.

In Essequibo, the first battalion shall consist of all the inhabitants from Borasira Creek upwards, on the east side of the river, including the Islands of Wakenaam, Leguan, Varken or Hog Island, Troolie Island, and all other islands in the river except Tiger Island; and on the west side, from Schoonhoven Creek upwards, the second battalion, of all the inhabitants from Schoonhoven Creek, including Tiger Island, with all the West Sea Coast, including Pomeroon River.

ARTICLE 2.—Each of the foregoing battalions shall be subdivided into companies, as follows:

The first Demerary battalion into ten companies; rendezvous, the armoury in Stabroek.

The second Demerary battalion into four companies, the first company to consist of the inhabitants from plantation Thomas to plantation *Lusi-quau*, both inclusive; rendezvous, plantation Goede Vorwagting.

The second company, of the inhabitants from plantation Annandale to plantation Lancaster, both inclusive; rendezvous, plantation Paradise.

The third company, of the inhabitants of all the plantations and settlements situated on both sides of Mahaica Creek, from plantation Lancaster upwards, and from plantation Kensington to Fairfield; rendezvous, Mahaica Ferry.

The fourth company, of the inhabitants from plantation Fairfield to Abary Creek, including all intermediate plantations and settlements on both sides of Mahaicony Creek, and west side of Abary Creek; rendezvous, plantation Ormsary.

The third Demerary battalion, into six companies; the first company to consist of the inhabitants from plantation La Penitence to plantation Garden of Eden, both inclusive; rendezvous, plantation Herstelling.

The second company, of the inhabitants from plantation Ea Grange to plantation Reninzigt, West Coast, both inclusive; rendezvous, plantation Best.

The third company, of the inhabitants from plantation Mindenberg to Hobaboe Creek, both inclusive and comprehending both canals; rendezvous, Toevlugt.

The fourth company, of the inhabitants from Hobaboe Creek to plantation Georgia, on the west side, and from plantation Garden of Eden to plantation Soestdyk, on the east side of the river; rendezvous, on the west side of the river plantation Vreedesteyn, and on the east side of the river plantation Caledonia.

**No. 88.**

The fifth company, of the inhabitants from plantation Georgia, upwards, on both sides of the river, including all the creeks and settlements.

The sixth company, of the inhabitants from plantation Windsor Forest to Borasira Creek, both inclusive; rendezvous, plantation Leonora.

The first Essequibo batallion to be subdivided into five companies; the first company to consist of the inhabitants from Borasira Creek to plantation Parika, inclusive; rendezvous, plantation St. Christopher.

The second company, of the inhabitants of Fort Island, and up the river on the east side from plantation Parika to Bonasika Creek; rendezvous, Fort Island.

The third company, of the inhabitants on Leguan and Hog Island; rendezvous,

The fourth company, of the inhabitants on Wakenaam, Troolie and other islands near it; rendezvous,

The fifth company, of the inhabitants from Bonasika Creek on the east side, and from Schoonhoven on the west side up the river; rendezvous, Sara Papa.

The second Essequibo battalion to be subdivided into three companies; the first company to consist of the inhabitants from Schoonhoven to Iteribisci Creek, both inclusive, and including Tiger Island; rendezvous, plantation Middlesex.

The second company, of the inhabitants from Iteribisci Creek to Capoey; rendezvous,

The third company, of the inhabitants from Capoey Creek to the River Pomeroon, inclusive; rendezvous,

To this company, from the extent of the district, will be appointed an additional subaltern officer, who shall muster that part of the company near the River Pomeroon, and for whom a separate rendezvous shall be appointed by the officer commanding the company.

ARTICLE 3.— \* \* \* \* \* to & incl. of Art. 49.

And we do hereby require and enjoin all and every person in this Colony whom it may concern strictly to comply with and conform to this Act.

Thus enacted at our ordinary Assembly held at the King's House, Georgetown, Demerary, the 12th of February, 1824, and published the 14th following.

(Signed) JOHN MURRAY.

By command of the Court.

CHARLES WILDAY, Joint Dept. Sec.

**No. 89.****Notice of Court Policy of Demerara and Essequibo, Dividing the Colony into Parishes, May 6, 1826.**

[From "Royal Gazette," Demerara and Essequibo, Saturday May 6, 1826.]

**COURT OF POLICY.**

**NOTICE.**—Whereas His Excellency the Lieutenant Governor and the Honourable the Court of Policy have deemed it expedient to divide the United Colony of Demerary and Essequibo into ten separate and distinct Parishes—whose names and extents are respectively as follows; and they are henceforward to be so divided and named accordingly:

**PARISH NO. 1. SAINT MARY'S.**

To extend from Abary to Mahaicony and thence to Mahaica; and from Mahaica to Plantation Lowlands inclusive—and to include the settlements on the banks of the Mahaica and Mahaicony Creeks.

**PARISH NO. 2. SAINT PAUL'S.**

From Plantation Nooten's Zuil to Plantation Cumming's Lodge, both inclusive.

**PARISH NO. 3. SAINT GEORGE'S.**

Georgetown, and to include the estates situated on the Cummingsburgh Canal.

**PARISH NO. 4. SAINT MATTHEW'S.**

From Georgetown up the east bank of the river as far as settlements extend, and including the settlements in Canal No. 3.

**PARISH NO. 5. SAINT MARK'S.**

Along the whole west bank of the river, from Plantation Vreed-en-Hoop inclusive, as far as the settlements extend—and including the settlements in Canals No. 1 & 2.

**PARISH NO. 6. SAINT SWITHIN'S.**

From Plantation Best to Plantation Parica, both inclusive.

**PARISH NO. 7. SAINT PETER'S.**

To comprehend the Island of Leguan and Hog Island, Essequibo.

**PARISH NO. 8. SAINT JAMES'S.**

Waakenham and Troolie Islands.

**PARISH NO. 9. SAINT JOHN'S.**

From Supenaam Creek to Capoe, on the West Coast of Essequibo—including Tiger Island.

**PARISH NO. 10. THE TRINITY.**

From Capoe Creek to Pomeroon, and as far as the British settlements extend.

Court House, George Town, Demerary,  
6th May, 1826.

By Command,

W. J. ARMSTRONG, Jr. Dep. Col. Sec.

**No. 90.****Appointment by the Lieutenant-Governor of Demerara and Essequibo, of Assistant Protectors of Slaves, June 5, 1830.**

[From "Royal Gazette," Demerara and Essequibo, June 8, 1830.]

With reference to the publication of the 10th May last, his Excellency the Lieutenant-Governor has been pleased to appoint Robert Waterton, Esquire, to be Assistant Protector of Slaves for the Districts from Plantation Windsor-Forest to Plantation Parika, inclusive, instead of A. van Ryck de Groot, Esquire, and

Joseph Alleyne, Esquire, to be Assistant Protector of Slaves for the District from Capoe Creek to the river Pomeroon, inclusive, instead of the Hon. Charles Bean;—

All persons are required and enjoined to respect the said Robert Waterton and Joseph Alleyne, Esquires, in such their capacities, accordingly.

Given at the King's House in Georgetown, Demerara, this 5th June, 1830.

By His Excellency's Command.

W. J. D'URBAN, Gov. Sec.

**No. 91.****Appointment, by Lieutenant-Governor, of Major Peter Rose, as Deputy Fiscal in the Capoe-Cromer District, June 26, 1830.**

[From "Royal Gazette," Demerara and Essequibo, Tuesday, June 29, 1830.]

His Excellency the Lieutenant-Governor has been pleased to appoint (according to the Provisions of the Order in Council of the 14th of August, 1824) Major Peter Rose, of the Colonial Militia, to be Deputy Fiscal in and over the District extending from Capoe Creek to the River Pomeroon, inclusive.

Given at the King's House, in Georgetown, Demerara, this 26th day of June, 1830, and in the 11th year of His Majesty's reign.

By His Excellency's Command.

W. J. D'URBAN, Gov. Sec.

**No. 92.****Government Notice, Appointing Justices of the Peace in British Guiana, January 23, 1834.**

[From "Royal Gazette," Georgetown, British Guiana, January 28, 1834.]

**GOVERNMENT NOTICE.**

In pursuance of the Enactments of an Ordinance which has this day been promulgated, entitled, "An Ordinance to establish Inferior Criminal

**No. 92.**

Courts within the Colony of British Guiana," His Excellency, the Lieutenant-Governor, has been pleased to appoint, in the name and on behalf of His Majesty, the following Gentlemen, to be Justices of the Peace, within the said Colony or Province of British Guiana; and to direct that their several names should be published in the Royal Gazette for the information and guidance of all concerned.

The Honorable JOHN CROAL.  
 The Honorable J. G. REID.  
 The Honorable GEO. RAINY.  
 The Honorable CHARLES BEAN.  
 The Honorable SIMON FRASER.

---

PARISHES OF ST. GEORGE AND ST. ANDREW.

S. A. Goodman	William Johnstone
J. H. Albony	B. J. Hopkinson
Walter Urquhart	George Robertson
Alexander Glen	A. Turton
Alexander Macrea	George Warren
J. A. D. Koolhaas	Wm. Davison, Esqs.

## PARISH OF ST. PAUL.

Michael McTurk	Cresswell Spencer, Esqs.
Alexander Simson	

## PARISH OF ST. MARY.

Andrew Jackson	William Booker
William Fraser	Richard Watson, Esqrs.
Hug Rogers	

## PARISH OF ST. MATTHEW'S.

James Johnstone	Robert Neilson
S. W. Gordon	Henry Montaroux, Esqs.

## PARISH OF ST. MARK.

Thomas Blake	U. J. F. Bach, Esqs.
Jacobus Meertens	

## PARISH OF ST. SWITHIN.

N. M. Manget	R. Waterton, Esqs.
Joseph Beebe, Senior	

## PARISH OF ST. LUKE.

J. B. Cox	L. H. W. Mack, Esqs.
J. A. Sievwright	

## UPPER DISTRICT, DEMERARY RIVER.

J. D. Patterson	C. Brotherson, Esqs.
J. P. Blount	

**No. 92.**

## PARISH OF ST. PETER.

L. Fitzgerald  
J. R. Bovel

J. Mackenzie, Esqs.

## PARISH OF ST. JAMES.

Colin Simson  
Thomas Teschemaker

John Pearson, Esqs.

## PARISH OF ST. JOHN.

Edward Bishop  
Henry Halket  
J. Mackie, Esqs.

## PARISH OF THE TRINITY.

John Austin  
Joseph Alleyne  
J. Macpherson, Esqs.

## AT POMEROON.

Bonnel Tonge, Esq.

## UPPER RIVER ESSEQUIBO.

Thos. Richardson, Esq.

KING'S HOUSE, 23rd January, 1834.

**No. 93.**

**Fees allowed for Journeys to and Attendances at the Registrar's and Marshall's offices in British Guiana, 1834.**

[From "Royal Gazette," Georgetown, British Guiana, November 6, 1834.]

All charges for journeys and attendances for negroes, boat and horse hire, are to be understood and regulated, as going from and returning to the Chief Towns, Georgetown in Demerary and Essequibo, and New Amsterdam in Berbice, and shall apply to the Registrar's and Marshall's offices in British Guiana, say two guilders per mile on land and one guilder per mile by water. The following table of distances in miles from Georgetown, is established to be as follows:

## DEMERARY AND ESSEQUEBO.

MILES.	MILES.
From Registrar's office to any part of Georgetown.	CANAL No. 2.
<b>EAST COAST DEMERARY.</b>	From Georgetown to any estate on the same. 13
From Georgetown to Pl. Kitty..... 3	" " " Pl. Vriesland..... 13
" " " Vryheid's lust..... 6	" " " Reynestis..... 22
" " " Good Hope..... 9	" " " Borselin Island..... 33
" " " Paradise..... 12	" " " Sand Hills..... 40
" " " Nabacles..... 15	" " " Saw Mill of Huss.... 50
" " " Ann's Grove..... 18	And all above f. 110.
" " " Mahaica Creek..... 22	<b>WEST COAST.</b>
" " up the Creek to Pl. Belmont..... 25	From Georgetown to Nouvelle Flandres... 3
" " to Cane Grove & beyond 28	" " " Waller's Delight..... 6
" " " Broomhall..... 30	" " " Blankenburgh..... 9
" " " Mahaicony..... 36	" " " Corocelia Ida..... 12
" " " Up the Creek..... 44	" " " Vrees en Hoop..... 18
" " " Abary..... 45	" " " Kinderen end Boos's Rust..... 18
<b>B. DEMERARY, EAST SIDE.</b>	" " " Philadelphia..... 21
From Georgetown to Pl. Houston... 3	" " " Farm..... 24
" " " Pl. Providence..... 6	" " " Beyond as far as road extends..... 27
" " " all estates in Canal No. 3... 12	" " " to Leguan..... 25
" " " Plt. Farm..... 9	" " " Tiger Island and Wake-naam..... 30
" " " Great Diamond..... 12	" " " Hog, Fort and Troolie Island..... 35
" " " New Hope..... 15	<b>WEST COAST ESSEQUEBO.</b>
" " " Garden of Eden..... 22	From Supenaam Creek to Plt. Somerset and Burks and Evergreens..... 40
<b>RIVER DEMERARY, WEST SIDE.</b>	To Pomeroon, f. 330.
From Georgetown to Pl. Malgré Font..... 3	From Supenaam up the river to the Falls, f. 150.
" " " La Grange..... 6	
<b>CANAL No. 1.</b>	
Any estate on the same..... 12	
La Retraite..... 9	

## No. 94.

## Extracts from Letter of Henry Light, Governor of British Guiana, to Lord Glenelg, September 1, 1838.

[From Parliamentary Papers, "Papers relative to the West Indies. Part I, Jamaica—British Guiana. Ordered by the House of Commons, to be printed, March 15, 1839, pp. 278-279.]

Though the country over which I have lately passed has no variety of surface, and may be represented as one great flat, intersected by creeks, rivers, and trenches, yet I think it my duty to attempt some description of it, that may enable your Lordship to form, perhaps, with the aid of the



**No. 94.**

accompanying Map, a more correct idea of the various locations, of the cultivation, past and present, and of the future means of increasing this cultivation, and thence judge of the value of this important colony to Great Britain, if supported by the capital of the mother country, and the protection of the Government; a protection never withheld, but more peculiarly required where the field for improvement of the resources of the country is so wide, and so capable of adding to the treasures of the parent state.

The three great rivers Berbice, Demerara, and Essequibo, may be considered the source of all the alluvial soil now in cultivation, peculiarly British. The Corantyne, being the boundary of British Guiana, it contributes plainly to the richness of the soil on the Corantyne coast of Berbice. Into all these rivers flow what are misnamed creeks, which may be rather considered tributary streams, taking their rise at greater or less distance amongst the great marshy savannahs of the interior. The Pomaroon river, at the western extremity of Essequibo, may be taken as a limit to the country, though there is a mission supported by the colony on the Maracca river or creek, a short distance westward, where 500 Spanish Indians are collected in a settlement under a Roman-catholic priest, recommended from Trinidad for that purpose; he is reported to be effecting good.

The cultivation of the staple commodities, sugar, coffee and cotton, is confined at present to the coast of the Essequibo; west and east Demerara; the west and east coast, Berbice, as regards the sea. On the three great rivers the highest cultivation is on the Berbice, 35 miles on the east bank. On the west bank, some few miles less, and on the east and west banks of the Demerara and Essequibo, the highest cultivation does not extend above 25 miles from the mouth of the river. The Canje Creek, flowing into the Berbice river below New Amsterdam, also has several estates in cultivation on each bank. On the Corantyne there are only two estates.

By reference to the accompanying map, the existing cultivation will be observed coloured green; the abandoned cultivation, brown.

\* \* \* \* \*

The banks of the Pomaroon and the western extremity of the Essequibo are rich in alluvial soil, but are not cultivated; there is one wood-cutting settlement on the Pomaroon which may be considered as fit for mercantile purposes, and is prosperous.

The appearance of the country, on the Essequibo coast and in the islands, is much more cheerful than on the Demerara river; canals, trenches and dykes, the same everywhere. In Essequibo, the traveller drives through cultivation; in Demerara, he must view it at a distance, as the front lands are generally morass and bush, the land having been exhausted. In most parts of Essequibo it seems inexhaustible. The numerous creeks or tributary streams take their rise, as I have said before, in the savannahs, which are either barren sand, impassable marsh, or land so marshy as to forbid a

**No. 94.**

hope of cultivation; yet on the sides of these creeks are borders of soil which quickly repay the cultivator, though as yet few, but the scattered families of aborigines, are to be found taking advantage of such spots.

\* \* \* \* \*

On the extremity of the coast of Essequibo, towards the Pomaroon, there are two isolated estates in cultivation, while rich land is ready for human industry. The Dutch formerly cultivated the banks of the Essequibo, 100 miles above its mouth; the map will show your Lordship how little, on either side, is now in cultivation.

\* \* \* \*

**No. 95.**

**Proposed establishment of an Indian Village; debate in the Combined Court of British Guiana, March 27, 1844.**

[From "Royal Gazette," Georgetown, British Guiana, Tuesday, April 2, 1844.]

The Government Secretary—The Governor and Court of Policy, at the recommendation of the Combined Court, have placed an item on the Estimate for the establishment of an Indian Village.

Mr. Arrindell—I move that it be struck off.

Mr. Naghten—I second it.

Mr. Arrindell—It may appear somewhat singular that I should move an amendment that is irregular, or would appear irregular, but for the precedent which was set about two or three days past. There was an item on the Estimate for a certain Clergyman; it was moved that it be struck off, and the motion was carried by a majority. In the absence of one of the majority, it was reconsidered and placed on the Estimate. I have, therefore, an excellent precedent for my motion, and I trust that the item will be this day struck off. The Court of Policy has been recommended to put the item on the Estimate and has done so. On both occasions I was, unfortunately, in the minority. I agree with yourself, and many others, that the prospects of the Colony are considerably increased within the last two or three years, but they are increased so much a magnitude as to warrant the Court in throwing away \$10,000 upon a mere chimera. It is stated that we have a native population which may be civilized. We are endeavouring to civilize them as much as is in our power, and we have two or three Missions established, which we are supporting with very great liberality. Why, merely upon a whim or caprice, so large a sum, or any sum, should be placed at the disposal of God knows whom, merely for the purpose of erecting a Village, which is to be populated by savages from the interior (and whether they are to be under any and what control we know not), I cannot understand. Many attempts have been made to redeem those people from their habits; they have been taught to read, and in

**No. 95.**

some instances to write, but the moment they go back to their own country, they throw off their clothing, and returned to the woods. Several instances may be detailed of their having gone down to the Arabian Coast and worked, but we know that they do not work continuously. We are about to throw away, or rather jeopardise, in the present state of the finances of the colony, a large sum merely for the purpose of an experiment; and experiments are already in progress. What is the establishment at Bartika but an experiment to see if those people can be converted to a civilized state. There is also an establishment at Supenaam, and another at the Waraputa, and one at — —; here we have four or five settlements already; but this is to try if we cannot get the people to come and settle down, and attend to the cultivation of the soil.

Mr. Croal—Near a School.

Mr. Arrindell—And it ought to have been added—near an inn or grog shop, according to the saying, that where God erects his place the devil puts his inn. We have shewn liberality to a Church which only within the last few days discovered its exigencies. They asked for \$1,750 at first, and, wonderful to relate, they discovered that they were under a mistake, and asked for \$6,000, and I believe if they had asked for \$6,000 in the first instance, the Court would, in the spirit in which they granted that sum, have said, you ask too little. If we calculate the enormous votes passed by the Court,—\$5,000 for St. George's Church, \$10,000 for agriculture; a variety of sums to the Churches; \$26,000 to the town, being the estimated amount of the liquor and retail spirit licenses, we have in one way or the other voted away no less than \$60,000 or \$80,000, thereby increasing very considerably the estimate submitted by the Court of Policy; under all these circumstances, considering that very few of us are so situated as to be liberal before we are just, I do not see that we are justified in voting away so large a sum for an experiment, while we have other experiments in operation. It may appear rather illiberal, but I cannot consent to vote away the funds of the colony on a purpose so purely chimerical, and I will therefore take the sense of the Court, to see if the majority will still adhere to the vote for the item.

Mr. Rose—I would say a few words in reply to the hon. member. He says that there are missions already established. We wish to bring the Indians where they will be useful. All those missions are away from civilized life where they (the people) can be of no use to themselves or the community.

Mr. Naghten—I perfectly agree with what has fallen from the honorable Mr. Arrindell. It has been said that the establishment of a village with a view to obtain assistance for the cultivation, has not been tried. There is, in St. John's parish, a village established precisely on the same plan as proposed by Mr. Macrae. It is near St. John's parish Church, and the Rector has given them land.

Mr. Laing—I think the experiment is likely to do a great deal of good.

**No. 95.**

There is an immense number of Indians in the interior. If an experiment of this kind were tried, it might be done on a small scale, and I think numbers of them would come down. In Berbice, a great many came down for the purpose of picking coffee, but then returned to their woods to plant up their lands. If the Colony gave them lands, there is no doubt that instead, of going back to the interior, they would cultivate the land allotted by the Government. It would be advantageous to bring them down, and if the money be voted, it will be sufficient to try the experiment in two or three places. It is advisable to try and draw down those who may be of benefit to the agriculture of the Country.

Mr. Croal—It is proposed to give them 10 acres. In what they are to cultivate it, whether in sugar, coffee, or cotton, is not mentioned. If it be sugar, to which they are not accustomed, where is the money to come from to pay them?

Mr. Laing—They can work on the neighbouring estates.

Mr. Croal—That will never induce them to come. There is a large population of Indians at the Tapacooma Creek. They have an easy access to the coast; in two hours they can be at Lima. Every inducement has been held out to them to come to the estates; a few have been employed in cutting down bush, and a few in cutting canes, but I never heard of an Indian putting hoe or shovel on his own land. There is one characteristic of the Indian which has been overlooked. If you establish them in a village, and one of them happens to die, all the preaching of all the parsons in the colony, and all the inducements you can hold out, will never persuade them to remain; your buildings will be thrown upon your hands, and the place become abandoned.

Mr. Macrae—I am not surprised at the manner in which the hon. mover of the amendment has characterised the proposal, because I well know that such an opinion is entertained by many other individuals, but whether it is a liberal or illiberal opinion, I leave to the consideration of others. He says he considers it a wild chimera, and that the money will be thrown away,—that it is a measure of caprice, and wholly unworthy of the consideration of the Court. This is altogether a novel experiment, whatever may be said to the contrary, for no attempt has been made as a public measure to withdraw the Indians from the wilderness and their habits there, and to settle them in a community in a civilized state, in the midst of our cultivation. The experiment is new, and therefore, of course, uncertain; but we expend immense sums of money for the purpose of encouraging foreign immigration. This has been of a very unprofitable character to the colony, but the other which I propose is only a measure of evenhanded justice to the aborigines of the country, for I look on it as a species of immigration from the interior to the cultivated parts of the colony. The honorable gentleman on my left, Mr. Croal, has asked, in what description of labour they are to be employed, and if it is to be in cultivating the 10 acres attached

**No. 95.**

to their houses. I am surprised that any gentleman should ask such a question, for I mentioned that it was only a matter of experiment to see if they could be got to add to the revenue by their exports. I consider it one of the most legitimate sources to obtain labor, if it can be obtained. Some of those who object to my proposal say that the experiment has been tried; I deny *in toto*; it has never been tried in the public manner in which I propose that it should be done. An honorable member acknowledges at the same time, that profitable labor had been obtained from those people in various parts of the country, and that is confirmed by the statement of a member from Berbice. It is a fact that a gang of these people are now working on the west coast Essequibo, employed for various purposes. But I don't propose to bring isolated beings from the wilderness; my proposition is to bring them into civilised life and settle them in a community by themselves. We all know that they are ruled by their own chiefs, and I do not think it impossible to get one of these to undertake to bring them down and settle them in a village where they may become useful members of society. It is said that if one of them dies they will immediately abandon the village. One of my objects is to bring them into civilised society, and to convert them and wean them from their habits and superstitions. I think from the moral instruction of the Clergyman in the immediate neighbourhood, their prejudices would be very soon overcome; I am satisfied these would be overcome in a reasonable time.

Mr. Croal—You state that it has never been publicly tried?

Mr. Macrae—Never by the Colony.

Mr. Croal—It has. Sir Benjamin D'Urban granted lands to them.

Mr. Macrae—It has never been tried by public experiment and carried into practical operation. I do not think that those people are entitled to the same notice of the Court that foreigners are, and I maintain that they are entitled to much higher. They are the aborigines of the country, and we inherited from them our possessions in this colony. (Mr. Arrindell laughed aloud.) It appears to have excited the risible faculties of the honorable member, but I repeat that we do hold our title from them originally, and they are entitled to the most favourable considerations of this Court in the most comprehensive sense of the word.

Mr. Croal—You stated that the experiment had never been tried. I can prove, that it was. In 1824 or 1825, Sir Benjamin D'Urban, on a representation made by the proprietors of the Arabian coast, made a grant of 500 acres, or thereabouts, to a body of Indians, represented by a Capt. ——. Every inducement was held out to them to remove from Morocco to the Tapacuma: they were promised employment and could have obtained it, for there were few slaves in the colony at the time, and they were employed on the estate. There was a constant market for fire wood, troolies, &c.; they were offered sheep, pigs, and goats, and the land was ready for them, but after we thought we had got them secured, it appears that some parties went and persuaded them that they would be little better

**No. 95.**

than slaves. If that had gone through, they would not have been far from the Parish Church, and they would have got a ready market for everything. That experiment failed, notwithstanding that so many inducements were held out to them, to settle there. I believe that since then, a body of them has been settled at some wood-cutting place near there, and when they please they go into the bush to cut wood.

The Government Secretary—I cannot perceive the slightest resemblance between the experiment just mentioned, and the one proposed by Mr. Macrae. It amounts to nothing more than this, that Captain —— preferred the Morocco to the Tapacuma. This aboriginal gentleman may have preferred the Morocco, where there are no mosquitoes, to the Tapacuma, which is known to abound in them. This experiment comes before the Court as an experiment, and, therefore, it is natural that doubts should exist on the subject. I confess I am rather sceptical myself about its success. I think the Indians must be civilized by resorting to their haunts rather than by drawing them down to our civilized places of abode; but I would give them a fair trial for reasons which the Court will readily conceive. Labourers are brought from a great distance at a great expense, and the Court have agreed to pay for Chinese labourers at a cost of at least \$60 for each, or it may be \$80, including advances made by the Agent. The cost, then, of introducing 140 Chinese labourers would be within \$200 of the total cost of this experiment, which may attract hundreds of people already in the colony. I would give it a fair trial, because it may be urged by the opponents of immigration to this country, that we should attempt to profit by those sources of immigration which are at our very door, rather than saddle the colony with the expense of procuring them from such distant places as the Mauritius, China, and the East Indies. At the last Court there was a despatch of the Secretary of State read, in which he stated it not only as his conviction, but the conviction of the people of England, that the aborigines had a strong claim on the people of this country, independently of their claim to the soil, because, as Christians, we were bound to diffuse truths, which we thought essential to our own happiness, and which should be extended to them if we desire the happiness of the whole human race. The expenditure, sir, of \$10,000 for a purpose of this kind, which will remove a prejudice which now exists on the minds of parties in England against the introduction of labourers, is the least costly experiment that the colony has been called to undertake. Whatever may be its success, it will have a good effect. On these grounds of policy alone, I would strongly support the item, for which I think the Court are indebted to the gentleman—the Vice-President of the Financial College, and more especially for the able speech with which he first supported his motion.

Mr. Arrindell—I have heard nothing from the supporters of the measure to alter my opinion, or rather that opinion has been consider-

**No. 95.**

ably strengthened. Although it may appear to many who hear me that I am wrong, yet the speech of the last speaker has tended more than anything to strengthen me in my opinion. I shall attempt to deal with them in detail: I am charged with having brought forward the amendment irregularly. When an item is put on the estimate it is open to any member to move that it be struck off; therefore there is no irregularity, although it may appear inconsistent, in my endeavoring to get the Court, or any member of the Court to change his opinion so as to give me a majority on this question; but these proceedings are not irregular, and not open to any charge of the kind. Again; I am twitted for having used the language I did in speaking of the plan as a chimera. But the honorable member is quite mistaken in supposing I meant to ridicule him, for such is the high respect I entertain for him that nothing of the kind could be intended; but if the honorable member has come forward with this chimera, it is his duty to enter into details to shew the grounds on which he has built his faith. I have listened with attention, and I have heard nothing of these details. He has spoken of houses, but does not say what is to be put into them, whether we are to put corn or foo-foo, whether hammocks or crab-claws; whether we are to send a mission to this chief whom he has conjured up, to see if they will come to civilized life; but he says we must build ten houses and these must be near a Church or School. It has been stated by an honorable member that the experiment had been tried, or rather is in progress, in the Parish of St. John. I did not remember the circumstance at first, but now remember that there is a location there, and that endeavours are being made to bring those people into civilization, but that is not the object which the mover of this measure has in view. He tells us that it is his object to bring these people into civilized life, that they may assist in the agriculture of the country. If that be his object, it is not likely to be attained by the means which he proposes. He admits that it is a mere experiment. Now, the ground I take on that is, that we are not authorized by the state of the finances to go to such vast expense. Finding then that it is an objection to his experiment, he turns round and says, it is to be a public experiment and that it is the first time it has been tried, in order to gain your Excellency's and the public sanction. We are to have a Governor of the establishment no doubt, and a Schoolmaster appointed; we shall then have nurses, and a number of servants to feed these bantlings, and then, next year, instead of \$10,000 to build the houses, we shall have \$30,000 or \$40,000 for the support of those servants, without which it cannot exist. One of the greatest objections to it is that it is to be a public institution. We have already public institutions enough; we have erected three or four new ones during the present session, and, as observed by an honorable member, although we have done everything in our power to support these public institutions, one of them alone costs us more than the whole of the taxation when he first came to the country.

**No. 95.**

Sir! I disclaim any descent from these people. The honorable member taxed me with smiling; he says we derive our inheritance from them; I deny it; I am not of Indian extraction nor of Indian blood. We found them here and the soil is wide enough for both of us, and we have been doing a great deal to bring them into civilization. The honorable secretary says, we should not hesitate to give this sum, because 150 Chinese immigrants would cost nearly as much. Willingly would I give this sum for 150 Chinese, because we know that the Chinese laborers, if properly selected, would immediately add to the resources of the Colony, and enable us to bear up against the ills under which we have been for some time laboring. If the accounts of Chinese labour which are given be correct, there is not one but, within a year after his introduction, will produce 3 or 4 hogsheads of sugar, besides the molasses, &c. They will more than pay for themselves in 3 or 4 years. I am sorry that the honorable Secretary should have touched on the want of feeling and of attention to the aborigines of the country; I deny it and that most positively.

The Government Secretary.—I did not impute any such feeling to the Court or to you individually.

Mr. Arrindell.—You said that the Secretary of State had stated that we ought to pay more attention to their claims. We have nothing to do with their claims. The small portion of land which we occupy was obtained first by conquest, and then by treaty, and we have nothing to do with the treaty. We are doing what the Secretary of State wishes, and we have done what he requires us to do, although not to the extent that he or we ourselves could wish, but I say again, we are not able to throw away \$10,000 in the present exigencies of the colony.

The vote for and against the amendment being equal, the amendment was lost.

Mr. Arrindell, seconded by Mr. Stuart, moved that the item be reduced to \$2,000.

Mr. Croal declined to vote, observing that he was glad to find that the Court was equally divided.

The amendment was put and lost, and also another amendment by Mr. Arrindell, seconded by Mr. Stuart, for the reduction of the item to \$5,000.

Mr. Arrindell then proposed to have the votes taken on the original motion.

The Court divided, and, the votes being equal, His Excellency voted for the item, and it was accordingly passed.

Mr. Laing.—If the honorable member thinks that the money is too much for trying the experiment in Essequibo, part of it may be applied to trying it on the Berbice river. (A laugh).

Mr. Arrindell gave notice that he would move that the item be not paid out until satisfactory evidence be adduced to the Court of Policy that the experiment is likely to be attended with success, and that some feasible plan be devised for carrying it into effect.



**No. 95.**

Mr. Macrae proposed that the following gentlemen should be named a Committee for the purpose of devising the best means of trying the experiment: Sir Michael McTurk, the Collector of Customs, Messrs. Laing and Ross, the Clergyman of the Parish, and the Senior Member of the Vestry.

This was agreed to.

---

**No. 96.**
**Rearrangement of the Fiscal Districts of British Guiana, and assignment of officers thereto, 1850.**

[From "Royal Gazette," Georgetown, British Guiana, Saturday, June 29, 1850.]

In pursuance of the votes of the combined Court, whereby the number of Commissaries of Taxation was reduced from eight to six after the 30th instant, and the number of Postholders, being superintendents of rivers and creeks, from six to four, His Excellency, the Governor, is pleased to direct that, from and after that date the Fiscal Districts of the Colony shall be rearranged in the following manner, and shall be respectively under the charge of the officers whose names are set opposite thereto:

COUNTY DEMERARA.

No. I.—From Plantation Grove, including the whole of the East Coast downwards to Georgetown, including Plantation La Penitence.—A. Garnett, Esq.

II.—From Plantation Vreedestein, west bank of the river, to Plantation Greenwich, West Coast, both inclusive.—D. Falant, Esq.

III.—Both banks of the rivers, from the termination of Districts 1 and 2 (including Canal No. 3), as far upwards as the settlements extend.—Thomas Fernell, Esq.

COUNTY ESSEQUIBO.

IV.—The Islands of Leguan and Wakenaam, and Tiger Island, and the west coast of the County, from Supenaam Creek to Better Success, inclusive.—A. Gainfort, Esq.

V.—From Greenwich Park on the east, and from Supenaam Creek on the west bank upwards, as far as settlements extend on the Essequibo and its tributaries, including all the islands not contained in District 4.—A. F. Band, Esq.

VI.—From Better Success to the limits of the Colony, including the Pomeroon river and its tributaries.—W. C. M'Clintock, Esq.

COUNTY BERBICE.

VII.—From Plantation Spring Hall, inclusive, to Abary Creek, and all estates and settlements on the Mahaica and Mahaicony Creeks, and from

**No. 96.**

the Abary to the settlements at Plantation D'Edward.—C. Brotherson, Esq.

VIII.—New Amsterdam and thence to Bloemhoff, inclusive, on the east bank of the river Barbice, and all the estates and settlements on the west bank, from D'Edward to Plantation Herstelling, inclusive; the estates and settlements on both sides of the Canje Creek, and the estates on the East Coast Canal.—R. Samuel, Esq.

IX.—All the estates and settlements above the East Coast Canal to Plantation Skeldon, inclusive, with the river Corentyne as far as settlements extend.—T. Coleman, Esq.

**No. 97.**

**Division of the Colony of British Guiana into Districts and Divisions,  
1856.**

[From the Official Gazette (extraordinary) of British Guiana, Georgetown, Thursday, November 27, 1856.]

**PROCLAMATION.**

By His Excellency Philip Edmund Wodehouse, Governor and Commander-in-Chief in and over the Colony of British Guiana, Vice-Admiral and Ordinary of the same, &c., &c., &c., by and with the advice and consent of the Honorable the Court of Policy of said Colony;

Whereas, by the Ordinance No. 29 of 1856, it is enacted that the Governor may, with the advice and consent of the Court of Policy, by Proclamation, divide the Colony into Districts and likewise subdivide such Districts into Divisions:

Now, therefore, I, with the advice and consent of the Court of Policy, do hereby Proclaim that the Colony shall, for the purposes of the said Ordinance, be divided into the six following Districts, that is to say:

**DISTRICT No. 1.**—The Arabian coast, the Island in the river Essequibo, and both banks of the said river down to the south bank of the Parika Creek on the east bank of the said river Essequibo.

**DISTRICT No. 2.**—The Parish of St. Luke from the north bank of the Parika Creek, the Parish of St. Swithin and the Northern portion of the Parish of St. Mark to Plantation Vive-la-Force, inclusive.

**DISTRICT No. 3.**—The remainder of the Parish of St. Mark and the Parish of St. Matthew, with all the settlements on the Demerara river and the creeks flowing with it, as far as the same extend.

**DISTRICT No. 4.**—The City of Georgetown and its suburbs, and the Parish of St. George and St. Paul.

**DISTRICT No. 5.**—The Parishes of St. Mary, St. Michael, St. Catherine and St. Clement.

**No. 97.**

**DISTRICT No. 6.**—The Town of New Amsterdam, formerly called Glasgow and Edinburgh, and the Parishes of All Saints, St. Patrick and St. Saviour, with all the settlements on the Canje Creek and the Corentyne river, with their tributaries.

And I, with the like advice and consent, do further Proclaim, that the said Districts shall be subdivided into the eighteen following Divisions, that is to say:

**DISTRICT No. 1** shall be subdivided into three Divisions, viz.:

*Division No. 1.*—The Arabian Coast, from the Western Extremity, including Pomeroun, to the west bank of the Iterabisce Creek.

*Division No. 2.*—The remainder of the Arabian Coast, the settlements on the Supenaam Creek, Wakenaam, Hog Island, Tiger Island and the Troolie Islands.

*Division No. 3.*—The Island of Leguan and Fort Island, with the settlements on the river Essequibo and its tributaries, to the south bank of the Parika Creek.

**DISTRICT No. 2** shall be subdivided into three Divisions, viz.:

*Division No. 4.*—So much of the Parish of St. Luke as lies between the south bank of Parika Creek and Plantation Blankenburg, inclusive.

*Division No. 5.*—The Parish of St. Swithin.

*Division No. 6.*—The part of the Parish of St. Mark from the boundary of the Parish of St. Swithin to Plantation Vive-la-Force, inclusive.

**DISTRICT No. 3** shall be subdivided into two Divisions, viz.:

*Division No. 7.*—The west bank of the Demerara River from Plantation Vive-la-Force and the east bank down to Plt. Garden of Eden, inclusive, with the settlements on the Creeks within those limits.

*Division No. 8.*—The remainder of the Parish of St. Matthew.

**DISTRICT No. 4** shall be subdivided into four divisions, viz.:

*Division No. 9.*—So much of the City of Georgetown and its suburbs as lies to and inclusive of the south side of Church Street.

*Division No. 10.*—So much of the City of Georgetown and its suburbs as lies to and inclusive of the north side of Church Street.

*Division No. 11.*—The remainder of the Parish of St. George and the western part of the Parish of St. Paul to Plantation Mon Repos, inclusive.

*Division No. 12.*—The remainder of the Parish of St. Paul.

**DISTRICT No. 5** shall be subdivided into three Divisions, viz.:

*Division No. 13.*—The Parish of St. Mary.

*Division No. 14.*—The Parish of St. Michael and of part of the Parish of St. Catherine, to the village of Ithaca, inclusive.

*Division No. 15.*—The remainder of the Parish of St. Catherine and the Parish of St. Clement.

**No. 97.**

DISTRICT No. 6 shall be subdivided into three Divisions, viz.:

*Division No. 16.*—The Parish of All Saints, including the town of New Amsterdam, and the abandoned lots or plantations formerly called Glasgow and Edinburgh, but excluding the settlements on the left bank of the Canje Creek.

*Division No. 17.*—The Parish of St. Patrick and the settlements on both side banks of the Cauje Creek and its tributaries.

*Division No. 18.*—The Parish of St. Saviour including the settlements on the Corentyne river and its tributaries.

Given under my hand and seal of office at the Guiana Public Buildings, Georgetown, Demerara, this 27th day of November, 1856, and the twentieth year of Her Majesty's reign.

GOD SAVE THE QUEEN!

By His Excellency's Command,

W. B. WOLSELEY, Act. Gov. Sec.

**No. 98.**

**Entrance to Venezuelan gold fields by way of Cuyuni prohibited by Venezuela, December 3, 1857.**

[From "Royal Gazette," Georgetown, British Guiana, Thursday, March 18, 1858.]

[*Translation.*]

"Let the Governor of Demerara be informed, with respect to the expeditions which, proceeding from that colony by way of the Cuyuni, have penetrated this province as far as the gold bearing lands of Upata, that I have decreed the following regulations:

1st. That until his Excellency, the President of the Republic, shall make an explicit declaration to the effect, that he sanctions and approves of the internal communication between Demerara and this province by the river Cuyuni, or by any other way than that which is established and recognized by the frequented ports, let it be understood that such means of communication are prohibited; and that in no manner whatever, and under no possible pretext, will expeditions of any description, or travellers of any class who come to the province from other directions, be permitted to enter.

2nd. That the Governor of Demerara, and British subjects of the said colony, be at the same time given to understand that the Venezuelan consul, there resident, is not authorized to issue passports for Venezuela to any save citizens of the Republic, and consequently that those which he may issue to any individuals not Venezuelans, will not be recognized or received.

3rd. That this Government is prepared to maintain and give full effect to the regulations decreed on this subject, until his Excellency, the Execu-

**No. 98.**

tive Power, shall have pronounced his decision thereon, in answer to the instructions which have been demanded of him.

In bringing these regulations to your knowledge, which I have also communicated to the Vice-Consul of Her Britannic Majesty in this capital, I may be allowed to express the hope that, though the Government has found itself, in the fulfilment of its duty, compelled to decree them, they may not in any way be regarded as hostile to the traffic, and communication with that colony, which, on the contrary, it is my desire to protect, as long as it is carried on, as is right and proper, through the frequented ports of the Republic."

**No. 99.**

**Report of W. H. Holmes and W. H. Campbell as to an Expedition via the Waini, Barama and Cuyuni to the Orinoco, 1857.**

[From "Royal Gazette," Georgetown, British Guiana, Tuesday, December 10, 1857.]

On the 27th of August last we sailed from the River Demerara in the Colonial Revenue schooner *Pheasant* and anchored at 5 o'clock on the following afternoon at the mouth of the Waini, the position of which is laid down by Schomburgk in lat. 8 deg., 25 min N. and long. 59 deg., 35 min. W.

From soundings taken on entering the river, and from a subsequent survey by Capt. Lyng; we find that the Waini has from 15 to 18 feet water on its bar at spring tide, and would be, consequently, practicable for vessels carrying timber cargoes. This subject, however, is more particularly alluded to in our report to the Pilotage Committee, of which a copy is annexed.

On the morning of the 29th August, owing to the heaviness of the rains and fullness of the river, we found that the schooner would not swing to the flood tide; we therefore, deemed it necessary to proceed to the river Barima to procure the assistance of Indians for ascending the Waini, a trip we were not disinclined to undertake, as it enabled us to examine the Mora Creek, a natural navigable canal connecting the mouth of the Waini with the river Barima, some 50 or 60 miles from where the latter falls into the Orinoco. This channel, about 8 miles in length, is of sufficient depth and width, were it cleared of stumps and fallen trees, to enable colony craft to navigate from the one to the other; and the magnificent timber with which the banks of the Barima and its tributaries abound could thus be easily transported to the mouth of the Waini for shipment. Having obtained a crew of four Warrau Indians, and the spring tide coming on, we were enabled to carry our preconcerted arrangement for meeting Mr. M'Clintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks, at a rocky island about 70 miles up the Waini, on the 4th September. Mr. M'Clintock made his way to this point accompanied by about 20 Indians from the Moruca,

**No. 99.**

through creeks forming an inland navigation of about 100 miles. On the 6th of September, we left the schooner at the mouth of the river Barama, the main tributary of the Waini, and embarked in four canoes with our provisions and "negotia."\* Owing to the rapid current of the Barama and its extraordinary windings, it took us 7 days (6th to 12th inclusive) hard paddling to reach the great Dowaicama Cataract, which has a perpendicular fall of some 30 feet, connected with a series of rapids. Here we had to haul our craft over a portage of about a mile, which caused us considerable delay. On the 15th September we reached an Indian path leading from the Barama to the Cuyuni; but before leaving the former river, we think it right to call attention to the inexhaustible stores of the finest timber which cover the banks of the Waini and Barama for upwards of 200 miles, amongst which may be specially mentioned bullet tree, black mora, of enormous size and excellent quality; silverbaltz and red cedar; one tree of this description we found floating in the river, the trunk of which, so far as seen, measured 80 feet in length, with a girth of 11 feet 4 inches at 20 feet from the base. Indeed, it may be said that the Waini and its tributaries run through interminable forests of timber, and the same may be stated of the Barima and its tributaries, connected as they are with the Waini by the Mora Creek. Sir R. Schomburgk, after having visited the greater part of British Guiana, reports: "In all my former travels, I have nowhere seen trees so gigantic as on the lands adjoining the Barima in its upper course." On the 16th September we commenced our march overland to the Cuyuni. Owing to our guides leading us from one Indian settlement to another, we were 12 days reaching the river. We were further delayed by having to carry all our luggage, now reduced to the smallest possible compass, besides provisions for several days for ourselves and the Indians, as we were uncertain of obtaining supplies on the Cuyuni. The paths were tolerably good in most places, and the underwood of the forest was not of the tangled nature of that of the lower or coast regions. The country was undulating, with a constant succession of hill and dale. The hills seldom exceeded from two to three hundred feet in height, and from the appearance of the soil would be admirably adapted for the cultivation of cocoa, coffee and other tropical products. Although we were delayed so long in crossing from the Barama to the Cuyuni, we have reason to believe that were a direct path cut across from river to river, the distance could easily be accomplished in two or three days' moderate walking. On the afternoon of the 26th September we reached the banks of the Cuyuni, a magnificent stream about 500 or 600 yards in breadth, even at this distance from its mouth, and some 200 miles from the ocean. Although the river had considerably fallen from its highest level, it still contained a considerable body of water. Its course was generally east and west. Rapids, though

---

\* Merchandise and trinkets employed in lieu of money for payment of the Indians.

**No. 99.**

not very extensive, were numerous, causing much delay either in hauling over or avoiding them by selecting the smaller and less direct channels, as it almost invariably happened in such localities that the stream of the river was broken by numerous islands. On reaching the Cuyuni we were met by an Accawi Indian whom we had previously despatched from our party. He was accompanied by several of the same tribe inhabiting the banks of the river, who furnished us on reasonable terms with a small fleet of wood skins, of which we usually had seven. As all our baggage and provisions had to be carried on the overland journey by Indians, we were obliged to leave behind the greater part of the heavier stores, and consequently had to depend on our guns and the aid of the Indians for a supply of animal food. We were tolerably successful in obtaining, as we went along, game of various descriptions, and some fish; but our hurried progress did not allow us much time for hunting and fishing. Fortunately our Indians were not difficult to please with regard to animal food, and were satisfied with an ample meal of alligator, guana, or other "Bush meat," not very acceptable to the European palate. On the first of October we passed the mouth of the Curumo, a large tributary which falls into the Cuyuni on the left bank of the river. This stream would have been by far our shortest route to Tupuquen, as it flows from the high savannah lands that extend from about the 60th degree of longitude to the banks of the Orinoco, and runs not far from the village Tumeremo, which is distant only about 30 miles from the diggings at Caratal, but we were unable to take this route from the quantity of fallen trees which obstructed the channel. If this river proves to be our territory, British Guiana will possess a large tract of the savanna or table lands so admirably adopted for the pasturage of cattle, and it is to its banks, in our opinion, that any road from this colony should be directed, which would thus at once open to us that immense grazing country whose only outlet for its herds at present is the Orinoco, from which and from the Essequibo it is nearly equidistant. On the 30th September we fell in with the first hills approximating to mountains. They gradually developed themselves into the Ekreku range, reaching a height of some 2,000 feet, and near the base of which we passed on the 2d October. The scenery here was very striking, the climate genial, the river rapid and sparkling, and its waters excellent. The sea or easterly breeze set in about 10 o'clock in the forenoon and continued to blow all day. The nights were generally calm, but there was a dryness of atmosphere we never experienced in any other part of Guiana, and it was the opinion of our lamented colleague, Dr. Blair, that the banks of the upper Cuyuni are well adapted for European settlers. All the way up the Barama, and on our journey across to the Cuyuni, we observed large quantities of quartz which, with granite and gneiss, formed the principal features of the geological structure of the country. The quantity of quartz gradually increased, and on reaching the Ekreku Creek, which falls into the Cuyuni, on the right bank, we found its bottom composed of coarse white quartz

**No. 99.**

sand or gravel. We could also observe what appeared to be quartz, cropping out from the neighboring hills, and we have reason to think that if we had had sufficient experience and time to make the requisite examination, gold might have been discovered in this neighbourhood. Having for twelve days worked our way up a part of the river Cuyuni, so rarely visited by Europeans, and we believe never before described, on the morning of the 7th of October we reached the river Yuruan, and left the Cuyuni, which was still some 300 yards wide, trending to the southwest, whilst the Yuruan, about 200 yards wide, took a westerly direction. After paddling about eight miles up the Yuruan, we reached the Yuruari, about 150 yards wide at its mouth. The former river continued its westerly course, whilst the Yuruari took nearly a northerly direction. We were here struck by the contrast in the color of the waters of the two rivers. The stream of the Yuruan was a deep rich brown, and very clear, whilst that of the Yuruari was the colour of milk and water, or white clay, and has the character of being far from wholesome. It contains at any rate a large amount of earthy matter in suspension. At first the stream of Yuruari was very still and smooth, but ere long we met with a succession of rapids continuing all the way to Tupuquen, exceeding in number and strength of current those of the Cuyuni. Here too we were met by a plague of sand flies that gave us little rest during the day; indeed they seemed most virulent in the hottest sunshine. On the 9th October, we reached the first savanna; it had lately been burned by the Indians for the purpose of securing as they informed us, the land Turtles. It was a grassy wilderness without the sign of animal life. An Accawai Indian had built his house on the top of a hill, commanding a fine and extensive view, and thousands of acres of pasture lands were lying before us totally unoccupied. For many miles the Yuruari was bounded on either side by savanna land, with a narrow strip of bush lining its banks. As we approached Tupuquen we fell in occasionally with cattle farms, most of which had formerly belonged to the late Colonel Hamilton, who owned a vast tract in this neighbourhood. In some instances the proprietors resided on their own lands, in others the farms were managed by major-domos. The number of cattle said to be on each farm was very large, from 10,000 to 20,000, but that anything like this number would be actually available, we are not at all prepared to assert. On the 13th October, about midday, we reached the landing place of Tupuquen, the village being situated half a mile from the river. We were here met by a Mr. Gray, son of a former cattle proprietor of this colony. He conducted us to Tupuquen and introduced us to the Alcalde, who combined the vocation of Judge and Magistrate with that of keeper of an eating house and grog shop. We were politely received, and no questions were put to us. The Alcalde was apparently satisfied that we had no hostile intentions, as he procured us lodgings, and entertained us for a consideration. The village of Tupuquen consists of some 50 or 60 mud tenements, covered with Tiles, hardly



**No. 99.**

worthy of the name of houses. It formerly constituted one of the 32 missions into which this part of the country was divided, under the old Spanish regime, and each of which was presided over by a Capuchin friar. The revolution upset this order of things, and although the houses nominally belong to the Indians, they are now mostly appropriated by other occupants whom the attractions of the diggings have drawn to this otherwise out of the way spot. On the morning of the 14th October we started for the diggings at Caratal. After crossing the Yuruari, a sharp walk of about two hours through the forest, over hill and dale, brought us to a village consisting of about fifty thatched logies, varying in size from a mere hut to that of an ordinary house. As these buildings were mostly without walls, and open all round, it speaks well for the honesty of the diggers that thefts were almost unknown. The number of people congregated it was difficult to ascertain; they were variously estimated at from about 120 to 200, the latter number being the outside. The diggings are situated in the primitive forest, and consist of a number of holes or pits dug by individuals or small companies. There are no stringent laws for the regulation of this community. Each individual is at liberty to select any unappropriated spot and to commence operations. There are few external indications of the probability of success, except that gold had been dug out in the immediate vicinity, and even this was not a safe criterion, as although the precious metal might be found in one hole, the adjoining spots, although almost touching, often prove blanks. The method of proceeding is as follows: A piece of ground, say 8 feet by 20, having been selected, the miner, in the first instance, has to clear off the bush and generally to dig out a forest tree of considerable size. Having removed the upper soil he arrives at a harder subsoil, which has to be loosened with a pickaxe previous to being shoveled out. At times, after getting down some 7 or 8 feet, water takes possession of his pit; at others he meets with solid rock; in either case his labor has been thrown away; but if his speculation has a mere fortunate aspect, he falls in at an average depth of from 10 to 15 feet with what is technically called the "Graja," or a layer of earth, clay, quartz, and iron stone, in which stratum, overlying stiff clay, the gold is found. The whole of this layer, generally about a foot in thickness, must be carefully thrown out on the bank; and having been collected in a mass, has to be taken in sacks on the back about a quarter of a mile to the nearest water, then to be washed, parcel after parcel, in a cradle; to do which, the miner must sit up to his middle in water. If fortune favors him (for it is quite a lottery), after washing away a cradleful of soil, he may find some particles of small nuggets of gold; but frequently it is all in vain, and cradleful after cradleful disappears without a sign of the precious metal. It is hard to say how long it would take an individual to go through the whole operation of clearing, digging and washing, but, on an average, it would require three weeks' hard labor, and it is still more difficult to say what the result would be.

**No. 99.**

The proportions are about six blanks to one substantial prize. There is, however, no denying that at times the reward is great. If Caratal were a healthy place, perhaps the chances of success might be a sufficient inducement for an industrious, persevering man to try his fortune; but endemic disease prevails to a great extent. We did not meet a single individual who had not suffered more or less from fever, and many from "beche," or inflammation of the lower bowels, which is supposed by the miners to be induced by the inferior quality of the only water in the neighborhood. There is no medical advice to be had even at Tupuquen, and medicine, if procurable at all, was only so at exorbitant prices—a bit, or 4d. a grain being the retail price of quinine of dubious quality. The only food obtainable is beef and cassava bread; and as meat keeps so short a time, fresh beef was not often to be had. The usual food of the miners is tasso or beef dried in the sun, a most unpalatable and unwholesome article of diet, for, as little salt (an expensive condiment in Venezuela) is used, the meat is generally much tainted. On the whole, taking into consideration the labor, the sickness, the want of medicine and medical advice, the insufficient and innutritious food, the vermin (the "diggings" abound in fleas, chigoes, *bête rogue*, ticks and ground itch), and the total absence of ordinary comforts, we do not hesitate to say it would be an act of folly in an industrious man to leave this colony for the "diggings," even were success in the search for gold much more certain than it is. But how much more is it to be deprecated when, from all we could learn, and we took considerable pains to ascertain, we really believe a larger average day's wages could be earned on any estate in the Colony than could, under the present circumstances, be made by digging at Caratal. We met several individuals—natives of this Colony and of the British West India Islands—who bitterly lamented having left their homes. Some of these, with shattered health, and in debt, were unable to undertake a journey requiring twelve or fifteen days' walking to reach Las Tablas, the port of embarkation on the river Orinoco, and seemed to be hopelessly awaiting their fate at Caratal. As our journey to Caratal had taken a much longer time than we anticipated we were most anxious to push on so as to hasten our return to Georgetown. We therefore remained only two days at the diggings, and although our Indians, under the superintendence of Mr. M'Clintock, had commenced to dig a "barranca," as the pits are technically called, we did not await the result, and left when they had got down about eight or ten feet. Before leaving, we picked up several specimens of quartz rock containing particles of gold, also a few pieces of the same rock with small particles of a white metal supposed to be platina. On the 18th October, having hired three horses for ourselves, (wretched animals for which we were charged an exorbitant price) four donkeys for baggage and servants, and a mounted guide, we started for the town of Upata. In crossing the wide savannah it would have been impossible to have proceeded without a guide, as our path was

**No. 99.**

little more marked than by the numerous cattle tracks that crossed it in every direction. We were much struck with the park-like scenery of the country; hills at least 1,500 feet high, covered with verdure to the very tops, here and there clumps of trees dotted the plain, whose well defined background consisted of more extensive woods; such was the landscape all the way to the village of Guacipata, where on the 19th October, we put up for the night. We were most hospitably received by the wife of Senhor Miranda, who, in the absence of her husband, offered us the best her house afforded, and declined any remuneration. It may not be amiss here to state that in a country where inns are unknown, and where travellers are consequently thrown on the kindness of the inhabitants, we were most cordially received, and although their ordinary food, tasso and cassava bread, was most unpalatable to us, it was produced with good will and in abundance for ourselves and servants. It is strange that in a cattle country such as we were now traversing milk and cheese are but rarely used, the former, as they allege, predisposing to fever, while butter is unknown. The village of Guacipata is another of the missions previously alluded to. Here the Church, a building 150 feet in length by 50 in width is in tolerable preservation; the dwellings of the monks also still remain, and judging by the extent of the accommodation, the numerous offices, workshops, looms, kitchens, and refectories, not forgetting that ancient institution the village stocks, the venerable Fathers, surrounded by a large obedient Indian population, must have enjoyed a great degree of prosperity. Traditionary scandal tells odd stories as to their being no easy task-masters, and of conventual vows not being rigorously observed. It also reports that they were not ignorant of the existence of gold in this vicinity, and that large sums were remitted by them to the authorities under the old Spanish monarchy. From Guacipata it took us four days slow riding, as we had to wait for the donkeys and baggage, to reach Upata. The scenery continued much the same, hill and dale, verdure and wood, with mountains in the distance. On one side was the continuation of the Caratal hills, on the other the Nuria range extending for many miles. They all bespoke from their formation and appearance volcanic agency. The whole country abounds in quartz. The sides of the hills were frequently covered with masses of this rock of the purest white, which reminded us of Sir Walter Raleigh's description, where he characterises them as blocks of "white spar el madre del oro." At a distance they often resembled the groupings of large flocks of sheep! The whole region is one continued tract of pasture land, with frequent water courses, and although the herbage is rather coarse, it is, apparently, admirably adapted for cattle. The number we saw was comparatively small, but they all looked sleek, and if not fat, appeared thriving and healthy. We passed about half a dozen farm houses on our route, and either breakfasted or slept at several of them. The "Hacienda" or farm called Para Para, struck us as a favourable specimen;

**No. 99.**

besides some 20 or 30,000 head of cattle, and 100 horses, the owner had several acres of sugar cane and tobacco under cultivation. His house, built of mud, as all the houses are in this province, was exclusive. The offices included a sugar mill and boiling house. The mill consisted of three upright wooden rollers propelled by animal power, he had two teaches in his copper wall, and made his 300 "papillons" or loaves of brown sugar in a day. The sugar is run into moulds cut in a block of wood, and by boiling high he manages to set the whole of his liquor, which is thus concentrated into the papillon, leaving no residuum. His tobacco crop had just been reaped; it seemed of good quality, and must be in much demand, as men, women and children are all inveterate smokers in Venezuela. He valued his cattle all round at about 10 "pesos" or \$8 per head, and this price would include the farm house and all its adjuncts. The tenure of land in this part of Venezuela is rarely freehold; any person can apply for unoccupied land, and on its being surveyed, can obtain a license of occupancy on payment of a small sum annually to government; he then proceeds to stock it with cattle, or to cultivate it, and except in the event of a revolution is rarely disturbed in any way. On the 22d October we reached the town of Upata, which has the most thriving appearance of any place we saw on our route. It is composed of about a dozen streets of one story tiled houses, but there is an air of prosperity about it, arising chiefly from the traffic which has sprung up to the diggings, all property and merchandise destined for Tupuquen passing through Upata. Here, for the first time, we came in contact with the local authorities, a gentleman from the municipality required to see our papers, and although we demonstrated to him that everything was according to rule, he appeared hardly satisfied. Indeed, the most extraordinary stories were in circulation as to our intentions. It was currently reported that the English government was about to seize on the Province and intended to drive out every Venezuelan. His Excellency, Governor Marmol, condescended to listen to these fables, and addressed the Upata militia, who were called out on the occasion, in the most patriotic terms, on the necessity of protecting their houses and families. This force is not of a formidable nature; a few old-fashioned muskets were all the firearms produceable, and of these but five or six went off when a feu-de-joie was ordered. It appeared that the Governor had left directions both at Upata and Las Tablas that we should be required to proceed to Bolivar, to report ourselves to the authorities, but having ordered that no force should be used we declined the invitation, more particularly as the Governor himself was on his way to Tupuquen. On the 22d October we left Upata and breakfasted with Senhor Pedro Maria Nunes, who is married to a lady, a creole of this Colony. In the forenoon we explored, under the guidance of Mr. Dranger, of Upata, a hill opposite to Senhor Nunes' residence, apparently composed of a mass of what seemed

**No. 99.**

to be almost pure iron.\* The country between Upata and Las Tablas is very mountainous and woody and the grazing lands are more contracted. We, however, passed several cattle farms. On the third day, October 5th, we reached Las Tablas, a village situated on the river Orinoco, of some 40 or 50 mud houses, partly tiled and partly thatched. We were most hospitably received by Mr. Behrens, whose house is the principal mercantile firm of the Province. The distance by the route we travelled from Tupuquen to Las Tablas we estimated at 150 miles. There is a somewhat shorter road by Pastora. Las Tablas is not a port of entry, and derives its importance chiefly as the place whence a large number of cattle are shipped; and being the nearest point on the river Orinoco to Upata, all merchandise passes through it on its way to town. On the 26th October we started in a hired corial for Barancas, and reached that place after 12 hours hard pulling in an open boat. We remained there one day (27) having been kindly offered by Mr. Burnett a passage in the *Loyal* (a cattle vessel trading to Cayenne) to Point Barima, where the *Pheasant* was waiting for us. Barancas is situated on the left bank of the Orinoco, and the river falls off here nearly 40 feet between the months of July and December. The town is surrounded by lagoons connected with the river. These were in the process of drying up and the inhabitants were suffering much from fever. As up to this point not one of the expedition had suffered from a day's ill health, it must be inferred that here were sown the seeds of that fever which, in the case of our lamented colleague, Dr. Blair, terminated so fatally. Both ourselves and servants were laid up with fever, and suffered much during a three day's passage down the Orinoco from Barancas to the mouth of the river Barima. Dr. Blair alone had so far escaped. On the morning of the 31st October we reached the *Pheasant*, lying off point Barima, and we all felt the greatest satisfaction in joining her. She was clean and exceedingly comfortable for a vessel of her tonnage. In the evening we took advantage of the ebb tide to get under way, and next morning, Sunday, the 1st November, we were off the mouth of the Waini. About 10 o'clock Dr. Blair was seized with what he considered congestion of the lungs, and bled himself; he had two relapses; on each occasion he reopened the vein; extreme exhaustion came on, and continued until our arrival in Georgetown at 4 A. M. on the 5th November, after an absence of exactly ten weeks. The fatal termination of his illness on the 9th is too recent and too melancholy to require further notice or comment in this place. Here, however, we may be allowed to remark that our late colleague was the soul of the Expedition; his fine, clear intellect, his analyzing and observant mind, enabled him to arrive at rapid as well as just conclusions. He

---

\* A specimen having been submitted to Dr. Shier for examination, he has ascertained it to be "Brown Hematite," a very rich iron ore. Mr. Draeger informed us that immense quantities of this ore are to be found on the mountains for 20 or 40 miles on each side of Upata.

**No. 99.**

was struck with the great natural capabilities of the upper Cuyuni, with its beautiful scenery and genial climate, and although we were 10 days paddling up that river, so varied was the landscape that each day's journey was looked forward to with pleasure. At the diggings at Caratal Dr. Blair was beset by invalids for advice, which he invariably and gratuitously offered. Our small stock of medicines rapidly disappeared, and it is even possible that if he had not given away the last dose of Quinine to a sufferer at Barancas, his own most valuable life might have been saved. We cannot conclude this report without alluding to the Indian population inhabiting the country between the rivers Pomeroon and Amacuru, the Atlantic Ocean and the river Cuyuni. Mr. McClintock, a good authority, as he made a census of the Indian population some years back, estimates their number at about 2,500. During our expedition, we at various times had with us from 30 to 40 Indians of five different tribes. We found them invariably truthful and honest; during eight weeks that they were with us, we never missed the most trifling article. They were assiduous and willing, easily satisfied as to food, and we have much pleasure in recording our unqualified satisfaction with their conduct. It must not, however, be forgotten that they were under the supervision of Mr. McClintock, who for many years has been Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks for the Pomeroon and adjacent districts. The unbounded confidence which the Indian population repose in this gentleman speaks well for both parties, and no doubt they have acquired this feeling by many years' experience, during which Mr. M'Clintock has been their Protector. We may add that in the event of a road being cut, as previously suggested, to the savannah land in the neighbourhood of the Curumu, a large band of laborers, skilful in bushwork, could easily be collected from the Indian tribes in the Waini and its tributaries, peculiarly qualified for that description of employment.

---

**No. 100.**

**Extract from Report of James Shanks, Surveyor, to William Walker, Lieutenant-Governor of British Guiana, and the Court of Policy, as to an expedition up the Mazaruni and Yuruari, 1857.**

[From "Royal Gazette," Georgetown, British Guiana, Thursday, December 26, 1857.]

That your reporter did agreeably to your Excellency's written instructions leave Georgetown, on Saturday night, the 3d October last past, having in company Mr. Horne, Inspector of Police, and Mr. Hitzler, and arrived at the Penal Settlement on the Massaruni, on the Monday night following, with all the stores for the expedition and four batteaus. Your reporter expected to find four more ready at the settlement, but there

**No. 100.**

were only two, one of them requiring repairs. Mr. van der Heyden, in charge of the craft, said that he had been sent on other duty by Mr. Cartwright; two other corials had therefore to be bought, and the one requiring repairs put into the carpenter's hands, thus two days were lost. At 8 o'clock on Thursday morning, the 8th October, the expedition started from Calicoon, Mr. Horne having obtained ten convicts and a guard from the penal settlement, and Mr. van der Heyden sixteen Essequibo creoles, known as Bovianders, and three Indians. A few more Indians were picked up afterwards on the way. Your reporter, with Mr. van der Heyden as captain, led through the Cuyuni to the mouth of the Yuruwan and a little way up it to the Yuruari on to Tupuquen, where the party arrived on the 15th November following, at 10 o'clock A. M. near the gold diggings at the Caratal, so called from the Carat (the Ita palm), which abounds there, but in a very stunted form. Your reporter took down every turn, rapid, fall, and visible creek on the way, all which will appear by a diagram which we will prepare in a reasonable time. He may state here, at once, that Sir Robert Schomburgk makes our boundary intersect the Cuyuni at the mouth of the Aunama Creek, in longitude 59 deg. 26 min. west, where there is a path to the Massaruni River, but your reporter marked it at 60 deg. 20 min. west longitude, near to the Anococo Creek, at a small settlement of Carib Indians, where Sir William Holmes and party called, and where Mr. McClintock has marked his name on a tree. The Carabisce Creek, through which that party entered the Cuyuni, is close by. Arrived at Tupuquen, which is in longitude 61 deg. 54 min. west, your reporter encamped on the left bank of the Yuruari, same side as Tupuquen, about three quarters of a mile from that village, which was an old Mission of the Spaniards, but is now very much dilapidated, the convent itself being in ruins.

No. 101.

List of Woodcutting Licenses and Grants of Occupancy in Demerara and Essequibo, existing December 31, 1857.

[From "Royal Gazette" of Georgetown, British Guiana, Tuesday, March 23, 1858.]

LISTS OF WOODCUTTING LICENCES AND GRANTS OF OCCUPANCY OF GOVERNMENT LAND IN EXISTENCE IN THE COUNTIES OF DEMERARA AND ESSEQUEBO ON THE 31ST DECEMBER, 1857.

Names of Grantees.	Extent in Acres.	Locality.	Date of Grant.	Amount per Annum.
Thomas Blair .....	300	Right Bank Mibirie Creek, Waratillo.....	7th Feb., 1858.	\$48 0
Manuel d'Ornellas & Juana Abrilo.....	500	Left Bank Tenabos Creek .....	8th Apl., 1858.	80 0
Herman Kersting .....	300	Both Banks Courousbarro Creek .....	20th Apl., 1853.	48 0
Joseph Hubbard .....	500	Ditto Ditto Hinarie Creek.....	28th May, 1853.	80 0
Eleutherio Varela.....	300	Ditto Ditto Miberie Creek.....	25th May, 1853.	48 0
Antonio Parara.....	300	Ditto Ditto Waratilla Creek.....	28th May, 1858.	48 0
Samuel Rodie.....	1,000	West Bank Demerary River.....	30th Dec., 1853.	120 0
John Bremmer.....	500	Wynblacie Creek .....	1st Feb., 1854.	80 0
James Stewart.....	300	Howersakoboera Creek.....	16 Mch., 1854.	48 0
Hendrick Pauli.....	500	L. B. Demerary River above the rapids Comounie .....	3rd Apl., 1854.	96 0
Alexander Duff.....	500	Right Bank Hyama Creek.....	19th Apl., 1854.	80 0
Hugh Fraser.....	300	Haan s Creek, branch of the Poorora.....	3rd June, 1854.	80 0
Thomas Watson.....	612	Both Banks Oracooys Creek .....	18th July, 1854.	97 22
Manuel de Sero.....	500	West Bank Yaurcabers ditto.....	31st July, 1854.	80 00
Oatharine King.....	300 30	Both Banks ditto.....	2nd Aug., 1854.	48 00
Antonio Veiro Nunes & Andriano Quintal	300	Ducara Creek .....	10th Aug., 1854.	48 00
Henry Murray.....	400	L. B. Demerara River above Campara Rapids.....	19th Sep., 1854.	64 00
Abraham Howard & George Newton.....	285 1/2	Right Bank Hayama Creek.....	2nd Oct., 1854.	52 00
Edward Cox.....	300	L. B. Demerara River above the Rapids... ..	9th Oct., 1854.	48 00
Henry Murray.....	400	L. B. Demerara River below Coomoparo Rapids .....	9th Oct., 1854.	64 00
Eleutherio Varela.....	500 1/2	Right Bank Miberie Creek.....	20th Nov., 1854.	80 00
Antonio Debrae .....	300	North Bank Hayama ditto.....	18th Jan., 1855.	48 00
Benjamin A. Blount.....	300	South Side Hibibel Creek .....	22nd Jan., 1855.	48 00
Alexander Duff.....	500	Both Banks Hinarie Creek.....	22nd Jan., 1855.	96 00
William Alty.....	500	L. B. Demerara River above the Rapids... ..	1st Mch., 1855.	80 00
George Couchman .....	300	R. B. Demerara River above the Rapids... ..	1st Apl., 1855.	68 00
William Branch Pollard .....	450	Both Banks Waratilla Creek, Camassai.....	18th Apl., 1855.	72 00
Pellicarpo De Franco & Jose Rodrigues... ..	300	Left Bank Yaurcabers Creek .....	20th Apl., 1855.	48 00
Charles Couchman .....	572	R. B. Demerara River above the Rapids... ..	11th June, 1855.	128 22
Jose de Freitas.....	500	Kariaconeror Creek Koolartecraboe Creek .....	26th June, 1855.	80 00
Francis Ferreira.....	300	Western Bank Mahaloony Creek.....	8th Oct., 1855.	48 00
Richard Stephen.....	499 1/2	Bank of Waratilla.....	14th May, 1855.	80 0
Jose de Freitas.....	300	Karideroneror Creek.....	6th Nov., 1855.	48 0
J. G. Detering.....	400	Yacaruma Creek (Essequibo).....	7th Oct., 1855.	64 0
Francis Forsyth.....	300	Banks of Harriwa Creek.....	20th Dec., 1855.	48 0
Stafford Brittlebank.....	300	Right Bank Demerara River.....	5th Mch., 1857.	48 0
Benjamin Harrison.....	500	Both Banks Himarooni Creek.....	18th Mch., 1857.	80 0
Jane Young.....	451	Left Bank Winespero.....	4th May, 1857.	72 76
A. W. Chappentier.....	508	Both Banks Wary Werry Ocoroe (Essequibo) .....	20th Apl., 1857.	76 28
John Outridge.....	368	Right Bank Demerara River .....	6th May, 1857.	58 56
John Bremmer.....	300	Left Bank Coreta Creek, Demerara River.. ..	10th Sep., 1857.	48 0
Benjamin Harrison & Peter Peters.....	500	West Bank Camoonie Creek .....	11th Sep., 1857.	80 0
Benjamin A. Blount.....	300	West Bank Hiliboa Creek.....	12th Oct., 1857.	48 0
Charles Spencer.....	300	Left Bank Eheboc Creek .....	12th Oct., 1857.	48 0
R. W. Peake.....	300	L. B. Demerara River above the Rapids... ..	13th Oct., 1857.	48 0
William Cameron.....	300	R. B. Demerara River below the Rapids... ..	21st Sep., 1857.	48 0
J. G. Detering.....	500	Both Banks Yararuma (Essequibo).....	17th Oct., 1857.	96 0
Francis Gomes.....	300	Right Bank Madawine.....	17th Oct., 1857.	48 0
Joan Vieira.....	300	Right Bank Arabadamy Zenabo.....	17th Oct., 1857.	48 0
Christina Preeg.....	300	Right Bank Demerara River .....	24th Oct., 1857.	48 0
Mary Anna Stand.....	300	Head of Hyama Creek.....	24th Oct., 1857.	48 0
John S. Shaw.....	300	Right Bank Demerara River .....	10th Nov., 1857.	48 0
J. Brittlebank & A. V. B. Cameron.....	500	Both Banks Upper Winesperoo Creek.....	10th Nov., 1857.	96 0
Jose Ignacio da Silva.....	500	Both Banks Ducara Creek, Madawine.....	10th Nov., 1857.	96 0
James & William Mansfield.....	300	Left Bank Camawary Creek.....	10th Nov., 1857.	48 0
Antonina Pereira.....	400	Left Bank Demerara River, Waratilla Creek .....	18th May, 1857.	64 0
John de Govia.....	500	Left Bank Cassa Ouya Creek.....	30th Dec., 1856.	96 0
M. R. Embleton.....	300	Haymurra Creek (Essequibo).....	1st July, 1856.	48 0
Joseph Stass.....	400	Left Bank Demerara River.....	28th Dec., 1857.	64 0
Jane Young.....	300	Left Bank Demerara River.....	28th Dec., 1857.	48 0



## No. 101.

## GRANTS OF OCCUPANCY DURING HER MAJESTY'S PLEASURE.

Names of Grantees.	Extent in Acres.	Locality.	Date of Grant.	Amount per Annum.
H. W. Bennett.....	27	Second Island, Demerara River.....	29th Dec., 1834.	\$1 25
H. S. Turton.....	0	Tract of Land, East Coast Demerara.....	June, 1835.	1 0
R. H. L. Becker.....	0	Ditto Ditto.....	30th July, 1835.	1 0
Francis Chauguon.....	0	Ditto Brick Dam, Stabroek.....	18th Nov., 1835.	1 0
Federica Albors.....	66	East Bank Camconie Creek.....	18th Feb., 1863.	2 20
Proprietors of Ptn. Glasgow.....	260	In the rear of Ptn. Glasgow.....	8th Sep., 1838.	5 25
Ditto Ptn. Great Diamond.....	25	Right Bank Demerara River.....	15 h Feb., 1854.	4 0
Ditto Ptn. Farm Demerara River.....	13 240	East Bank Demerara River.....	8th Oct., 1854.	1 20

## WOOD-CUTTING LICENSES IN THE COUNTY OF ESSEQUIBO FOR FIVE YEARS EACH.

Names of Grantees.	Extent in Acres.	Locality.	Date of Grant.	Amount per Annum.
Thomas Forrester.....	200	Ouruduny Creek, Arooary Creek.....	11th Dec., 1854.	\$46 0
John Cousler.....	200	Commencing at Cocmariepio Creek. ....	8th June, 1855.	45 9
Louis Brunninghausen.....	533½	Both Banks Morabally Creek.....	26th July, 1855.	85 25

## GRANTS OF OCCUPANCY DURING HER MAJESTY'S PLEASURE.

Names of Grantees.	Extent in Acres.	Locality.	Date of Grant.	Amount per Annum.
Duncan Clark.....	0	Tiger Creek.....	5th July, 1831.	\$110 0
Idem.....	400	Acaraioroo Island.....	20th Feb., 1835.	20 0
James Scott.....	100	Eastern Bank Massaroonie River.....	12th Feb., 1838.	2 23½
James Ansdale.....	100	Ditto ditto ditto.....	6th Oct., 1838.	2 23½
James M'Pharlane.....	1	Simirie Hill.....	20th Dec., 1853.	Free.
Charles Ward.....	.....	Island of Kykoverall.....	1st Jan., 1854.	1 0

## No. 102.

## List of Grantees in Arrears of Woodcutting Licenses and Grants of Occupancy of Government Land in Essequibo and Demerara, March 11, 1858.

[From "Royal Gazette" of Georgetown, British Guiana, Tuesday, March 23, 1858.]

## LIST OF GRANTEES IN ARREARS OF WOODCUTTING LICENCES AND GRANTS OF OCCUPANCY OF GOVERNMENT LAND, COUNTY OF DEMERARA.

Names of Grantees.	Locality.	Number of Years Due.	Amount.
Hugh Fraser.....	Haans Creek, Osmoenie Creek.....	1 year to 3d June, 1858	\$50 00
Jacobus Peters.....	Carouabarro Creek.....	2 years to 4th June, 1858	96 00
Proprietors of Plantation Glasgow.....	In the rear of Plantation Glasgow.....	15 " 8th Sep., 1858	125 00
Proprietors of Plantation Farm.....	East Bank, Demerary River.....	1 year to 8th Oct., "	122 30
W. O. Boach and William Schults.....	Tenaboe Creek.....	2 years to 3d Nov., 1858	160 00
Manoel d'Ornelas and Juan d'Abreis.....	Left Bank Tenaboe Creek.....	1 year to 8th Apl., 1858	48 00
Eleantherio Varela.....	Both Banks Miberie Creek.....	1 " 25th May, "	48 00
Samuel Rodie.....	West Bank Demerara River.....	1 " 30th Dec., "	120 00
Hendrick Pauli.....	Left B. E. Demerara River, above the Rapids.....	1 " 3d Apl. "	96 00
Thomas Watson.....	Both Banks, Oracoeya Creek.....	2 years to 12th July, "	185 84
Catherine King.....	Both Banks, Yauracalera Creek.....	1 year to 3d Aug., "	48 00
Henry Murray.....	L. B. Demerara River, above Oomspara Rapids.....	1 " 19th Sep., "	64 00
Edward Cox.....	L. B. Demerara River, above the Rapids... ..	1 " 9th Oct., "	48 00
Henry Murray.....	L. B. Demerara River, above Oomspara River.....	1 " 9th Oct., "	64 00
Eleantherio Varela.....	Riget Bank, Miberie Creek.....	1 " 30th Nov., "	80 00
William Alty.....	L. B. Demerara River, above the Rapids.. ..	1 " 1st Moh., "	80 00
William Branch Polard.....	Both Banks Waratilla Creek, Osmoenie.....	1 " 18th Apl., "	72 00
Francis Pereira.....	West Bank, Mahaicoony Creek.....	2 years to 8th Oct., "	96 00
Jose de Freitas.....	Karisero-amoroo Creek.....	1 year to 6th Nov., "	48 00
Francis Forsyth.....	Banks of Harriwa Creek.....	1 " 28th Dec., "	48 00
John de Gorla.....	L. B. Cassouga Creek.....	1 " 30th Dec., "	96 00

## LIST OF GRANTEES IN ARREARS OF WOODCUTTING LICENSES AND GRANTS OF OCCUPANCY OF GOVERNMENT LAND, COUNTY OF ESSEQUIBO.

Names of Grantees.	Locality.	Number of Years Due.	Amount.
James Scott.....	East Bank Masseronie River.....	11 years to 12th Feb., 1858	\$26 68
Duncan Clark.....	Acaraloroo Island.....	8 " 20th Feb., "	
Idem.....	Tiger Creek.....	11 " 5th July, "	1,210 00
Charles Ward.....	Island of Kykoverall.....	1 year to 1st May, "	1 00
The Commissioners of the.....	Tapacooma Osaal and Look.....	13 years to June, "	963 28

## LIST OF PARTIES IN ARREARS FOR WOODCUTTING LICENSES AND GRANTS OF OCCUPANCY, ALREADY EXPIRED.

Daniel Sullivan.....	4 years, at \$45 per annum.	\$192 00
William Jeffrey (Osmoenie).....	3 years, 45 "	144 00
Henry Jacobs.....	1 year, 45 "	45 00
James Audsals.....	4 years, 45 "	180 00
Aaron Knight.....	1 year, 45 "	45 00
William Jeffrey.....	4 years, 45 "	180 00
Minors Beard.....	1 year, 45 "	45 00

**No. 103.****Change of boundaries of Essequibo and Demerara and new Subdivision of the Colony; Proclamation of June 22, 1858.**

[From the Official Gazette of British Guiana, Georgetown, Wednesday, June 23, 1858.]

**PROCLAMATION.**

By his Excellency, Philip Edmund Wodehouse, Esquire, Governor and Commander-in-Chief in and over the colony of British Guiana, Vice-Admiral and Ordinary of the same, &c., &c., &c.

Whereas, by the ordinance No. 16 of 1858, it is enacted that the Governor may, with the advice and consent of the Court of Policy, alter the limits of the counties of the colony and likewise divide the colony into Divisions.

Now, therefore, I, with the advice and consent of the Court of Policy, do hereby proclaim that for the purposes of the Ordinance No. 16 of 1858, so much of the County of Essequibo as lies between the Parika Creek and the Boerasirie Creek, shall be taken to be within the County of Demerara.

And I do, with the like advice and consent, further proclaim that the colony shall be divided into the following divisions, that is to say:

**DIVISION No. 1.**—The Arabian Coast, from the Western extremity, including Pomeroun, to Plantation Good Hope, inclusive, and Tiger Island.

**DIVISION No. 2.**—Wakenaam, Leguan, Hog Island, Troolie Island, Fort Island, the settlements in the Supenaam Creek, and on the River Essequibo, on both banks, to the south side of Parika Creek.

**DIVISION No. 3.**—The Parish of St. Luke, from Parika Creek, the Parish of St. Swithin, and the Parish of St. Mark, from the boundary of St. Swithin to Plantation Vive-la-Force, inclusive.

**DIVISION No. 4.**—The west bank of the Demerara river upwards from Plantation Vive-la-Force, and the east bank from the limits of Georgetown, with the settlements on the creeks running into the Demerara river.

**DIVISION No. 5.**—The City of Georgetown and its suburbs.

**DIVISION No. 6.**—The Parish of St. George from Plantation Thomas and the Parish of St. Paul.

**DIVISION No. 7.**—The Parish of St. Mary.

**DIVISION No. 8.**—The Parish of St. Michael, the Parish of St. Catherine, and so much of the Parish of St. Clement as lies to the south of Plantation Highbury with all the settlements on the river Berbice above those Parishes.

**DIVISION No. 9.**—The Town of New Amsterdam, the east Bank of the Berbice River to Plantation Highbury, inclusive, all the settlements on the Canje Creek, and the estates on the left bank of the East Coast Grand Canal.

**DIVISION No. 10.**—The east coast of Berbice from Plantation Seawell inclusive, and all the settlements on the Corentyn river.

**No. 103.**

Given under my hand and seal of office at the Guiana Public Buildings, Georgetown, Demerara, this 22d day of June, 1858, and in the 22d year of Her Majesty's reign.

God save the Queen.

By His Excellency's Command.

WILLIAM WALKER, Gov. Sec.

**No. 104.**

**Division of Colony of British Guiana into Police and Fiscal Districts; proclamation of December 31, 1868.**

[From the Official Gazette of British Guiana, Georgetown, Saturday, January 2, 1869.]

By His Excellency Francis Hincks, Esquire, C. B., Governor and Commander-in-Chief in and over the Colony of British Guiana, Vice-Admiral and Ordinary of the same, &c., &c., &c.

Whereas by Ordinance No. 30 of the present year, it is enacted that "for the purposes of this ordinance the Governor may by Proclamation, to be published in the Official Gazette, divide the Colony into Police and Fiscal Districts."

Now, therefore, I do hereby Proclaim that, for the purposes aforesaid, the Colony shall be and is hereby divided into the following Police and Fiscal Districts.

No. of Districts.	<i>Limits.</i>
1.	The River Pomeroon and its tributaries and islands, and all settlements on the banks of the said river and its tributaries, and on the said islands—as far as the settlements extend—and from the mouth of the said river Pomeroon, to, and inclusive of, the village of Queenstown, in the Parish of St. John.
2.	From and inclusive of Pln. L'Union, in the Parish of St. John, to the Supenaam Creek and the Supenaam Creek and its tributaries, and all settlements on the banks of the said creek and its tributaries, as far as the settlements extend.
3.	Wakenaam Island, in the Parish of St. James, Tiger Island, in the Parish of St. John, and Leguan and Hog Islands in the Parish of St. Peter. Also the Eseequibo river with its tributaries and islands from the Supenaam Creek on its left bank, and the Parika Creek on its right bank, and all plantations and settlements on the banks of the said river and its tributaries, and on the said islands—as far as the settlements extend.
4.	From the Parika Creek, inclusive on the right bank of the river

## No. 104.

No. of  
Districts.

- Essequibo in the Parish of St. Luke, to Pln. Nouvelle-Flandres, inclusive, in the Parish of St. Swithin.
5. From Pln. Best, inclusive, in the Parish of St. Swithin to Pln. Vive-la-Force, inclusive in the Parish of St. Mark, and to include Canals No. 1 and 2.
  6. The river Demerara, from and inclusive of Plantation La Penitence, in the Parish of St. Matthew, on the right bank, and from the southern line of Pln. Vive-la-Force, in the Parish of St. Mark, on the left bank, and the tributaries and islands of the said river, and all plantations and settlements on the banks of the said river and its tributaries, and on the said islands—as far as the settlements extend.
  7. The City of Georgetown, Pln. Vlissingen and Le Repentir, and the Lodge Village.
  8. From Pln. Thomas, inclusive, in the Parish of St. George to Pln. Nooten-Zuyll, inclusive, in the Parish of St. Paul.
  9. The Parish of St. Mary including the left bank of the Abary creek.
  10. The Parish of St. Michael, including the right bank of the Abary creek, and the villages of Zorg-en-Hoop and Ithaca, in the parish of St. Catherine.
  11. The town of New-Amsterdam, the Canje Creek and its tributaries, including all plantations and settlements on the banks thereof and the east coast of Berbice, to and inclusive of Pln. Port-Mourant, in the Parish of St. Saviour.
  12. The Berbice river from and exclusive of the town of New Amsterdam, on its right bank and the village of Ithaca, on its left bank, and the tributaries and islands of the said river and all plantations and settlements on the banks of the said river and its tributaries and on the said islands—as far as the settlements extend.
  13. From Pln. Port Mourant in the Parish of St. Saviour to and inclusive of Pln. Skeldon, and the left bank of the Corentyne river, as far as the settlements extend.

Given under my Hand and the Public Seal of the Colony, at the Guiana Public Buildings, Georgetown, Demerara, this 31st day of December, 1868, and in the 32nd year of Her Majesty's Reign.

GOD SAVE THE QUEEN!

By command,

JAS. R. HOLLIGAN,  
Gov: Secretary.

**No. 105.****Police and Fiscal Districts of British Guiana; Proclamation of July 1, 1873.**

[From The Official Gazette (extraordinary) of British Guiana, Georgetown, Tuesday, July 1, 1873.]

By His Excellency, Edward Everard Rushworth, Esquire, D. C. L., C. M. G., Administrator of the Colony of British Guiana.

Whereas by Ordinance No. 6, of the present year it is enacted, that the Governor may by Proclamation abolish the present Police and Fiscal Districts and establish Fiscal Districts:

Now, therefore, I do Proclaim that I do hereby abolish the Police and Fiscal Districts into which the Colony was divided by the Proclamation of His Excellency the Governor, dated the thirty-first day of December, one thousand eight hundred and sixty-eight, and further that I do hereby establish the following Fiscal Districts:—

**North Essequibo Coast.**—From the River Morucca, including all settlements on the right bank of the said river, as far as the settlements extend, and from the mouth of the said river Morucca, to and inclusive of the left bank of the Capoey Creek.

**South Essequibo Coast.**—From the left bank of the Capoey Creek, to and inclusive of the Supenaam Creek, and all settlements on the banks of the said creek and its tributaries, as far as the settlements extend, including also Tiger Island, Essequibo.

**Essequibo River.**—The islands of Leguan, Wakenaam, and Hog Island, also the Essequibo river with its tributaries and islands, from the Supenaam Creek on its left bank and From Plantation Philadelphia on its right bank, and all plantations and settlements on the banks of the said river, its tributaries and islands, as far as the settlements extend.

**West Coast Demerara.**—From and inclusive of Plantation Philadelphia on the right bank of the river Essequibo, to and inclusive of Plantation Nouvelle-Flandres.

**West Bank Demerara River.**—From Plantation Nouvelle-Flandres, to and inclusive of Plantation Vive la Force on the left bank of the Demerara river.

**Demerara River.**—From Pln. Vive la Force on the left and Pln. La Penitence on the right bank of the Demerara river upwards as far as the settlements extend, including all tributaries and islands of the said river.

**Georgetown.**—The City of Georgetown, including Pln. Vlissingen and Le Repentir and the Lodge Village.

**East Coast Demerara.**—From the Eastern Boundary of the City of Georgetown to and inclusive of the village of Friendship.

**Mahaica.**—From the village or Friendship to the left bank of the Mahaica Creek, inclusive all settlements on the said bank, as far as they extend.

**No. 105.**

Abary.—From the left bank of the Mahaica river to and inclusive of No. 43, or Pln. Rising Sun.

West Coast Berbice.—From No. 43, or Pln. Rising Sun, to and inclusive of the village of Ithaca.

Berbice River.—From the village of Ithaca on the left, and from and inclusive of Plantation Providence, and Overwinning on the right bank of the Berbice river, upwards on both banks of the said river, including its tributaries and islands, as far as the settlements extend.

New Amsterdam.—From Plantation Providence and Overwinning, to and including Plantation Port Mourant, also the town of New Amsterdam, and the Canje Creek and its tributaries, as far as the settlements extend.

Corentyne Coast.—From Plantation Port Mourant to the eastern boundary of the Colony, and thence up the Corentyne River, as far as the settlements extend.

Given under My Hand and the Public Seal of the Colony, at the Guiana Public Buildings, Georgetown, Demerara, this 1st day of July, 1873, and in the Thirty-seventh year of Her Majesty's Reign.

GOD SAVE THE QUEEN!

By His Excellency's Command,

E. N. WALKER,

Actg. Govt. Secretary.

**No. 106.**

List of Grants of Occupancy of Government Lands for terms of years or during Her Majesty's Pleasure, in existence in the Counties of Demerara and Essequibo, on the 31st day of December, 1883.

[From the Royal Gazette of British Guiana, Georgetown, Tuesday, February 19, 1884.]

Name of Grantee.	Acreage.	Locality.	Years.	Date.	Amount per Annum.
J. F. L. C. da Graca.....	54	Left Bank Demerara River .....	21	27th July, 1863..	\$16 20
Julia E. Stoll.....	50	Left Bank Ackawine Creek, Pomeroon River .....	21	7th Apl., 1864..	15 00
George Couchman.....	25	Left Bank Demerara River.....	21	21st Oct., 1864..	1 00
John Bramner .....	50.65	Left Bank, Coreta Creek, Demerara River .....	21	20th June, 1865..	15 14
A. Roberts and H. Jack.....	100	Left Bank Ackawine Creek, Pomeroon River .....	21	30th June, 1866..	20 00
Charles Couchman.....	25	Left Bank Demerara River.....	21	4th July, 1866..	7 50
J. G. Allcock.....	25	Left Bank Wayniblace Creek, Demerara River .....	21	6th Nov. ....	7 50

## Grants of Occupancy—Continued.

Name of Grantee.	Acres.	Locality.	Years.	Date.	Amount per Annum.
John Ferreira.....	100	Right Bank Pomeroon River.....	21	7th " 1868..	20 00
Presbyterian Missionary Society.....	10	Right Bank Supenaam Creek, Essequibo River.....	21	29th " 1870..	5 00
A. de Grealer and M. Correia..	100	Left Bank Pomeroon River.....	21	29th July, 1871..	20 00
Joseph Stoll.....	100	Right Bank Pomeroon River.....	21	11th Mar., 1873..	20 00
Proprietor of "Great Diamond".....	12½	Aback of Golden Grove, etc., Demerara River, for canal purposes.....	21	9th Nov., .....	3 00
John Glasgow.....	100	Left Bank Pomeroon River.....	21	1st Feb., 1873..	20 00
Willis J. Rodney.....	100	Left Bank Mahaicony Creek, Demerara.....	15	12th May, .....	20 00
R. Sample, A. Prince and J. Phillips.....	180	Left Bank Mahaicony Creek, Demerara.....	21	9th Sep., .....	20 00
John S. Landroy.....	80	Right Bank Pomeroon River.....	21	12th Oct., .....	15 00
John Ferreira.....	100	Left Bank Pomeroon River.....	21	8th Dec., 1873..	20 00
W. Rogers and A. John.....	100	Left Bank Mahaicony Creek, Demerara.....	15	3rd Mar., 1874..	20 00
Tomey Calvin.....	100	Left Bank Pomeroon River.....	21	.....	20 00
Joseph Faria.....	100	Left Bank Mahaicony Creek, Demerara.....	15	21st .....	20 00
Manoel Rodrigues.....	100	Left Bank Pomeroon River.....	21	1st Sep., .....	20 00
Manoel Rodrigues.....	80	" " " ".....	21	8th Oct., .....	11 68
Antonio da Silva.....	100	" " " ".....	21	12th Jan., 1875..	20 00
Antonio A. Agrella.....	100	" " " ".....	21	.....	20 00
José Goncalves.....	80	" " " ".....	21	12th Oct., .....	15 00
Antonio Pereira.....	100	" " " ".....	15	.....	20 00
Adrian Roberts.....	100	" " " ".....	15	2nd Sep., 1875..	20 00
John Glasgow.....	100	" " " ".....	10	17th Apl., 1877..	20 00
M. Joaquin and M. Fernandes.....	100	" " " ".....	10	.....	20 00
Manuel Govia.....	100	" " " ".....	10	.....	20 00
Henry Stephany.....	100	" " " ".....	15	17th Dec., .....	20 00
B. Farouse and M. Goncalves.....	100	" " " ".....	10	21st .....	20 00
José Goncalves.....	110	" " " ".....	15	20th Jan., 1878..	24 00
Manoel J. Lopes.....	5	Right Bank Oeracoja Creek, Demerara River.....	10	12th May, .....	1 00
Theodore Kersting.....	5	Right Bank Hinora-Acuyal Creek, Demerara River.....	10	1st July, .....	1 00
John Pinto de Faria.....	10½	Left Bank Casiquia Creek, Waratilla Creek, Camoeni Creek, Demerara River.....	5	12th Jan., 1879..	5 20
M. Marks & F. Peres.....	100	Left Bank Pomeroon River.....	10	8th July, 1880..	20 00
J. H. D. Campbell.....	18.15	Right " " ".....	15	25th Sep., .....	54 68
James Adolphus.....	200	Left " " ".....	5	4th Oct., .....	60 00
José D'Agrella.....	100	Right " " ".....	7	19th Mar., 1881..	20 00
José da Silva.....	100	" " " ".....	5	20th .....	20 00
J. McConnell, Proprietor of Pin. Cane Grove.....	410½	Left Bank Mahaica Creek, Demerara.....	21	4th July, .....	123 18
J. McConnell, do. do.....	283½	" " " ".....	21	.....	76 13
J. McConnell, do. do.....	144½	" " " ".....	21	.....	43 20
J. McConnell, do. do.....	300	" " " ".....	21	.....	90 00
J. McConnell, do. do.....	233½	Right " " ".....	21	.....	70 12
J. McConnell, do. do.....	100	" " " ".....	21	.....	20 00
Antonio D'Agrella.....	100	Left Bank Pomeroon River.....	5	14th .....	20 00
George Garraway.....	100	" " " ".....	10	6th Sep., .....	20 00
The Lord Bishop of Guiana and His Successor in the See.....	121½	Right Bank Mornea Creek, Essequibo.....	D.H.M.P.	.....	20 00
Maria de Souza.....	100	Right Bank Pomeroon River.....	10	12th .....	20 00
Angelica J. Gomes.....	5	Confluence of Lower Winesproo Creek with Demerara River.....	2	1st Jan., 1882..	1 00
James Sundac.....	5	Left Bank Cunnacucuxah Creek, Areobajo Creek, Demerara River.....	2	11th Apl., .....	1 00
Allan G. Van Sluytman.....	188½	Left Bank Pomeroon River.....	15	27th June, .....	20 00
Antonio D'Agrella.....	70	Right " " ".....	5	16th Oct., .....	21 00
J. F. L. O. da Graça.....	50½	Left Bank Demerara River.....	5	19th June, .....	15 20
James H. Dow.....	5	Left Bank Upper Winesproo Creek, Demerara River.....	2	1st Aug., 1883..	1 00
José Goncalves.....	118	Right Bank Pomeroon River.....	5	29th June, 1883..	25 65
Leandro D'Abrio.....	5	Right Bank Little Creek, Koaleriseraboe Creek, Demerara River.....	2	20th Oct., 1883..	1 00
Peter Farouse.....	100	Right Bank Pomeroon River.....	5	10th Dec., .....	20 00
Manoel Marks.....	100	Left " " ".....	5	.....	20 00
John Goncalves.....	100	Right " " ".....	5	.....	20 00
Bishop Butler and His Successor in Office.....	2½	Left " " ".....	D.H.M.P.	.....	1 14
					\$1,747 21



## No. 107.

### Proposed Road from the Barima River to the Cuyuni River.

[Reprinted from U. S. Commission Report, vol. vii, pp. 359-361, the article there printed being extracted from a newspaper *The Daily Chronicle*, Georgetown, Demerara, October 25, 1894.]

Mr. Weber proposed the following resolution, of which he had given notice:

“With reference to the resolution of the Combined Court, approved in its last session and by which His Excellency the Governor and this Honorable Court were authorized to expend certain sums, if they were deemed necessary for the development of the gold and other industries, except that of sugar;

“*Resolved*, That this Court respectfully ask of His Excellency the Governor that, at the briefest time possible, he give orders to make the plan for a wagon or mule road from the point where the Barima river is no longer navigable up to the Upper Cuyuni river, and if found practicable, to the Yuruán river, with the end of putting these rivers in direct communication.”

He said that His Excellency knew, no doubt, how difficult it was to reach that very important District; that the numerous falls of the Cuyuni river made the trip to the Yuruán river so troublesome and difficult, that almost seven weeks were required to reach that place; that one private study had already been made for a road from the Upper Barima river to the Cuyuni river, and it had been found that the journey to this District, one of the most important, among the auriferous Districts of the Colony, could be made shorter than it is now. He expressed the hope that His Excellency would look for a way to have that region surveyed with the view of opening a road that, besides economizing an immense amount of time and expense to those interested in the gold industry of that District, would also facilitate a more prompt communication with the Government Station on the Yuruán river, subject matter the importance of which he hardly needed to suggest to the Government. Mr. Hunter supported the resolution.

The Customhouse Inspector, on admitting how beneficial such a road would be, said that he would like to suggest another point; that he believed that in a question as that of opening a road, the opinion of a man like Mr. Barnard would be of weight; that this man was of the opinion that the waterways should be utilized as far as possible, and hinted that the communication should be opened through canals with boats.

Mr. Davis thought that they had carried out the idea up to a certain degree in the Northwest District, and that they would keep the same in mind in the present case.

The Secretary of Government said that there were two points to be considered. In the first place, the amount of money proposed in the resolution approved by the Combined Court, for the development of the gold and other industries, had to be raised by means of a loan; and whilst the Government should not importune for the same the approval of the Secretary of State, it would be impossible for him to act. Of course no time

**No. 107.**

was lost in communicating to the Secretary of State the recommendation of the Combined Assembly, and no doubt an answer will soon be received. In regard to the other point, the honorable member perhaps did not know that as to connecting these two rivers some considerable study has already been made, and some plans have been presented that are still being considered. In effect, the Government Agent in the Northwest District is now in communication with the Government in regard to the very matter. The details belonging to it shall be presented to the Commission that His Excellency may appoint for the carrying out of the resolution approved by the joint Assembly in its last session, and he believes, therefore, that the honorable member might consent for the present to a postponement of the consideration of his proposition.

Mr. Weber said that it pleased him much to know from the Secretary of the Government that the Government understood the two aforesaid rivers should be connected, if it were possible. He was in accord with the justice of the remarks of the Customhouse Inspector in regard that the communication by canal should be preferred, but he said he was afraid that would be impossible.

It is understood that whenever the waterways could be employed with advantage, they should be used. With the consent of the member who supported it, he asked that the postponement of his proposition he allowed, knowing steps were being taken for that purpose.

**No. 108.****Shipping Statistics of British Guiana, 1894-1895.**

[From Colonial Reports—Annual. No. 159. British Guiana, Annual Report for 1894-5. London, 1896.]

The following statement shows the number of vessels entered and cleared at the ports of the Colony during the year 1894-5:

Ports.	Entered.			Cleared.		
	No.	Tons.	Crews.	No.	Tons.	Crews.
<b>Steam vessels—</b>						
Georgetown, Demerara.....	242	211,198	8,787	244	211,118	8,706
New Amsterdam, Berbice.....	4	8,685	109	15	14,754	385
North-Western District.....	....	....	....	....	....	....
<b>Totals.....</b>	<b>246</b>	<b>214,881</b>	<b>8,846</b>	<b>259</b>	<b>225,872</b>	<b>9,091</b>
<b>Sailing vessels—</b>						
Georgetown, Demerara.....	453	107,179	3,966	465	111,385	4,065
New Amsterdam, Berbice.....	22	5,456	167	27	6,388	308
North-Western District.....	*38	57	44	....	....	....
<b>Totals.....</b>	<b>513</b>	<b>112,692</b>	<b>4,177</b>	<b>492</b>	<b>117,773</b>	<b>4,269</b>
<b>Total steam and sailing vessels ..</b>	<b>759</b>	<b>327,573</b>	<b>13,023</b>	<b>751</b>	<b>343,645</b>	<b>13,360</b>

\* These are small boats entering the Port of Barima. Clearance statistics have not been kept.

## No. 109.

Extract from Report of C. O. Lees, Governor of British Guiana, to Mr. Chamberlain, as to the Construction of Roads and Railroads in the Northwest District and on the Cuyuni.

[From Colonial Reports—Annual. No. 159. British Guiana, Annual Report for 1894-5. London, 1896.]

\* \* \* \* \*

Funds have also been provided for the survey and construction of roads from the Barima to the Barama rivers in the north-west district, and from the Potaro river to the gold fields on the Mahdia and Conawaruk creeks in the Essequibo, and these works are proceeded with. Transport on the rock-impeded Cuyuni is also being facilitated by the construction of *portages* at the more dangerous rapids, and bills which have since become law have been introduced to sanction the construction of two lines of railway communicating with the mines in the north-west district.

\* \* \* \* \*

## No. 110.

List of (a) Grants of crown lands, (b) Licenses of occupancy, (c) Wood-cutting licenses, British Guiana, 1897.

[Extracted from British Guiana, Annual Report of Government Land Department for 1896-1897 (No. 7958), fol. Georgetown, Demarara, 1897.]

## APPENDIX B.

LIST OF GRANTS OF CROWN LAND, EXCLUSIVE OF THOSE AT BARTIKA, FROM 1889.

## COUNTY OF ESSEQUIBO.

No.	DATE	GRANTER	AREA.	LOCALITY.
			ACRES.	
480	10th Feby., 1890.....	Jose Gonsalves.....	18	Right bank Pomeroon River.
480	9th Sept., 1891.....	J. da Silva.....	80	Left bank Achawinni Creek, Pomeroon River.
482	8th Oct., 1891.....	E. Garraway.....	181.5	Right bank Pomeroon River, part of Pin. Friendship.
496	12th Oct., 1891.....	John Baird.....	100	Right bank Pomeroon River, above a tract in the occupancy of A. Oorsla.
494	12th Oct., 1891.....	John Russell.....	101.1	"Dall." Right bank, Essequibo River.
502	12th Oct., 1891.....	Crown Surveyor.....	90.2	Right bank Walnut River.
520	14th Dec., 1891.....	Bishop of Guiana.....	8.3	Lots A, B, C, D, & E Bartika, Essequibo River.
524	15th Dec., 1891.....	Robert Adams.....	100	Left bank Pomeroon River, below Pickaragill Police Station.
527	18th Dec., 1891.....	George Blackburn.....	100	Right bank Barima River, part of Lots 22 & 23.
528	19th Jan., 1892.....	Crown Surveyor.....	54	Right bank Barima River.
557	1st Feb., 1892.....	Ant. Gonsalves.....	100	Left bank Pomeroon River, above a tract in the occupancy of A. Sardinha.
474	15th Feb., 1892.....	F. Rodrigues.....	80	Left bank Achawinni Creek, Pomeroon River.
493	7th March, 1892.....	F. F. Pierre.....	50	Left bank Achawinni Creek, Pomeroon River.
569	10th March, 1892.....	J. L. Matthews.....	100	Left bank Essequibo River, at Wolgar.
464	17th March, 1892.....	Josephine Adams.....	28	Left bank Pomeroon River.
509	20th April, 1892.....	Jno. Glasgow.....	100	Left bank, Barima River, front portion of Lot 26.
608	21st " ".....	Wo Lee & Coy.....	50	Left bank, Barima River, N. j lot 14.

## APPENDIX B—(Continued).

No.	DATE.	GRANTER.	AREA.	LOCALITY.
			ACRES.	
478	6th May, 1892.....	B. B. Garraway.....	50	Left bank, Ackawinni Creek, Pomerom River.
537	28th June, 1892.....	George Garraway.....	100	Left bank, Pomerom River, next above Jno. Glas- gow.
626	2nd July, 1892.....	Robert Farouse.....	100	Right bank, Pomerom River, next below Tunes Farms.
648	29th July, 1892.....	Jose da Silva.....	100	Right bank, Pomerom River, between Tunes Farms and Maria's Delight.
666	" " ".....	M. J. da Silva.....	100	Left bank, Pomerom River, at Eurowa Point.
674	9th August, 1892.....	W. H. Goring.....	50	Left bank, Pomerom River, near mouth.
702	15th Decr., 1893.....	Joseph Licorish.....	80	Right bank, Pomerom River.
711	15th Jan'y, 1893.....	William Day.....	100	East side of Hog Island.
777	12th April, 1893.....	W. N. Lindore.....	100	Hog Island.
794	23rd May, 1893.....	William Fauset.....	72.75	Jockey Island, Essequibo River.
819	28th Aug., 1893.....	Jos. Braikwaite.....	100	Left bank, Pomerom River, above tract in occu- pancy of M. da Silva.
848	9th Nov., 1893.....	Wm. Cornelius.....	50	Left bank, Essequibo River, below Arrawarri Creek mouth.
849	" " ".....	Theodore Adams.....	100	Left bank, Pomerom River, below grant in occu- pancy of A. da Silva.
850	" " ".....	J. G. Ferreira.....	100	Right bank, Pomerom River, above tract occupied by J. Goncalves.
851	" " ".....	M. da Silva.....	100	Left bank, Pomerom River, below tract of J. Braik- waite.
918	" " ".....	Crown Surveyor.....	36.41	Right bank, Barima River, at Arakaka.
914	" " ".....	Do.....	1.143	Right bank, Barima River, at Koriabo.
929	17th April, 1894.....	Kheeseram.....	124	West side, Hog Island.
963	23rd June, 1894.....	J. H. Powell.....	50	Right bank, Barima River, next below Govern- ment reserve.
967	16th July, 1894.....	J. J. da Silva.....	50	Left bank, Pomerom River, upper half of expired grant of A. da Silva.
978	2nd August, 1894.....	A. Correia.....	100	Left bank, Pomerom River, near Eurowa Point.
984	" " ".....	Wm. Day.....	25	Eastern side, Hog Island.
985	" " ".....	B. B. Garraway.....	80	Left bank, Ackawinni Creek, Pomerom River.
987	" " ".....	Jose Goncalves.....	100	Left bank, Pomerom River.
991	10th " ".....	Crown Surveyor.....	.....	Right bank, Barima River, at Mount Everest.
992	7th Sept., ".....	G. L. Garraway.....	37.55	Right bank, Pomerom River.
993	" " ".....	Do.....	35	Left bank, Pomerom River, behind Marlborough.
994	" " ".....	J. Fortune.....	100	West side, Hog Island.
1,001	25th " ".....	J. Sullivan.....	100	East side, Hog Island.
1,002	" " ".....	J. Baird.....	100	Right bank, Pomerom River.
1,004	" " ".....	Henninum.....	34	East side, Hog Island.
1,041	12th Decr., ".....	Mahommed Ackbar.....	102	East side, Hog Island.
1,044	12th Jan'y., 1895.....	Aaron Glen.....	100	Right bank, Pomerom River.
1,051	16th Feby., 1895.....	H. Jack.....	12.55	Right bank, Ackawinni Creek, Pomerom.
1,088	25th March, 1895.....	Pomerom Provision Com- pany, Ltd.....	193½	Left bank, Pomerom River, at Warrapana Creek.
1,084	" " ".....	Pomerom Provision Com- pany, Ltd.....	50	Left bank, Pomerom River, at Warrapana Creek.
1,085	" " ".....	Pomerom Provision Com- pany, Ltd.....	122.18	Left bank, Pomerom River, at Warrapana Creek.
1,090	11th April, 1895.....	A. Garraway.....	100	Right bank, Pomerom River.
1,139	17th July, 1895.....	Crown Surveyor.....	2	Left bank, Barima River, at Arakaka.
1,130	27th July, 1895.....	T. Luben.....	100	East side, Hog Island.
1,143	24th August, 1895.....	L. C. Callaghan.....	100	Left bank, Essequibo River.
1,154	25th Sept., 1895.....	B. N. Garraway.....	290 8	Right bank, Pomerom River.
1,155	" " ".....	N. Evans.....	45.85	Left bank, Pomerom River.
1,157	" " ".....	J. Afonso.....	100	Left bank, Pomerom River.
1,158	" " ".....	B. Adams.....	40.2	Left bank, Pomerom River.
1,207	16th January, 1896.....	J. Jonas.....	143.6	Left bank, Pomerom River.
1896-97.				
1,271	6th June, 1896.....	Crown Surveyor.....	15.18	Right bank, Potaro River, Tumsiamari.
1,292	8th Aug., 1896.....	A. Glasgow.....	120	Right bank, Pomerom River.
1,285	13th Aug., 1896.....	Crown Surveyor.....	19.9	Right bank, Potaro River (Potaro landing).
1,298	10th Sept., 1896.....	G. L. Garraway.....	100	Right bank, Pomerom River.
1,299	" " ".....	S. Small.....	90	Right bank, Pomerom River.
1,301	1st " ".....	Bishop Butler.....	25	Left bank, Moruka River, "Santa Rosa."
1,307	25th " ".....	Konhye.....	50	Left bank, Pomerom River.
1,311	9th Oct., 1896.....	R. O. Clarke.....	135	Left bank, Pomerom River.
1,313	1st Oct., 1896.....	Bishop Butler.....	50	Left bank, Pomerom River.
1,314	21st Oct., 1896.....	Beatrice Glasgow.....	119.09	Left bank, Pomerom River.
1,321	28th Oct., 1896.....	Crown Surveyor.....	1	Left bank, Ouyuni River, at Kamaris Road.
1,322	28th Oct., 1896.....	Do.....	1	Left bank, Ouyuni River, at Kamaris Road.
1,328	8th Jan'y., 1897.....	David Tyson.....	120.85	Right bank, Wakapan Creek, Pomerom River.
1,357	4th March, 1897.....	A. Fernandes.....	119.06	Left bank, Pomerom River.
1,411	12th March, 1897.....	Crown Surveyor.....	100	East side, Gluck Island, Essequibo.

## No. 110.

## APPENDIX B 1.

Years.	DEMERARA.		ESSEQUIBO.		BERBICE.		GRAND TOTAL.	
	No. of Grants issued.	Area.	No of Grants issued.	Area.	No of Grants issued.	Area.	No. of Grants.	Acres.
		Acres.		Acres.		Acres.		
1880.....	1	5	1	118	1	30	2	133
1890-91.....	1	25	1	30	1	30	2	55
1891-92.....	5	542	11	970-6	10	1,365-2	27	2,977-9
1893-94.....	15	7,306-92	11	900	9	1,102-88	35	9,209-4
1893-94.....	2	125	10	670-27	11	1,445-6	23	2,241-87
1894-95.....	18	834-75	21	1,701-66	10	825	41	3,061-41
1895-96.....	5	373	9	983-16	18	2,440-6	32	3,676-78
1896-97.....	11	1,248	15	1,066-08	23	2,145-4	49	4,459-48

## APPENDIX B 2.

## LIST OF GRANTS OF CROWN LAND ISSUED PREVIOUS TO 1890.

No.	DATE.	GRANTER.	AREA.	LOCALITY.
COUNTY OF ESSEQUIBO.				
Book 2 p. 159.	6th Oct., 1835...	Rector of Trinity Parish....	10	Left Bank, Arapiaks Creek, Pomeroon River.
" 4 " 152.	26th May, 1838...	W. Bilstein .....	100	Ithaca, Right Bank, Essequibo River.
" 2 " 231.	25th Oct., 1841...	J. Castlereagh .....	100	Right Bank, Pomeroon River.
" 2 " 268.	30th May, 1845...	J. J. Struthers .....	100	Right Bank, Supenaam Creek.

## APPENDIX C.

## LIST OF LICENCES OF OCCUPANCY

FROM 1806 OF CROWN LAND (OTHER THAN 2ND AND EXTRA DEPTHS TO ESTATES) FOR TERMS OF YEARS OR DURING HER MAJESTY'S PLEASURE, IN EXISTENCE IN THE COUNTIES OF DEMERARA, ESSEQUIBO AND BERBICE ON THE 31st MARCH, 1897.

No.	LICENCEE.	ACREAGE.	LOCALITY.	YEARS.	DATE FROM WHICH ACRES MONEY IS PAYABLE.	AMOUNT PER ANNUM.
COUNTY OF ESSEQUIBO.						
143*	W. Brummell & T. G. Heyliger.....	166½	Lot 11, Arcabische Coast.....	DHM	15th Mar., 1806..	
Book 4 p. 88.	Pln. Zorg.....	100	Heemareeben Creek.....	DHMP	11th June, 1828..	\$5.58
" " 89.	" Parika.....	180	Hog Island.....	DHMP	9th July, 1828..	3.34
" " 79.	" Wisselvaligheid.....	300	Do. ....	DHMP	6th Oct., 1828..	5.00
" " 85.	" Zorg.....	300	Do. ....	DHMP	6th Oct., 1828..	10.00
" " 29.	J. & D. C. Struthers.....	180	Great Ducalaba Island.....	DHMP	18th April, 1833..	7.50
" 3 " 466.	Kevd. W. Austin.....	84	Manati Island.....	DHMP	21st June, 1838..	1.68
	42. Bishop of Guiana.....	121-9	Right Bank, Merusa River...	DHMP	6th Sep., 1861..	Free.
	281. Manoel Marques.....	150	Right Bank, Pomeroon River.....			
	381. Joseph Jonas.....	100	Left Bank, Pomeroon River..	12	18 h July, 1897..	45.00
	468. A. E. Matthews.....	142	Kaow Island, Essequibo River.....	10	30th April, 1899..	30.00
				21	6th Oct., 1890..	42.02
COUNTY OF ESSEQUIBO.						
418	Antonio Rodrigues.....	112	Right Bank, Pomeroon River	7	31st Nov., 1890..	5.28
435	C. E. Piper.....	100	Right Bank, Pomeroon River	8	2nd April, 1891..	4.80
436	A. Rodrigues.....	184	Left Bank, Pomeroon River..	7	2nd " 1891..	7.29
439	B. Garraway.....	103	Right Bank, Pomeroon River	6	2nd " 1891..	4.94
440	A. da Grela.....	100	Left Bank, Pomeroon River..	7	2nd " 1891..	4.80
451	Thos. Black.....	25	On Hog Island.....	7	12th " 1891..	1.20
497	Manoel Goncalves.....	100	Left Bank, Pomeroon River..	10	25th May, 1891..	4.80
499	M. J. Fernandes.....	50	Right Bank, Pomeroon River	15	23th " 1891..	2.40
454	Jeffery Garraway.....	100	Right Bank, Pomeroon River	10	26th " 1891..	4.80
476	Wm. Jones.....	121-2	Left Bank, Pomeroon River..	8	30th June, 1891..	8.61
481	Frank Welcome.....	100	Left Bank, Pomeroon River..	12	4th July, 1891..	4.80
483	M. Goncalves.....	100	Left Bank, Pomeroon River..	15	21st " 1891..	4.80
486	John Goncalves.....	100	Right Bank, Pomeroon River	15	2nd Aug., 1891..	4.80
498	Stephen Johnson.....	100	Right Bank, Pomeroon River	15	1st Oct., 1891..	4.80
501	Lord Bishop of Guiana.....	50	Right Bank, Barima River...	DHMP	13th, " 1891..	Free.
523	A. Sardinha.....	100	Left Bank, Pomeroon River..	15	1st Nov., 1891..	4.80
526	A. Goncalves.....	100	Left Bank, Pomeroon River..	10	1st Dec., 1891..	4.80
759	Presbyterian Missionary Society..	10	Right bank, Supenaam Creek	DHMP	29th Nov., 1891..	Free.

APPENDIX C.—(CONTINUED.)  
LICENCES OF OCCUPANCY.—(CONTINUED.)  
COUNTY OF ESEQUIBO.—(CONTINUED.)

No.	LICENSER.	ACREAGE.	LOCALITY.	YEARS.	DATE.	AMOUNT.
841	J. Duncan .....	100	Left bank, Amakura River, part lot 10 .....	10	2nd Jan., 1893..	\$4.00
845	Joaquim da Costa.....	100	Left bank, Pomeroon River ....	10	2nd " " ..	4.00
828	James Boston.....	100	Left bank, Pomeroon River ....	20	2nd " " ..	4.00
829	H. W. Welcome .....	50	Right bank, Barima River, part lot 20 .....	10	2nd " " ..	2.00
834	Mak-sy-Hung .....	50	Left bank, Aruka River .....	10	2nd " " ..	2.00
836	Bishop Butler and his successor .....	12.5	Right bank, Barima River.....	DHMP	19th " " ..	Free
832	Alex. Service .....	50	Right bank, Barima River, part lot 25.....	10	1st Mar., " ..	2.00
833	Sabina Herrera .....	50	Right bank, Amakura River, part lot 4 .....	10	1st " " ..	2.00
476	Henry Jones.....	100	Right bank, Pomeroon River....	6	1st April, " ..	4.00
830	Jugrooping .....	35	Hog Island.....	7	1st June, " ..	1.00
833	Henry Evans.....	100	Right bank, Pomeroon River, next to Peter Farouse's Grant	10	28th April, " ..	4.00
839	William Battis.....	100	Right bank, Amakura River, front portion of lot 11.....	10	1st " " ..	4.00
749	G. M. English.....	100	Left bank, Pomeroon River ....	10	1st June, " ..	4.00
849	Manoel da Sousa.....	100	Right bank, Pomeroon River, opposite Bunbury's place....	10	1st July, " ..	4.00
650	Mancel Goncalves.....	100	Left bank, Akawinnai Creek, Pomeroon River .....	15	" " ..	4.00
681	Charles Obermuller .....	100	Right Bank, Pomeroon River, about 100 rods below Jacklo Creek .....	7	" " ..	4.00
652	Anastacio Goncalves .....	100	Right bank, Pomeroon River, 5 rods below Manoel Goncalves' Grant .....	7	" " ..	4.00
653	Manoel Goncalves.....	100	Right bank, Pomeroon River, 5 rods above Anastacio Goncalves' Grant .....	10	4th July " ..	4.00
680	Antonio D'Agrella.....	100	Left bank, Pomeroon River, 5 rods above another grant in his occupancy .....	10	15th " " ..	4.00
875	Jno. Joaquim da Silva.....	100	Right bank, Akawinnai Creek, Pomeroon River .....	15	8th Aug., " ..	4.00
876	M. J. da Silva .....	100	Left bank, Pomeroon River, 5 rods above M. Goncalves' Grant .....	15	12th " " ..	4.00
677	John Correia.....	114½	Right bank, Pomeroon River, 5 rods below José Goncalves' Grant.....	10	12th " " ..	5.00
682	Francois Peeres.....	100	Right bank, Pomeroon River, portion of expired grant of José da Silva .....	10	1st Sept., " ..	4.00
687	L. E. Campbell.....	100	Right bank, Pomeroon River... ..	5	24th Oct., " ..	4.00
690	Joseph Brathwaite.....	90	Left bank, Pomeroon River ....	5	17th Novr., " ..	4.32
694	Jose Ferreira .....	50 "	Lot 20, Perkins and Harrison's Chart, left bank, Barima River	20	1st " " ..	2.00
695	Alexander Softly .....	128.7	Potararo Island, Essequibo River	5	25th " " ..	5.95
699	Joseph Manswell.....	100	Left bank, Cumaka Creek, Hog Island .....	21	1st Dec., " ..	4.00
705	Michael Garraway.....	100	Left bank, Pomeroon River ....	5	21st " " ..	4.00
706	L. A. Campbell.....	93.5	Right bank, Pomeroon River... ..	5	15th Jan., 1893..	4.00
713	Benjamin Trotman .....	100	Right bank, Pr-paru Creek, Hog Island .....	5	" " ..	4.00
718	George Blackburn.....	50	Left Bank, Barima River .....	10	1st Feby., " ..	2.00
717	Lawrence Ernandes.....	100	Right Bank, Pomeroon River ..	10	" " " ..	4.00
716	George Edy .....	50	Right bank, Amakura.....	10	18th Jan., " ..	2.00
720	A. Barr, as Attorney of Messrs. Hogg and H. B. Hunter .....	119	West bank, Essequibo River, in rear of Plantation Onderneeming, Suddle and Maria's Lodge	DHMP	1st " " ..	5.71
725	George Haywood.....	108	Right bank, Pomeroon River... ..	5	15th Feb., " ..	4.00
735	Proprietors of Pln. Land of Plenty of Mainstay.....	31½	Company Path, between Land o Plenty & Mainstay, Aracabische Coast, Essequibo .....	DHMP	18th " " ..	Free
748	J. December .....	100	Left bank, Pomeroon River ....	5	15th March, " ..	4.00
760	J. C. Wellington .....	50	Right bank, Essequibo River, below Bonasika Creek.....	21	1st April, " ..	2.00
790	Benjamin Brock .....	100	Left bank, Barima River.....	10	15th " " ..	4.00
791	Sampel Odogan.....	50	Left bank, Barima River .....	7	15th " " ..	2.00
792	Joseph William .....	50	Left bank, Barima River.....	10	15th " " ..	2.00
795	Burnett Adolphus.....	100	Left bank, Pomeroon River ....	10	1st May, " ..	4.00
816	Mancel Alphonso.....	125	Left bank, Pomeroon River....	5	1st Aug., " ..	6.00
817	Jane A. Savory .....	100	Right bank, Pomeroon River... ..	10	1st " " ..	4.00
818	Charles Fraser .....	100	Left bank, Pomeroon River ....	5	1st " " ..	4.00
824	Christina Thomas .....	103½	Left bank, Pomeroon River ....	5	15th " " ..	4.00
840	Joseph Ignatius.....	100	Left bank, Barima River.....	21	1st Oct., " ..	4.00
852	James A. Cyrus .....	100	Right bank, Pomeroon River... ..	5	1st Nov., " ..	4.00
853	Adolphus Trim .....	32	Right bank, Pomeroon River... ..	5	1st " " ..	1.54
868	M. Farraber.....	50	Left bank, Barima River, part of Lot 18 .....	21	1st Jan., 1894..	2.00
870	C. A. White.....	100	East side of Great Trootie Island .....	15	15th " " ..	4.00

## APPENDIX C—(Continued).

No	LICENSEE.	ACREAGE.	LOCALITY.	YEARS.	DATE.	AMOUNT.
881	Crown Surveyor .....	11 1/4	Right bank, Barima River, below Arakaka River.....	DHMP	22nd Jan., 1894..	Free
880	Crown Surveyor.....	2 1/2	Right bank, Barima River.....	DHMP	Free.	
885	Bishop Butler.....	2 1/2	Pomeroon River.....	DHMP	Free.	
886	Crown Surveyor .....	108 1/2	Left bank, Barima River.....	DHMP	Free.	
902	P. J. Kinch .....	50	South point of Great Troolie Island, Essequibo River .....	10	1st Feby., 1894..	2.60
889	Richard Taylor .....	200	East side of Great Troolie Island	7	15th " " ..	9.00
888	A. S. Blackman .....	150	Left bank, Barima River.....	21	15th " " ..	7.20
895	Mahon .....	100	West side, Hog Island, Essequibo River .....	12	15th " " ..	4.80
906	L. Fraser.....	196	East side, Great Troolie Island.	7	1st Mar., " ..	9.61
904	Deonarin .....	50	West side, Hog Island.....	7	1st " " ..	2.60
921	Jugroopsingh.....	76	West side, Hog Island.....	7	15th " " ..	3.65
927	B. Babb .....	100	Left bank, Essequibo River .....	15	15th April, " ..	4.80
928	A. S. Blackman.....	50	Left bank, Barima River.....	7	15th " " ..	2.60
935	H. B. Bridgewater .....	59	Right bank, Barima River.....	21	15th " " ..	3.28
936	F. S. Neames.....	50	Right bank, Barima River.....	21	15th " " ..	2.60
943	M. de Freitas .....	50	Right bank, Amakura River .....	21	1st May, " ..	2.60
944	Z. A. Lewis .....	50	Right bank, Barima River.....	21	1st " " ..	2.60
945	J. Garcia.....	100	Right bank, Barima River.....	21	1st " " ..	4.80
946	Chansee.....	28	Right bank, Amakuru River.....	21	15th " " ..	1.20
947	D. Campbell .....	50	Left bank, Barima River .....	10	15th " " ..	2.60
948	J. Andrews .....	100	Right bank, Barima River .....	21	15th " " ..	4.80
952	A. Sardinha.....	100	Right bank, Pomeroon River.....	10	1st June, " ..	4.80
955	H. B. Bridgewater.....	100	Right bank, Barima River.....	21	15th " " ..	4.80
956	G. Pee.....	100	Right bank, Barima River.....	7	15th " " ..	4.80
951	J. Marcus.....	75	Left bank, Aruka River .....	10	1st July, " ..	3.80
953	J. De Souza.....	50	Left bank, Barima River.....	21	1st " " ..	2.60
954	Gopee.....	100	Left bank, Boersaerie Creek.....	21	1st " " ..	4.80
956	A. Sardinha.....	100	Right bank, Pomeroon River.....	10	1st " " ..	4.80
979	J. Robinson.....	50	East side, Hog Island .....	21	15th " " ..	2.60
980	J. Calvan.....	100	Left bank, Pomeroon River.....	10	1st Aug., " ..	4.80
981	J. Pereira.....	100	Right bank, Pomeroon River.....	5	1st " " ..	4.80
982	E. Pearson.....	100	Right bank, Pomeroon River.....	10	1st " " ..	4.80
983	J. J. da Silva .....	100	Right bank, Akawinni Creek, Pomeroon River .....	14	1st " " ..	4.80
890	B. Babb.....	100	Left bank, Essequibo River .....	15	15th " " ..	4.80
985	T. Loxdale.....	100	East side, Hog Island .....	21	15th " " ..	4.80
997	D. Trots .....	100	East side, Hog Island .....	10	1st Sept., " ..	4.80
996	A. Fraser .....	100	East side, Hog Island .....	21	1st " " ..	4.80
1,006	B. Martin.....	175 1/2	East side, Great Troolie Island.	7	1st " " ..	8.60
1,007	A. Richards .....	100	West side, Hog Island.....	15	1st " " ..	4.80
1,008	R. Henry .....	59	East side, Hog Island .....	21	1st " " ..	3.80
1,018	Bishop of Guiana.....	1 1/2	Left bank, Waini River .....	21	1st Oct., " ..	Free.
1,021	Mak-sy-Hung .....	100	Right bank, Barima River.....	20	15th " " ..	4.83
1,022	E. A. Lashley .....	43	Mother Bush, Leguan Island.....	21	15th " " ..	2.05
1,031	Bishop Butler .....	25	Left bank, Aruka River.....	DHMP	1st Nov., " ..	Free.
1,035	M. D'Andrade .....	150	Left bank, Barima River.....	21	1st " " ..	7.20
1,037	Dhurman.....	42 1/2	Left bank, Barima River.....	20	1st Dec., " ..	2.04
1,048	A. Scott.....	100	Right bank, Pomeroon River.....	7	1st " " ..	4.80
1,089	M. Gomes.....	47 1/2	Left bank, Pomeroon River .....	5	1st " " ..	2.28
1,064	Raghoonath.....	50	Right bank, Aruka River .....	20	1st Jan., 1896..	2.60
1,065	J. J. Ford.....	79 1/2	Left bank, Pomeroon River.....	5	1st " " ..	3.81
1,078	W. H. Goring .....	48 1/2	Left bank, Waini River .....	21	1st Feby., " ..	2.24
1,079	Raghoonath.....	100	Left bank, Barima River.....	20	1st " " ..	4.80
1,077	W. H. Goring .....	147 1/2	Right bank, Pomeroon River.....	3	15th " " ..	7.10
1,081	W. Camron.....	50	Right bank, Pomeroon River.....	5	15th " " ..	2.60
1,082	J. Correia.....	100	Right bank, Pomeroon River.....	12	1st March, " ..	4.80
1,093	Ant. Rodrigues .....	100	Right bank, Pomeroon River.....	5	1st April, " ..	4.80
1,095	Henry Jank .....	20	Left bank, Pomeroon River.....	5	1st " " ..	96
1,105	M. G. Botelho.....	101.8	Left bank, Pomeroon River.....	5	15th " " ..	4.88
1,111	Bhogersj.....	100	West side, Hog Island.....	7	1st May, " ..	4.80
1,132	F. Rodrigues.....	100	Left bank, Akawini Creek, Pomeroon River.....	10	1st " " ..	4.80
1,109	H. Cornhillson .....	111.3	Right bank, Pomeroon River.....	8	15th " " ..	5.34
1,113	B. A. Johnson .....	75	Right bank, Pomeroon River.....	8	15th " " ..	3.00
1,128	J. L'Andrade .....	100	Left bank, Barima River.....	20	1st July, " ..	4.80
1,145	F. F. Campbell.....	100	Left bank, Essequibo River .....	21	1st Sept., " ..	4.80
1,151	Sproston Dock & Foundry Co.,	4	Left bank, Barima River, at Toubas Falls .....	21	1st " " ..	19
1,153	E. Jeffrey .....	100	Left bank, Essequibo River.....	10	1st Oct., " ..	4.80
1,159	A. D'Agrella .....	50	Left bank, Pomeroon River.....	5	2nd Nov., " ..	2.60
1,171	W. Naughten .....	100	Left bank, Pomeroon River.....	5	23rd " " ..	4.80
1,210	F. F. Campbell.....	100	Left bank, Essequibo River.....	21	15th Jan., 1896..	4.80
			1896-97.			
1,272	Forbes & Co.....	83	On an Island in the Arawak Matope Falls, Ouyuni River.....		1st June, 1896..	04
1,271	M. Goring.....	100	Left bank, Waini River, Lots 2 & 3 .....		15th " " ..	4.80
1,279	J. G. Ferreira.....	150	Right bank, Pomeroon River.....		1st July, " ..	7.20
1,281	S. Melville.....	100	Right bank, Pomeroon " .....		1st " " ..	4.80
1,287	H. A. Garraway .....	50	Left bank, Pomeroon " .....		1st Aug., " ..	2.60
1,291	H. T. Norton.....	100	Left bank, Pomeroon " .....		15th " " ..	4.80
1,302	A. Rodrigues.....	100	Left bank, Pomeroon " .....		1st Sept., " ..	4.80
1,300	M. de Costa.....	100	Right bank, Pomeroon " .....		1st Oct., " ..	4.80
1,310	Clara Poeses.....	68.37	Left bank, Pomeroon " .....		1st " " ..	3.28
1,312	P. Lind .....		Left bank, Essequibo River .....		1st " " ..	1.20
1,339	J. Fraser.....		Right bank, Barima River.....		1st Jan., 1897..	4.80
1,354	H. Jones.....		Right bank, Pomeroon River.....		15th Feby., " ..	4.80

## No. 110.

## SPECIAL LICENCES OF OCCUPANCY UNDER SECTION 6 OF CROWN LANDS ORDINANCE, 1887.

No.	LIENSOR.	ACREAGE.	LOCALITY.	YEARS.	DATE FROM WHICH ACRES MONEY IS PAYABLE.	AMOUNT PER ANNUM.
COUNTY OF ESSEQUIBO.						
2..	Gopce	25	Lot 10, Barima River Left Bank, upper portion	21	11th Nov., 1890.	\$1.20
3..	John Sam	50	Lot 11, Left Bank, Barima River	21	" " "	2.40
4..	Manoel de Freitas	80	Lot 12, Left Bank, Barima River	21	" " "	2.40
5..	Gregorio Correia	75	Lot 14, and upper front portion Lot 15, Left Bank, Barima River	21	" " "	3.00
6..	Gregorio Correia	80	Lot 17, Left Bank, Barima River	21	" " "	2.40
7..	Alexander Smith	25	Lot 18, Left Bank, Barima River, lower portion	21	" " "	1.20
9..	John Glen	41	Lot 22, at Junction of the Aruka and Barima River, upper portion	21	" " "	1.97
14..	Z. A. Lewis	75	Lot 3, and upper part Lot 2, Right Bank, Barima River	21	" " "	3.00
17..	H. B. Bridgewater	50	Lot 17, Right Bank, Barima River	21	" " "	2.40
20..	Thomas Jacob	50	Lot 26, Right Bank, Barima River	21	" " "	2.40
21..	R. Haddington	41½	Lot 27, Right Bank, Barima River, lower front portion	21	" " "	1.98
28..	Henry Higgins	35	Lot 28, Right Bank, Barima River, upper portion	21	" " "	1.68
25..	Edward Harry	37½	Lot 1, Right Bank, Aruka River, lower portion	21	" " "	1.80
26..	Samuel Joseph	51	Lot 10, Right Bank, Aruka River, upper portion	21	" " "	2.45
27..	Heirs of Semoo	50	Lot 2, Right Bank, Aruka River	21	" " "	2.40
28..	Jas. McClellan	50	Lot 3, Right Bank, Aruka River	21	" " "	2.40
29..	Jno. Addison	50	Lot 4, Right Bank, Aruka River	21	" " "	2.40
31..	William Pieters	32½	Lot 5, Right Bank, Aruka River, upper portion	21	" " "	1.85
32..	M. Gomes	38	Lot 8, upper portion and Lot 9, lower portion, Right Bank, Aruka River	21	" " "	1.8
38..	Lee-sew-Moi	50	Lot 9, Right Bank, Aruka River, upper portion	21	" " "	2.40
34..	George Anthony	50	Lot 12, Right Bank, Aruka River	21	" " "	2.40
35..	George Blackburn	50	Lot 5, Left Bank, Barima River	21	" " "	2.40
36..	John Gomes	50	Right Bank, Barima River	21	" " "	2.40
39..	Wm. Campbell	100	Left Bank, Barima River	21	" " "	4.80
40..	Alphonse Figuera	50	Left Bank, Barima River	21	" " "	2.40
42..	Manoel de Freitas	51½	Lot 2, upper portion, and Lot 3, Right Bank, Amakura River	21	" " "	2.25
49..	Prospero Sabinho	50	Right Bank, Waini River	21	" " "	2.40
51..	Daniel de Freitas	50	Lot 19, Left Bank, Barima River	21	20th Sept., 1891.	2.40
52..	Robert Wells	32	Lot 1, lower portion Right Bank, Amakura River	21	" " "	1.54
53..	Francisco Murgado	39	Lot 5, upper portion, and Lot 7, lower portion Right Bank, Amakura River	21	" " "	2.83
		8sq. Roods.				
2..	H. Buchanan, Sr.	144	Lot 2, Klip, Right Bank, Mazaruni River	DHMP	1st March, 1892.	6.00
3..	H. Buchanan, Jr.	168	Lot 3, Klip, Right Bank, Mazaruni River	do.	" " "	6.00
4..	N. D. Rhodius	174	Lot 4, Klip, Right Bank, Mazaruni River	do.	" " "	6.00
5..	A. Buchanau	252	Lot 5, Klip, Right Bank, Mazaruni River	do.	" " "	6.00
6..	A. Colinet, Sr.	173	Lot 5, Klip, Right Bank, Mazaruni River	do.	" " "	6.00
7..	A. Colinet, Sr.	155	Lot 7, Klip, Right Bank, Mazaruni River	do.	" " "	6.00
8..	A. Colinet, Jr.	150	Lot 8, Klip, Right Bank, Mazaruni River	do.	" " "	6.00
9..	W. A. Boter	159	Lot 9, Klip, Right Bank, Mazaruni River	do.	" " "	6.00
10..	E. A. Colinet	283	Lot 10, Klip, Right Bank, Mazaruni River	do.	" " "	6.00
11..	M. B. Embleton	296	Lot 11, Klip, Right Bank, Mazaruni River	do.	" " "	6.00
12..	M. V. Manoel	156	Lot 12, Klip, Right Bank, Mazaruni River	do.	" " "	6.00
13..	J. Mounier		John Island, Mazaruni River	do.	10th Sept., 1894.	6.00
14..	A. Hector		Left Bank, Essequibo River, at "Agataah," Lot 1	do.	22nd Feby., 1895.	6.00
15..	Ann Brown		Do. Do. " 3	do.	" " "	6.00
16..	J. F. Mounroth		Do. Do. " 4	do.	" " "	6.00
17..	M. G. Pequeno		Do. Do. " 5	do.	" " "	6.00
18..	J. Adams		Do. Do. " 7	do.	" " "	6.00
19..	Rachael Aaron		Do. Do. " 8	do.	" " "	6.00
20..	Harriet Fye		Do. Do. " 9	do.	" " "	6.00
21..	J. Hall		Do. Do. " 11	do.	" " "	6.00



## No. 110.

## APPENDIX D.

## LIST OF WOOD CUTTING LICENCES IN EXISTENCE, 31st MARCH, 1897.

No.	LICENSER.	ACREAGE.	LOCALITY.	YEARS.	DATE FROM WHICH LICENSOR IS HELD.
COUNTY OF ESSEQUIBO.					
686	J. P. Waith.....	486	Right Bank, Abraham Creek, Pomeroun.	7	29th Jan., 1892.
692	H. Sproston & H. Sproston, Jr..	515	Right Bank, Tiger Creek, Essequibo....	5	8th Nov., 1893.
719	A. E. Matthews.....	1,967	Left Bank, Essequibo, at Almanac Creek	5	1st Feb. "
828	Do. ....	145	Left Bank, Cameron Creek, Makauria Creek.....	5	21st " "
829	Do. ....	789½	Right Bank, Makauria Creek.....	5	21st " "
797	W. Grenville.....	308½	Right Bank, Tapakuma Creek.....	5	1st May, "
798	J. I. Matthews.....	826	Both Banks, Arriwarri.....	3	1st " "
839	J. Goncalves.....	363,½	Right Bank, Essequibo River at Koka- tiri Creek.....	5	9th July, "
835	J. I. Matthews.....	1,180	Left Bank, Pairuku Creek, Mazaruni River.....	3	15th Aug. "
863	H. Sproston & H. Sproston, Jr..	977½	Right Bank, Tiger Creek, Essequibo River.....	5	1st Oct., "
965	J. C. Wellington.....	34½	Right Bank, Bonasika Creek.....	3	1st July, 1894.
1,069	J. I. Matthews.....	401½	Right Bank, Pairuku Creek, Mazaruni River.....	3	15th Feb., 1896.
1,070	A. E. Matthews.....	860	Left Bank, Labakabra Creek, Tiger Creek	3	30th May, "
1,071	Do. ....	1,075,½	Right Bank, Labakabra Creek, Tiger Creek.....	3	30th " "
1,126	H. Sproston & H. Sproston, Jr..	116.6	Kamawani Creek, Tiger Creek.....	2	1st July, "
1,128	M. G. de Freitas.....	35	Right Bank, Pomeroun River.....	3	15th " "
1,182	H. Sproston & H. Sproston, Jr..	508	Tiger Creek.....	2	15th Sept., "
1,421	J. A. Wellington.....	122	Left Bank, Kurubuka Creek, Bonaika Creek, Essequibo.....	3	26th June, 1896.
1,392	C. E. Piper.....	100	Left Bank, Dutchman's Creek, Pome- roon River ..	5	15th Aug., "
1,296	A. P. Bagle.....	93	Right Bank, Marahaurikabra Creek, Bonasika Creek, Essequibo River.....	1	1st " "
1,329	Do. ....	255	Left Bank, Marahaurikabra Creek, Bou- asika Creek, Essequibo River.....	1	1st Nov., "
1,330	Do. ....	1,394	Both Banks, Kiruni Creek, Supensan Creek, Essequibo River.....	1	1st " "
1,380	J. I. Matthews.....	43.44	Left Bank, Pyruku Creek, Mazaruni River.....	1	15th Feby., 1897.
1,381	Do. ....	872	Right Bank, Wyikabra Creek, Mazaruni	4	15th " "
1,448	Do. ....	782	Right Bank, Marshall Creek, Mazaruni.	2	25th Jan., "



APPENDIX

PART 4

EXTRACTS FROM VARIOUS AUTHORS



## No. 111.

## Origin of domestic animals in America; by Father Joseph de Acosta, 1590.

[Translated from Acosta (*Father Joseph de*). *Historia natural y moral de las Indias*. Seville, 1590.]

[*Chap. 33. Relating to Small (Sheep) and Black or Horned Cattle.*]

I find animals of three kinds in the Indies: some which have been brought over by Spaniards; others which, though not brought over by Spaniards, are found in the Indies of the same species as in Europe; others that are peculiar to the Indies and not found in Spain. To the first-mentioned class belong sheep, cows, goats, swine, horses, asses, dogs, cats and such like, for these are found in the Indies. The small cattle have multiplied greatly, and if the wool could be turned to profitable account by shipping it to Europe, it would prove one of the greatest resources of the Indies. Because there the small cattle have a great abundance of pasture, the grass in many localities not being parched by the sun; and the freedom of grass lands and common pastures is such that in Peru there are no private grazing grounds, everybody tending his cattle wherever he pleases. Hence meat there is usually abundant and cheap, as also all the other sheep products such as cheese, milk, etc. At one time they allowed the wool to be wholly wasted, until manufactures were established wherein woollen stuffs and blankets are made, which has proved a great help in that country to the poor people, as clothing from Castile is very costly. There are several manufactures in Peru, many more in New Spain, though now the wool is not so fine, and as the looms do not turn out such good fabric, the clothing going from Spain has great advantage over that made in the Indies. There were men owning from seventy to one hundred head of small cattle (sheep), and at present there are proprietors with not much less. This, in Europe, would be considered great wealth, while there it is looked upon as moderate. In many parts of the Indies, and I believe the most, small cattle are not raised properly, owing to the tallness of the grass, the soil being so luxurious that only black cattle can graze thereon, and consequently there are innumerable herds of the latter. There are two classes of these: one, the tame cattle, which roam about their ranches, as is the case in the country of the Charcas, and in other provinces of Peru, and throughout New Spain. This cattle they make use of, as is done in Spain, for meat, lard, veal, and oxen for the plow, etc. There is another kind of cattle which roam wild, and both on account of the asperity and thickness of the forest and their great number, they are not branded, nor are owned by anybody, but as game belong to the first hunter stalking them. In this manner have bulls multiplied in Hispaniola, and other neighboring islands, where they roam at large by thousands without owners, through forests and fields. These

**No. 111.**

cattle are hunted for the sake of their hides. Negroes or white men sally out on horseback, armed with houghing knives, in pursuit of bulls or cows, each animal being claimed by the one who brings it down. They flay it, and taking the hide home, leave the flesh to rot on the spot, no one caring for it, owing to its great abundance. This is such, indeed, that I was assured that in some parts of that island there was pestilence arising from the large quantity of putrified meat. This hide, which comes to Spain, constitutes one of the most lucrative industries of those islands, and of Nueva España.

There arrived from San Domingo, in the fleet of eighty-seven [1587], 37,444 bull hides. From Nueva España [Mexico] came 64,350 hides, valued at 96,532 pesos. When one of these fleets unloads, the river of Seville and that beach where such great quantities of hides and merchandise are heaped, is a sight to behold.

Goats are also raised with the products of cheveril, milk, etc. Of these a very important one is tallow, which is generally used by rich and poor alike, for illuminating purposes, because owing to its abundance, it comes cheaper than oil, although not all the tallow thus consumed proceeds from the goat. It is also used for dressing shoe-leather, but I do not think that this leather is as good as that brought from Castile.

Horses have been reared, and are still reared of select species, in many or the greater parts of the Indies, and some of the breeds are as good as the best of Castile, no less for racing and show, than for riding and draught. Therefore, the use of horses for traveling is most common there, though mules are not wanting, but plentiful, rather, especially where the droves are composed of them, as in Terra Firma.

Of asses there are not so many, nor are they in so much use, and for working they are of very little service.

Some camels, though few, I saw in Peru, brought over from the Canaries, and reproduced there but to a limited extent.

Dogs in Hispaniola have grown in number and size, so that they have become the pest of that island, as they devour the cattle and roam in packs about the country. Those who kill them receive a reward, as is the case with wolves in Spain. There were no genuine dogs in the Indies, but a species resembling puppies which the Indians called Alco; and from their similarity to those brought from Spain, these they also call Alco; and they are so fond of these little dogs that they would take the food out of their own mouth to give it to them; and when they travel they take them along with them upon their shoulders or in their bosom. And if they are ill the little dog must be there with them, though of no service whatever, except to keep them company.

**No. 111.**

[Chapter 34. *Relating to some animals of Europe, which the Spaniards found in the Indies and how they got there.*]

Certain it is that all these animals whereof I have spoken, were brought over from Spain, and that none of them existed in the Indies at the time of their discovery, not yet one hundred years ago; and besides its being a matter regarding which there are witnesses still living, proof enough is furnished by the fact that the Indians have no words in their language wherewith to designate these animals, but avail themselves of the same Spanish terms, though corrupted; because from the place whence they received the thing, not being acquainted with it, they took the word to call it by. This rule I have found to hold good in ascertaining what things the Indians had before the advent of the Spaniards, and what things they had not. Because such as they already had and knew, they also had names for, while those which came to them as new they likewise designated by new names; these, as a rule being the same Spanish names, though pronounced after their own fashion, as horse, wine, wheat, etc. Animals, then, were found of the same species as those of Europe, which, however, had not been brought over by the Spaniards. There are lions, tigers, bears, boars, foxes, and other wild beasts and animals, concerning which in Book First we made the strong point that inasmuch as it is not likely that they came to the Indies by sea, for they could not possibly have swum across the ocean; and for men to bring them aboard with them, is madness; it follows that at some point where one continent stretches out and approaches the other, they must have crossed and gradually peopled the new world. For, according to divine scripture, all these animals escaped in Noah's ark, and thence multiplied themselves throughout the world. The lions that I have seen over there are not of a reddish color, nor do they have those bushy locks with which they are usually painted; they are grey, and not so brave as they are represented to be. To hunt them the Indians get together in a circle which they call *chaco*, and kill them with stones, sticks and other weapons. These lions are also wont to climb trees, where they are killed with javelins or crossbows, or better still, with arquebuses. The tigers are held to be more daring and cruel, and in their spring there is more danger, because it is treacherous. They are spotted, precisely as described by naturalists. I have sometimes heard say that these tigers fatten upon Indians, and that this was the reason why they seldom attacked Spaniards, from among whom they would snatch an Indian and carry him away. The bears, which in the Cuzco language are called *otoroncos*, are of the same species as those found here, and are ant-eaters. As to bee-hives there is little experience of them here, because honey-combs, wherever found, are produced on trees or underground, and not in hives as in Castile; and the honey-combs that I have seen in the province of Charcas, which is called there *Lechiguanas*, are of a dark color and contain very little honey; they seem more like sweet straw than honey-combs. It is said that the

**No. 111.**

bees are as small as flies, and that they swarm under ground; the honey is acid and black. At other places better honey is found as also more developed honey-combs, as in the province of Tucuman, in Chili, and in Cartagena. Of boars I know little beyond the testimony of people who say that they have seen them. Foxes and animals that prey upon cattle, are more plentiful than shepherds would wish. Aside from these animals which are ferocious and destructive there are useful ones, not brought over by the Spaniards, such as deer of which there is a great quantity in all those forests, but most of them are not altered; at least I have neither seen nor heard of any one who had seen them with antlers; all are hornless like roes. There is no doubt in my mind, but I rather find it quite probable and almost certain, that all these fleet and naturally wild animals, crossed over from one hemisphere to the other at a point where both come closer together, inasmuch as they are not to be met with in some very large islands situated at a great distance from the mainland. This is what I arrive at after some experience and observation.

**No. 112.**

Notes on the West Indies, made during an expedition under General Sir Ralph Abercrombie, 1806: By George Pinckard, M. D., Deputy Inspector-General of Hospitals to His Majesty's Forces, etc.

[FROM PINCKARD (George, M. D.). Notes on the West Indies, etc. London, 1806, vol. 2, pp. 161, 401; vol. 3, pp. 108, 408.]

[Vol. 2, p. 161.]

“Our destination is no longer a secret! The captain went yesterday on board the *Commodore*, and received his instructions—when the Dutch colonies upon the coast of Guiana were avowed to be the object of our expedition.”

[Vol. 2, p. 164.]

“I have again the pleasure of addressing you upon terra firma, and of telling you that the united colony of Essequibo and Demerara is ours.”

[Vol. 2, p. 176.]

“Having secured possession of the colony of Essequibo and Demerara, a division of our armament has been detached to the attack of the adjoining settlement of Berbische, which separates us from Surinam.”

[Vol. 2, p. 177.]

“We are taught that it will not be possible to procure fresh animal provisions in these colonies, in the quantity necessary for the army; but it is



**No. 112.**

suggested that we may obtain a supply from the Spaniards, who have great numbers of wild cattle, in the island of Trinidad, and upon the neighbouring coast of Oronoko."

[*Vol. 2, p. 182.*]

"Religion, and even its forms seem to be, here (Demerara) dispensed with, for they have neither a place of worship, nor of interment."

[*Vol. 2, p. 212.*]

"Consistent with the order of narrative you wish me to observe in offering you my notes, I may now tell you that the general, and part of the detachment that accompanied him, are returned to Demerara, leaving the 93d regiment, in garrison, at Berbische—that colony having capitulated upon the same terms as Essequibo and Demerara. The commerce of the colonies is to be directed to the ports of England; in return for which she offers them protection and defense. All that concerns the military proceedings is to rest with the English; but, in all that regards the civil administration, the colonies are to preserve the established laws and form of government, until the end of the war; and the present Dutch governors are not to be removed."

[*Vol. 2, pp. 213-214.*]

"The Dutch colony of Surinam borders Berbische, on our right, and a little further up the coast is the French colony of Cayenne. With such restless neighbours about us, we shall require to be watchful and alert. On our left we approach the river Oronoko, and what is termed the Spanish Main: and not far from the coast of Essequibo is the Spanish island of Trinidad. From this quarter we hope to procure beef—from the other we expect only blows.

"A communication is to be opened directly with the Spaniards, in order to negotiate the purchase of cattle from the woods, which, we are told, they will be glad to sell at six or seven dollars per head."

[*Vol. 2, p. 316.*]

"The whole scenery at New Amsterdam, as well as at Fort William Frederic, betrays the infant state of the colony. The dreariness of the land, just robbed of its thick woods—the nakedness that prevails around the Government house—the want of roads and paths—the wild savanna—the heavy forest; in short all that meets the eye conveys the idea of a country just emerging from its original wildness, into cultivation."

[*Vol. 2, pp. 399-401.*]

"At the distance of about nine miles from Johanna, the estate Arends suddenly opened to our view, and the scene before the eye became unusually varied and European.

\* \* \*

**No 112.**

“Our reception at Arends was friendly and cordial.

\* \* \* \* \*

Accordingly in the evening, M. Pairels, with his own boat and slaves, undertook to conduct the party to M. Heynemann's the remotest European settlement of the colony. We embarked from Arends on a small river or creek,—which, at a small distance from M. Pairels, falls into the great river Berbische. On the point of land, at the angle formed by the two streams, is a small battery, and an old established military post, which is still kept up by a Dutch guard, or at least the semblance of it, formed of a few antiquated invalids. We called to request of them to tell the negroes who were about to pass with our boat, that we were gone from Arends; and to direct them to follow us to M. Heynemann's. The guard consisted of about thirty of the old Dutch soldiers: nearly the whole of whom were in a state of intoxication, and not a man at his post. You will believe that it was not a station of high importance. Indeed, on account of its distance from the coast, it seemed only calculated to overawe the negroes, and the Indians of the vicinity, or to afford a sort of provision for a few of the soldiers who had been worn out in the service.”

[*Vol. 3, pp. 108-109.*]

“Of news you will expect but little from this quarter. We hold quiet possession of the colonies which surrendered to us, and the cultivation and commerce is prosecuted with as much industry as though we were resting in the bosom of peace. Great numbers of slaves have been imported, since our arrival, and British property is employed to extend and improve the settlements, with no less ardor than might be expected if these valuable possessions were confirmed to England by a definite treaty, guaranteed by the strongest powers in Europe.”

\* \* \*

[*Vol. 3, pp. 168-170.*]

For some time past we have been anxiously looking for news from England. Papers are at length arrived, and we read, that instead of drawing nigh to a peace, we are only now entering upon a wide-spreading war. The great coalition against France appears to be falling away—or rather to be veering round, and to point against the defenders, instead of the disturbers of mankind! Our sailors will not lament that the Spaniards have thrown away the scabbard, and joined the list of their enemies; for, with them, they always expect to exchange cannon-ball, for the more fulminating ore of the Mexican mines.

Among the flimsy pretences urged by Spain for their act of folly, and self-degradation, we read that the capture of these colonies is wrought up into a mighty offence. Poor slaves of the great nation, they must plead something, however absurd! They are told to do it: and in their shameless imbecility, it only remains to them \* \* \* to obey.

**No 112.**

By inspecting the map you will find that our situation upon this coast is now rendered peculiarly interesting, having enemies on each side, the wild Indians and deep woods behind, and the foaming ocean before us. The Spaniards are on our left and to leeward; the Dutch and French to windward on our right;—close in our rear are heavy and impenetrable forests, inhabited by wild and naked tribes; and our whole front is bounded by the open sea. Our new foes will have more cause of alarm from us, than we can possibly have from them;—being to leeward of us, we shall be able to run down, at any time, and surprise them at Trinidad, or the Caraccas: whereas it might cost them a voyage of many days to make their passage, against the trade winds, far enough to annoy us with any effect: further, the superiority of our fleet give us so entirely the command of the coast, that the Spanish vessels may be expected to afford a plentiful harvest to our sloops and privateers.”

[*Vol. 3, pp. 177-178.*]

“Rumour has lately threatened us with an attack from Surinam, but we feel no alarm on the subject; having an adequate force to meet the enemy at sea, and troops enough, on shore, to resist any detachment which the Dutch might be able to send from the colony.”

[*Vol. 3, pp. 249-251.*]

“A considerable time has now passed since our arrival upon this coast, and, having remained so long without any interruption, we had almost believed that the many foes upon our borders meant to leave us in quiet possession of the colonies we had taken; but we have, at length, been assailed from the quarter, whence we last expected it, having had a skirmish with the Spaniards to leeward, instead of the Dutch or French, who in a more imposing aspect, threatened us from windward. Fixing upon a favorable moment when they expected that the garrison might be sunk in repose, after the festivities of the Queen’s birthday, a party of Spaniards crossed the river Oronoko in the night of the 19th inst.,\* and made an attack upon our outpost at Moroko, the remotest point of the colony of Essequibo. To their disappointment our troops were upon the alert, and they were observed before they landed. Quickly the whole force at the post was under arms, and at stepping on shore the Dons met a very warm and lively reception. The firing was returned on the part of the Spaniards, who boldly rushed forward, expecting to subdue the garrison, but, after the contest had continued a short time, they were defeated, and some being killed, some wounded, and others driven into the river, those who were able to make their escape, precipitately took to their boats and retreated. Happily not one of our men was killed, but the commanding officer and nine of the soldiers were wounded, some of the latter, we fear, mortally.

---

\* 19th of February, 1797.

**No. 112.**

This is the first rencontre we have had with the enemy since our arrival in Guiana; and from the result it is probable that the next assault will not be from the quarter of the Oronoko.

\* \* \* \* \*

“Two of the Bucks, or Indians, were dispatched from the post, to bring us the news of the action, and they, with the zeal and punctuality of more regular couriers, reached Stabroek on the 23d, four days after the battle.”

[Vol. 3, p. 306.]

“Anticipating much of information and amusement from his conversation, we were desirous to have the old Spaniard (*Pezano*) as our guide, from the Post-holder's to the Falls, and therefore invited him to accompany us in the boat to Mr. Mutz's.

\* \* \* \* \*

Having obtained his promise, we were satisfied, and leaving to his choice the mode in which he should travel, we took our leave, and proceeded, without further delay, to Ooest Vriesland, the abode of the Post-holder.

\* \* \* \* \*

This is the remotest home of the white people, the furthest from the coast and the sea, and the most distant habitation possessed by Europeans in the settlement. It forms the link of connection between the bay inhabitants of the woods, and the white inhabitants of the colony, being established by the latter as a post of communication for the purpose of administering friendly offices, and cultivating an amicable intercourse with the Indians.

[Vol. 3, p. 307.]

“From Mr. Mutz we learned that, by making a long day of the morrow, we might complete our journey to the “Falls,” and return to his house in the evening. This was pleasant as unexpected intelligence; for beyond the Post holder's lived neither European nor colonist; nor was there any place of call whatsoever. The wild forest was possessed only by its wild inhabitants, and for every accommodation, we must depend upon the limited resources of our boat.”

[Vol. 3, pp. 332-333.]

“No party, so numerous,\* had preceded us in journeying so far up the river (200 miles); and we are told that there is not in the whole colony an equal number of white persons, who have travelled to so great a distance from the coast.”

\* \* \* \* \*

“It had happened to me to make a somewhat similar expedition up the river Berbische, and I frequently hear it remarked, that I have already

---

\* 7 whites and 15 servants.

**No. 112.**

seen more of the country, the forests, and the rivers of these colonies, than almost any of the inhabitants, although many of them have been here a greater number of years, than I can yet count of months."

[*Vol. 3, pp. 347-348.*]

"The leading heads of news which met our return, were the king's proclamation on the unsuccessful issue of Lord Malmsbury's Embassy to Paris—the confirmation of an expedition from Martinique having captured the Island of Trinidad—and a report that another expedition was fitting out against Porto Rico. We have since heard of the disastrous fate of a French squadron upon our coast, and their unsuccessful invasion of Ireland; and it is now rumoured that an expedition will soon sail from the islands to attack Surinam." "The capture of Trinidad we hail as an event peculiarly fortunate for these colonies, as it again opens to us the prospect we had contemplated, previous to the rupture with Spain, and promises to us a supply of fresh provisions, by our establishing a contract for the purchase of some of the wild cattle, which are found in the woods of that settlement."

[*Vol. 3, pp. 388-389.*]

"Before the coast was brought into cultivation, the forest reached very near to the edge of the water, and from the land being low, it was frequently overflowed by the tides. Now, there is a cultivated territory, a mile and a half in depth, between the ocean and the forest; but this is so entirely flat, as wholly to escape the eye, and on sailing towards the coast, the trees still look as if they were growing within the edge of the sea.

"Perhaps none but the plodding industrious Hollander would have attempted to settle such a country—where wood and water concealed every appearance of the land, and seemed to bid defiance to all the powers of cultivation. Nor indeed were the early labours of the first settlers directed to this part of the coast. They sailed far up the rivers, and established the settlements upon their more elevated banks, at a distance remote from the sea; not venturing to devote their industry to the immediate borders of the ocean, until they were prompted to it by the enterprise of more adventurous planters from the British islands."

[*Vol. 3, p. 398.*]

"The country is divided into a certain number of districts, with a burgher-captain appointed to each, on whom devolves the more immediate execution of the public regulations, whether made for the particular convenience of the respective districts, or for the common benefit of the colony at large."

[*Vol. 3, pp. 402-403.*]

"The Dutch upon originally establishing the settlements, as I have already said, cultivated only the banks of the rivers, and until within the

**No. 112.**

last twelve or fifteen years, scarcely any plantations were formed upon the coast. It is since this period that English adventure has taught the plodding Hollander that he had overlooked his best interests, in not bestowing his industry upon the immediate border of the ocean; and the seashore already exhibits one rich and fertile field, nearly throughout the whole extent, from the river Demerara to the river Berbische."

"The colony of Berbische was the first settled; but that of Demerara has proceeded with far the most rapid improvement. The number of estates now in cultivation upon the sea coast, from the Demerara river to the border of the colony of Berbische, is one hundred and sixteen; all of which are planted with cotton, except the 'Kitty' belonging to Mr. T. Cuming, which has been recently planted with sugar.\* This part of the colony is divided into four districts, the Burgher Captains, presiding over which, are all British planters, viz.: Mr. Lockland Cuming, Mr. Rogers, Mr. Telfer and Mr. Sutherland."

**No. 113.**

**Description of the Colonies of Essequibo, Demerara, Pomeroon and Berbice, 1809, by Henry Bolingbroke, Deputy Vendue-Master at Surinam.**

[From BOLINGBROKE (Henry), *A Voyage to the Demerary, etc.*, London, 1809.]

## [Chapter I.]

This sketch of the settlements on the Berbice, the Demerary, the Essequibo, and the Pomeroon, is, in great part, copied from successive letters written by the author to his family, during the course of seven years' residence, at Stabrock, without any view to publication.

\* \* \* \* \*

The only object for attempting this statistical account, is a wish of displaying the importance of the settlements, now possessed by the British, along the northern coast of South America. They are undervalued; and were abandoned at the peace of Amiens, with a levity, which lowered the character of our statesmen for information. If this endeavour, to make the district more known, should succeed, the author's end is reached.

\* \* \* \* \*

Accident determined my destiny. The partner of a house in Stabrock, who was at London in 1798, wished to engage an artiled clerk on terms which my friends thought liberal. Fancy and ambition painted, at the termination of a West Indian voyage, new forms of pleasure and of gain;

\* Since these notes were written the number of estates has much increased, and several that were only planted with cotton, now produce the most luxurious crops of sugar.

**No. 113.**

and I embarked with delight on board the *Comet*, Captain Barrow, at Liverpool, on the 25th December, 1798.

\* \* \* \* \*

After a passage of seven weeks, it may naturally be supposed we were very happy when one of the seamen, from the foretop gallant masthead, gave us the joyful warning of "Land, ahead!" which was on the 24th of February, [1799].

[Chapter III.]

Stabrock, the political metropolis, and principal seat of exchange for produce of all the countries adjacent to the Demerary and Essequibo, is situated on the east side of the river Demerary.

\* \* \* \* \*

The population of Stabrock consists of about fifteen hundred whites, two thousand free people of colour, and five thousand negroes.

\* \* \* \* \*

The laws oblige every man from the age of sixteen to fifty to enroll himself in the burgher militia.

[Chapter VI.]

Nine miles west of the Demerary is the river Essequibo, which, at its mouth, commencing from Borasierre, and extending to Kapoeja creek, is twenty-one miles broad. The former serves as a boundary to the two colonies.

\* \* \* \* \*

The shires of Essequibo and Demerary, from their conjunction with each other, are comprised under one government, though two distinct colonies. Each has its court of justice and subordinate officers, but one court of police suffices for both, which is held in Demerary, at Stabrock.

But to return to the Essequibo river—Fort Island, about fifteen miles from the mouth, is the seat of the administrative government, and the residence of the commander, who is president of the court. A considerable expence was incurred here in the erection of a battery, which mounted forty pieces of cannon, with covered ways and ramparts, surrounded by a deep moat, over which a draw-bridge was thrown. This is now fast decaying. The cannon are dismounted; and the fort is totally deserted, save by the wash-women, who still find it a convenient place for hanging linen to dry. A few starved cattle of mynheer Blecker's, the tavern-keeper, are allowed to browse there, being intended for the repast of the very honourable members of the court of justice exclusively, who in this instance shewed their spirit of selfishness, in not permitting the numerous people that are obliged to dance attendance, when the court is sitting, to share

**No. 113.**

with them the conveniency of the only tavern in the island, and indeed, in the colony. \* \* \* \* \*

\* \* \* \* \*

The river Supinama falls into the Essequibo. Many estates and settlements are already made on its banks, and it is also the residence of several timber cutters, and brickmakers, the soil for which is particularly good.

\* \* \* \* \*

In 1698, the first settlement was founded on the Essequibo; but, owing to an erroneous idea that the land adjacent to the sea was too low and swampy for cultivation, it was commenced on the higher land, nearly one hundred miles from the mouth, where the soil was by no means so favourable. The land was granted gratis, under express stipulations that such a proportion should be under cultivation in a given time, with the farther inducement of a larger grant, should the terms of the first have been complied with; and as a punishment for non-compliance, a fine was to be levied, which, if not paid, the land and improvements were to be sold for that purpose. A governor was appointed, and a conditional code of laws was given by the West Indian Company of Holland.

\* \* \* \* \*

The high price of land on the east coast of Demerary had advanced so much, as soon induced adventurers with a small capital, to seek for other lands at a distance from Stabroek, which from that circumstance could be purchased at a much lower price. An extensive range of sea coast to the westward of Essequibo, called the Arabische coast, and Pomaroon river, and the coast contiguous to it, presented themselves as eligible situations for cultivation, and accordingly a number of adventurers found settlements there, which are at this time held in as high estimation for the production of cotton as any land in the colonies. The west coast of Pomaroon juts on the boundary of the Orinoko, where there is a military post established.

Since the English took possession of the colonies, they have cultivated the whole of that coast, extending upwards of fifty miles, and are now making estates on the banks of the Pomaroon, which river is half a mile broad at its entrance, and is difficult of access from projecting banks of mud on each side, and a bar of the same consistency, which runs across, prevents any vessels entering drawing more than nine feet water.

Up to the edges of this river the melancholy traces of ancient cultivation and abandoned residences, are frequently apparent. Above the fork, formed by the junction of the Harlipyak with the Pomaroon, the Hollanders had formerly three settlements of some extent. Fort Zealand, which the English destroyed in 1666; Middleburg, which at the same period was plundered and abandoned; and Harlipyak, which borrowed or lent the name of the contiguous stream. The present English system of cultivation begins with the lands nearest to the sea; but the Dutch, probably from the fear of those buccaneering expeditions, of which Sir Walter Raleigh had



**No. 113.**

given a specimen, at the expence of the Spanish settlers in Guyana, began, but fruitlessly, their establishments at the interior extremity of the lowlands, and as far up the different rivers as they found the navigation convenient and the evil docile. I trust it will not be long before the British have covered the reproachful traces of ruin and desertion, with new dwellings and wider cultivation.

The estates already made between the Essequibo and Pomaroon rivers, are variously valued from five to eighty thousand pounds sterling each, according to the extent of cultivation, number of buildings, etc., etc.

\* \* \* \* \*

**No. 114.**

**The Boundaries of Essequibo, by T. S. St. Clair, 1834.**

[ST. CLAIR (*Lt.-Col. Thomas S.*), *Residence in the West Indies, etc.*, London, 1834.]

[*Volume I., Chapter 3.*]

To return to my journal. I had been nearly nine months with the fourth battalion of the Royals, in Hamilton, when an order came down from His Royal Highness for Lieutenant St. Clair and Ensigns Grant and Gordon to prepare themselves for embarkation, to join the first battalion in the West Indies. I immediately obtained leave of absence to prepare myself for a residence in so warm a climate, and, ascertaining that the vessel in which we were ordered to take our passage, would not sail from Greenock before the month of November, I arrived in Edinburgh with a joyous heart at the idea of going on foreign service.

\* \* \* \* \*

The maps of South America had long been my study, and I found the small spot to which I was bound (British Guyana) a mere speck on this enormous continent. The rivers Corantine, Berbice, Demerara and Essequibo, were the four large arms of our possessions, which bordered on Colombia; and it appeared as if British, Dutch, and French Guyana, were merely stepping-stones for these countries in South America.

[*Volume I., Chapter 5.*]

On New Year's day, the 1st January, 1806, we made soundings in thirty-five fathom water, extremely muddy, but no appearance of land.

On the 2d at 3 P. M. "Land ho!" was sung out from the mast-head; but it was late in the evening before we could discover it from the deck; and then merely the tops of lofty trees were visible.

\* \* \* \* \*

By the ship's reckoning we supposed ourselves to be off the mouth of the Corantine river, which empties itself into the Atlantic between the

**No. 114.**

Surinam and Berbice rivers. During the night we altered our course, and, bearing off before the wind, stood down the coast with easy sail, keeping in five fathoms water.

\* \* \* \* \*

While the boat was preparing, he invited myself and Ensigns Grant and Gordon to accompany him on shore; and, after a tedious sail of three hours and a half through high breakers as we neared the shallow coast, I at last distinctly behold the continent first discovered by that extraordinary navigator, Columbus. The finest trees were growing in wild luxuriance to the water's edge. The plantain-tree, the cocoanut, and the beautiful feathered cabbage-tree, were seen grouped among the stately wallaba, the lofty mora, and other magnificent forest-trees. The tints of their foliage, with the clear ethereal sky, struck us with astonishment. We at length safely jumped from our boat on *terra firma*, after a voyage of thirty-nine days, the *Brilliant* being a fast sailer.

[Volume I., Chapter 7.]

The three colonies of Essequibo, Demerara and Berbice, surrendered to the British flag on the 23d April, 1796, to an expedition under the orders of General White.

\* \* \* \* \*

The Government-house, small and inconvenient for the representative of majesty, is situated in this street, having immediately opposite to it a large wooden building, which the Dutch call the barrack or gaol, and which is generally too well filled with unfortunate culprits.

\* \* \* \* \*

The Court-house, an old tottering building, supported with poles, is near the river, and consists of two apartments, the upper used for the court, the lower as a place of divine worship, in which service is performed every Sunday and prayers are read, first by a Dutch and afterwards by an English clergyman.

From the church may be seen the decayed and rotten condition of the flooring of the Court House, which is a perfect emblem of the state of the laws in this colony.

The river Demerara is navigable for ships of burden for a considerable distance from its entrance, and its banks were at one time cultivated for above one hundred miles into the interior; but the planters, finding the lower parts of the river and the sea-coast more profitable, and congenial to the cultivation of cotton, sugar, and coffee, have deserted the upper parts and settled nearer to the sea.

\* \* \* \* \*

The colony of Demerara, which derives its name from the river, is bounded on the east by the Albany creek; this takes its course from the interior of the country, and, running in a northerly direction, empties

**No. 114.**

itself into the Atlantic Ocean. The western limits are marked by the small creek Bonnosique, a distance of twenty miles up the great river Essequibo; formerly the Bossicay creek was the western boundary, but by an act passed by Governor Bentinck, in 1806, it was extended to the present limits.

The southerly limits are undetermined, being a boundless tract of almost impenetrable forest, thinly inhabited by the wild Indians, through which innumerable small creeks and rivers take their winding course, and empty themselves, with few exceptions, into the larger streams, such as the Essequibo, Demerara, Berbice, Corantine, and Surinam. All these run in a northerly direction, at the rate of six or seven knots an hour, and in the rainy season even at ten knots, entering the sea with such force as to discolour the water of the ocean to an astonishing distance from land. Owing to the strong current of these rivers, a bank of mud is generally formed across the channel, about six or seven miles from its entrance, which circumstance renders the navigation of these rivers difficult to those unacquainted with the nature of the coast. The bar of Demerara has, at low water, eleven feet, and rises to eighteen. The bottom, being soft, does not injure vessels, which frequently run on it, and wait for the tide to float them off.

The colony of Essequibo adjoins to Demerara, being under the same governor, and is our most leeward possession in this country. The creek or river, called Morocco, is the boundary line between this colony and the Spanish Main, which is not far from the Pomeron creek.

Besides the four great rivers above named, there are numerous smaller ones, called, in this country, creeks, but which in Europe would be considered large rivers. The principal of these is the Mahaica, which runs about twenty miles to windward of the Demerara, between that river and the Albany creek. At the entrance of the Mahaica is a small military post, with a battery of two guns, to prevent a surprise from an enemy by sea, and it is at present commanded by Lieutenant McBeth of the Royals.

From its being rather more openly situated to the breeze of the trade-winds than any other place in these colonies, it has been considered the most healthy spot in this part of the country, and all the convalescents from the garrison in Demerara, and sometimes Berbice, are sent thither for recovery, and generally with good effect.

The Maicony creek is likewise on the east or windward coast, and not very far from the Mahaica.

The Bossary is on the leeward coast, near the river Essequibo. Others, too numerous to mention here, empty themselves into the large rivers as tributary streams.

\* \* \* \* \*

As I have just mentioned, a little above Fort St. Andrews, the Canje river runs into the Berbice. This stream takes its source an immense distance back in the country, and runs in a winding direction between the

**No. 114.**

Corantine and Berbice; its banks are cultivated only at a distance of twelve miles from its entrance. It is not known precisely where this stream takes its rise; from the accounts of some Indians it is supposed to come from a large lake. The source of the Berbice river has likewise never yet been discovered, which appears extraordinary, considering the enterprising spirit of my countrymen.

\*             \*             \*

[*Volume II, Chapter I.*]

The Essequibo river runs about twelve miles to leeward of the Demerara. The colony of that name commences at the Bonesique creek, and is bounded on the west by a supposed line which divides the Spanish settlement of Oronoko from the English possessions. This stream is upwards of twenty miles in breadth at its mouth, and is the finest river in possession of the English in this part of the world.

The cultivation along the coast extends a little to leeward of the Pomeroon river; and, on its banks, at a short distance from the sea, is situated a strong military post, containing a block house, at present commanded by Lieutenant Cook, of the 4th West India Regiment. This fort is separated from the Spanish possessions on the banks of the Oronoko by an extensive space of wild and savage country; but, notwithstanding this barrier, the Spaniards distress and annoy the planters on the leeward coast and their coasting vessels exceedingly, having a number of small boats and canoes fitted out and numerous manned with Negroes, Indians, and runaway slaves, who pass from these colonies into the Colombian government; and many of these individuals have shown them the way to their master's estates, which have been plundered and their boats loaded with produce seized and carried into the Oronoko.

There are four fine cultivated islands within the mouth of this river, which yield the finest crops of cotton and sugar: they are called Wake-nam, Leguan, Varkin, or Hog Island, and Tiger Island.

\*             \*             \*             \*             \*

Fort Island is situated about fifteen miles above these, and twenty from the sea; and, owing to this series of obstructions in the current of the river, many banks of mud are formed, and, running out to sea, cause the navigation to be exceedingly difficult and dangerous: for this reason, the Demerara is much more convenient for trade, and consequently is quite the Thames of this part of the world.

The Essequibo was the first of these rivers upon which the Europeans settled; and when this district was raised to a government, the spot chosen for the seat of authority was about fifty miles from its entrance; but this situation was soon found to be inconvenient, on account of its distance from the sea, and the difficulty experienced by vessels in sailing up to the

**No. 114.**

settlement, owing to the strong currents of these rivers, to which I have already adverted. The seat of government was, therefore, soon removed lower down to Fort Island, only twenty miles from the sea; and, since the cession of Dutch Guiana to the English in 1796, the commandeur is the chief personage residing in this colony; he acts under the lieutenant-governor of Demerara. The Essequibo courts are held in Fort Island, the commandeur sitting as president.

In November, 1807, strong suspicions of a revolt among the Indians of the interior against the Whites, or Europeans, were entertained. Great bodies of these wild people had been observed crossing different rivers toward the Essequibo; and it was supposed that some tribes from Colombia, or, as they are here called, Spanish Indians, had joined them, and were urging the quiet Arrawakas to commit depredations on us for the sake of plunder. It was likewise reported to Colonel Nicholson by the postholder up the Demerara, whose duty I have already stated it to be to watch the movements of the savages, that they had all of them deserted wigwams, or huts, on the banks of this river, and had proceeded in great numbers, with all their families, towards the Essequibo. Dispatches were received daily by the acting governor from the commandeur of Essequibo, describing the great alarm prevailing among the planters on the banks and islands of this colony, in consequence of the arrival of information that the postholder up this river had been attacked, and that the inhabitants of one or two settlements had also been surprised, and some of them put to death. It was further intimated that great fears were entertained, lest with the force which the Indians had collected they might risk an attack on Fort Island, which was now entirely defenseless, being without arms, ammunition, or troops to defend it.

\* \* \* \* \*

In consequence, however, of so many alarming reports, the acting lieutenant-governor thought proper to send, for the defence of Fort Island, a military party composed of detachments from the Royal Regiment and 4th West India Regiment, under the command of Lieutenant Baillie of the Royals, with muskets and ammunition sufficient to arm the whole inhabitants in case of necessity.

We were kept nearly a fortnight in suspense, when intelligence was brought that the Indians had retired into the interior; and it was supposed, from the little information which had been collected respecting them, and some complaints which had been made, that their anger and discontent had been caused by the free coloured people, residing on the banks of the Essequibo, having defrauded them, and detained their young children as slaves. The procedure charged in this last accusation would have been a direct violation of the laws of these colonies, which are particularly strict on this head; because it is to the interest of our government to reconcile this people to our possession of their lands, and conducive to our peace and comfort to keep on amicable terms with them. Colonel Nicholson there-

**No. 114.**

fore determined to make a journey in person up this river, to visit the different settlements, and, if possible, to discover the offenders and give redress to the injured Indians.

On the 22d of November, 1807, we left Stabroek, and slept at Perica point, on the east bank of the Essequibo river. \* \*

\* \* \* \* \*

The 23d of November we spent at Perica plantation; and after breakfast I sauntered out with my gun in my hand and shot several beautiful birds, the trees being actually covered with them.

\* \* \* \* \*

But to return to South America. The next morning, the 24th of November, by eight o'clock, the colonel, myself, and servants, were seated on the deck of a small schooner, and steering our course up the right bank of the Essequibo River, in order to make Fort Island, which was scarcely visible in the centre of it.

\* \* \* \* \*

On the governor's touching land a salute was fired from two petararoes, and Lieutenant Baillie's detachment presented arms. The commandeur, Mr. P. C. Ouckama, Mr. Rassin, fiscal, and Mr. De Grout, secretary of the colony of Essequibo, came down to the water's edge to receive him, and attended us up to the commandeur's house, where we had accommodation.

This settlement, or town, if it can be so called, consists of only a few scattered wooden houses, intermixed with Negro huts, placed on the east side of this island. To the right of the landing-place is situated Fort Zelandia, a small regular work, consisting of four redoubts, with a large building occupying its centre; this is a kind of block-house built of brick, and from its parapet-roof troops may defend all approaches to it. This place was erected by the Dutch in 1766, as a place of security, in case of a revolt amongst the Negroes, or to defend themselves against the native Indians. Since 1803 this fort has been disarmed, and is now fast falling into decay.

\* \* \* \* \*

I found that the land about this settlement to be the most barren spot I have yet seen in this country. The soil consists entirely of a binding clay, which scarcely affords nourishment enough for the production of a short, stunted grass; still, the common bushwood of this country grew in abundance, and a few trees of the palm species raised their feathery heads.

[Volume II., Chapter 2.]

On the morning of Wednesday, the 25th of November, our little fleet, consisting of three schooners and four canoes, weighed anchor and stood up the river with a light breeze.

\* \* \*

**No. 114.**

Our party now consisted of Mr. P. C. Ouckama, the commandeur; Rassin, the fiscal; de Grout, secretary; Messrs. Van Sertina, Moliere, Stall, de Fallois, Strahan, the garrison chaplain of Demerara, who joined us last evening; Lieutenant Baillie, and myself; and the servants and boatmen augmented our number to nearly fifty persons.

\* \* \* \* \*

At three in the afternoon we made the Masserony river, entering the left bank of the Essequibo. It is nearly two miles in breadth at its mouth; and here the scenery differed much from that which we had already passed. \* \* \* At five we landed at Mon Repos, and de Grout made immediate preparations for dinner.

\* \* \* \* \*

[Volume II., Chapter 3.]

As I seized every opportunity of amusing myself with my pencil, Mr. de Grout accompanied me a short distance down the river in one of our canoes, with a couple of Negro paddlers, to Bartica Point, a small settlement which we had passed the preceding day. It consisted of three small huts, placed on the top of a gentle declivity, which commands a fine view down the Essequibo river to the right hand, and up the Masserony to the left. These huts are situated immediately over the junction of these two large streams. On the right or opposite bank of the Essequibo are situated the remains of the first settlement formed by the Dutch in this river, as the seat of Government, but which was afterwards abandoned, as already stated. The old cultivated estates are now covered with wild bush and underwood.

From this point, looking down the river, the Negro Cap and Three Brothers are not to be seen, owing to the point of the left bank of the Masserony river projecting far into the Essequibo; and on this neck of land was formerly situated the old sugar estate, called Quarrona, the first planted in this country, but long since deserted.

\* \* \* \* \*

Above this point, in the centre of the Essequibo, is an island named by the Indians Potupatima; it is a most beautiful little spot, covered with lovely trees of the finest foliage; and not far from it is another fine island called Koay.

The huts situated on the point are neatly built from the manicol tree, and are habitations for the slaves belonging to this wood-cutting plantation. These people earn a considerable profit for their owners by their labour, in cutting and sending the wood down the river to Fort Island, where it is disposed of to the numerous estates on this river, sawed up, and made into barrels for conveying sugar or cotton to Europe; employed in building houses and bridges, and for other purposes.

\* \* \* \* \*

**No. 114.**

Fearful of detaining our friends at Mon Repos, we now returned to our canoe, and started for that settlement, scratching ourselves by the way, and enduring great torment from our new enemies.

On arriving at this settlement, we found only one schooner at anchor, and soon heard that the rest had proceeded up the river. \*

\* \* \* \* \*

We then passed the settlement Yonk Man, and at three in the afternoon came to off the settlement called Agitos. Here we found our friends already landed, and waiting our arrival, as they intended to sleep higher up the river, at the settlement Patarima.

\* \* \* \* \*

This settlement was so large as to resemble a small village; and, fearing an attack from the Indians, who had lately threatened them, they had erected a large block-house, on the top of a sandy eminence, as a place of security, with slits cut in it to discharge arrows through at their enemies. They told us that it was musket-proof, but were much astonished on our proving to them the contrary, by sending a ball quite through it.

\* \* \* \* \*

Our boats being prepared for their departure for Patarima settlement, our colonel obliged the chief of these free people to accompany us, and hired two young men to assist us in getting up the rapids, above which the Indians were collected; and, our cooks having been sent up with orders to prepare our dinner, we weighed anchor, but were soon compelled to quit the schooners and take to our canoes, the wind having entirely ceased, and the current being now against us. We accordingly left them at anchor, and did not reach Patarima until nearly eight o'clock, after a tiresome pull of three hours, during which we were nearly starved, the dinner having been ordered for five o'clock, and our appetites made up for that hour.

\* \* \* \* \*

On looking about us from this settlement, we found the river to be about one mile in breadth, and making so sudden a turn to the west, which is completely hidden by a few well wooded islands, that it has all the appearance of a lake. I now concluded we saw the head or source of this river, but could not help laughing on being told of a party of adventurous planters, who had once got up thus far, and, forming the same opinion with myself, did not take the trouble to proceed farther, to ascertain whether it was correct. Concluding that this was the source of the great river Essequibo, they immediately returned to the lower settlements; and it was for some time believed among the Europeans that it took its rise from this presumed lake.

Koumaka Serima, or Koumaka Point, is the last settlement of free coloured people up this river. Situated on a high point of land that runs into the river from its left bank, it commands a fine view both up and down



**No. 114.**

the stream, which is here nearly one mile in breadth. The river now becomes so rocky that nothing larger than a small canoe can proceed further up or be dragged against the rapids.

\* \* \* \* \*

We were now informed by the post-holder, who was a native of this settlement, that the Macoushi Indians, a race dwelling inland, on the confines of the Portuguese territories, on the great river of Amazons, had lately joined the tribes resident in our territories; and that many others from the interior of the Spanish main had come up to their assistance. We found this to be the settlement which had been attacked by them as reported in Demerara.

\* \* \* \* \*

Next morning, the 5th of December, the sun again rising in all his magnificence, we found ourselves opposite to the Masserony river, and determined to visit the ancient seat of government, called Ampa. Having anchored our schooner close to the shore, we found great difficulty in landing, from the thickness of the underwood quite down to the water's edge. Not a vestige now remained of any buildings, which, having been constructed entirely of wood, must have soon fallen to decay, or more probably been carried away. At last, one of the party found an old foundation of brick, now quite covered with leaves and trees; this we were informed had been the first Christian church built in these colonies. The only things like dwellings, which we were enabled to discover, were a few Indian huts, or wigwams, now also deserted, which we deemed a fortunate circumstance, as we expected to find them a convenient shelter from a heavy storm that was fast approaching; but, to our astonishment, we had hardly got under the manicol thatch, before we found our legs covered with fleas and jiggers; and, choosing rather to get wet to the skin than to be tormented by those insects, we all rushed into the rain, which presently descended in torrents. The squall ended, we again embarked, and, getting under weigh, stood down for Fort Island, where we arrived after a tedious sail against tide at six o'clock in the morning, and occupied the same beds on shore as we had done eleven nights before, previously to our departure.

---

**No. 115.**

**Instructions given to Mr. Schomburgk by the Royal Geographical Society, as to his proposed expedition; with brief report thereon, 1836.**

[From *Journal of the Royal Geographical Society of London*. London, 1836, Vol. 6.]

At the general meeting, May 16, 1836,

The following Report from the Council was read:

The Council again report to the Society the state of its affairs.

Finances.—

Publications.—

His Majesty's Donation.—

Original Expeditions.—

\* \* \* \* \*

The two expeditions directly patronized by the Society next claim notice. Of these, the one into the interior of South Africa from Delagoa Bay has been entirely suspended by the Caffre war; and a year has thus been lost in its prosecution. This interval, however, it is not to be doubted that Captain Alexander has turned to account by gaining experience in South African manners, and facility in the use of the native tongues; and he is probably at this moment leaving the Cape on his original errand, better prepared than he could have been last year to accomplish the task before him. Mr. Schomburgk, on the other hand, has entered on his field of inquiry; and the Council has already received two detailed reports of his proceedings, which would have been now published, but that they are as yet imperfect from the want of a sketch map. The following abstract, however, will exhibit his general progress.

His instructions were as follows:

I.—Regent street, 19th Nov., 1834,—“Sir,—I am now authorized and directed by the Council of the Royal Geographical Society to pledge it definitively to co-operate with you in carrying into effect an expedition of discovery into the interior of British Guiana, on the following conditions:

“1.—The expedition is to have two distinct objects, viz.—first, thoroughly to investigate the physical and astronomical geography of the interior of British Guiana, and, secondly, to connect the positions thus ascertained with those of Mr. Humboldt on the Upper Orinoco. The second of these undertakings is not to be begun till the first is completed; and the two together are to occupy a period of three years from the time of your departure from George Town in the prosecution of your journey.

“2.—Towards the expense the Society will contribute 900l., viz., 600l. the first year, the outfit, estimated at 200l., and all pecuniary advances whatsoever, included; and 300l. during the two following years, to be advanced in such proportions as may seem mutually most desirable. The Society will also procure you such letters of introduction and recommendation as may seem calculated to promote the objects of the expedition. But it will not be responsible for any debts or expenses which you may incur beyond the sum above specified.

“3.—In return you are to proceed to Demerara, at your early convenience, and there report your arrival to his Excellency Sir James Carmichael Smyth, Bart. or other, the Governor of that colony for the time being,” receiving instructions from him in the name of the Society, and acting at all times on these instructions to the best of your ability.—(For the general nature of these instructions, but subject to modification as may seem afterwards expedient, see my accompanying letter of this date, marked No. II.)

**No. 115.**

"4.—All geographical information obtained by you during the above period of three years, whether physical, political, or astronomical, shall be considered the property of the Society, and at its disposal to be published in any manner it may think fit. But collections of natural history shall be your property,—with the exception of one set of any collections you may make of dried plants, birds, fishes or insects, which the council would be happy to have it in its power to present, in your name, to the British Museum; and one set of any geological specimens procured, which it would, in like manner, desire to present (if possible with accompanying memoirs from you) to the Geological Society of London.

"I am also authorized by the Council to inclose you a draft for 50*l.* (which I must, at the same time, remind you will be deducted, together with the expense of outfit, from the 600*l.* allowed for the first year) to defray your current expenses to Demerara; and your negotiating this draft will be considered an expression of your acquiescence in the above terms. I have the honour, etc.—(Signed) "A Maconochie."

II.—Regent street, 13th (19th) Nov. 1834.—"Sir,—Referring to my letter No. I. of this date, I now proceed to sketch out the general views entertained by the Council of what your proceedings should be, on and subsequent to your arrival in Demerara. Substantially, too, it is presumed that these will be adhered to; though it does not appear desirable to complete their detail till you shall have seen Sir Carmichael Smyth, and ascertained his opinions on the subject.

"You will observe that the objects of the expedition are specific, and more limited than were originally contemplated in your sketch. This arises partly from the extreme desire of the Society, in return for the patronage extended to the undertaking by His Majesty's Government, to do full justice to the physical geography of the colony of British Guiana, partly to the extended and about to be renewed, labours of the Geographical Society of Paris in French Guiana, which promise to render investigations in that part direction unnecessary, the French travellers there having instructions to connect their observations with yours.

"Accordingly, the Council wishes you to understand most distinctly that, for the first year or eighteen months, every thing is to be subordinate to the object of thoroughly investigating the physical character and resources of that portion of the central ridge traversing this part of South America, which furnishes tributaries to the Demerara, Essequibo, and other rivers flowing into the Atlantic, within, or immediately contiguous to the British Colony of Guiana. The limits of this may be roughly defined to be the meridians of 55° and 62° west longitude from Greenwich, and the general character of its mineral composition, with detailed accounts of its plants, animals and inhabitants, and the astronomical determination of a reasonable number of its principal points, will be required of you before you proceed further. Particulars regarding its soil and climate, the origin and course of its rivers, the degree in which they may

**No. 115.**

be severally navigable, or capable of being made so, &c., will also occupy your attention; and generally, whatever may tend to give an exact idea both of the actual state and future capabilities of this tract of country.

“ When your researches here shall be completed, then, but not till then it is contemplated that you may pass the mountains, and extend your views to the further interior. The great object in this, as already intimated, will be to connect your positions with those of Mr. Humboldt on the Upper Orinoco; for as the French travellers will bring down their labours from the eastward, it will only remain for you to proceed westerly. In attempting this, the Council, as at present informed, is against your descending the Rio Branco, as you propose, afterwards to ascend the Rio Negro and Padaviri. Much of this tract is already known; and if there be any jealousy whatever on the part of the Indians against the Spanish colonists, it will be more difficult for you to ascend the Orinoco from Esmeralda than to descend it by keeping the height of land throughout. But regarding this, it will probably be in your power to make important communications while yet employed within the colony, so that it is unnecessary at present to enlarge on it.

“ Your proposed expedition up the Cuyuni to explore the Sierra Imataca would be interesting, if practicable, with due attention to the other objects of the expedition. But as this district is not within British Guiana, and a minute knowledge of it would not further your ulterior views, besides which, it is easily accessible at any time, and its investigation now would cause an expense which might be inconvenient,—it must not be made a first object. With regard to it you should be guided entirely by the opinions and advise which you may receive, particularly from Sir Carmichael Smyth, at Demerara.

“ The expedition into the interior cannot be begun till August; consequently, in so far as regards it, your arrival at Demerara before June is of little importance. But if you attach extreme value to Imataca yourself, and think that you can accomplish a journey to it between the time of your earliest possible arrival at Demerara and the month of August, then you are at liberty to proceed thither earlier; always remembering, however, both that the expense of such a journey, even if sanctioned by Sir Carmichael Smyth, must be deducted from the entire fund provided, and also, that if deemed imprudent, or otherwise inexpedient, by him, it will not be allowed at all.

“ Other circumstances connected with the present state of the colony of Demerara seem to offer additional reasons against your precipitating your measures. But having thus fully explained the views of the Society on the subject, something must necessarily be left, in conclusion, to your own judgment and discretion.

I have the honour, &c.,

(Signed) A. MACONOCHE.

**No. 115.**

In pursuance of these instructions, then, Mr. Schomburgk left George Town, Demerara, on the 21st of September last, and remained some days at the post at the confluence of the Cuyuni with the Essequibo, engaging Indian rowers and other attendants to accompany him. He availed himself of this interval to ascend the Cuyuni some little distance and to gain a cursory knowledge of its upper navigation. This, he was told, continues uninterrupted almost to its source, where, being separated by only a short portage from the Carony, the Indians are in the habit of crossing to that river; and by descending it and ascending the Orinoco, maintaining an inland communication even with Angostura. Quitting the Cuyuni, Mr. Schomburgk next ascended the Essequibo, and in his reports gives a lively picture of the richness and exuberance of the vegetation on its banks. He and his party suffered much fatigue and some sickness at this time, but, overcoming all difficulties they entered the Ripanuny on the 23rd October. Ascending this, they then entered the Creek of Anna-y, which falls into it, on its right bank, about twenty miles above its confluence with the Essequibo; and here, at what is usually considered the S. W. extremity of the British colony, they formed a temporary habitation, or headquarters, whence they proposed to diverge in all directions, as occasion might serve, in the prosecution of their purpose, thoroughly to ascertain the mineral and vegetable character of the neighbourhood. From this point, therefore, Mr. Schomburgk's first report was dated,—the period the 29th October; his second brings the account of his proceedings down to the 15th January; 1836. The interval had been passed in ascending the Ripanuny as far as it had been found possible to push the lightest canoe, which was to lat.  $2^{\circ} 36'$  N., whence it appears that the sources of this river are further south than have been imagined; and Mr. Schomburgk thinks that they are at least in  $1^{\circ}$  or  $1^{\circ} 30'$  N., but they were not actually reached by him. His descriptions of the country thus penetrated by him are interesting, from the high character of fertility which he attributes to it; but until his map shall arrive little can be made of its topography. He diverged at intervals from the course of the river, and thus visited Lake Amercu, stood on the highest ridge of the Parima mountains, examined their structure and vegetation, in particular brought away specimens of the plant from which the famous Mowrali poison is extracted, and examined carefully the indications of mineral wealth which the rocks contain. The Council hopes shortly to be able to communicate the whole results in a more satisfactory manner to the Society, when the remaining materials for doing so shall have arrived."

**No. 116.**

**Short description of British Guiana, 1862; by Sir W. H. Holmes, Special Commissioner to the Exhibitions of 1855 and 1862.**

[From HOLMES (Sir W. H.), *Free Cotton; how and where to grow it*. London, 1862.]

[*Chapter I.*]

If you take a map of South America, and look along the coast, to the northward of the Line, you will find a comparatively small spot marked "*British Guiana.*" It is the only part of that Continent which belongs to Great Britain, and, though discovered centuries ago by Raleigh, it remained comparatively unknown to the English public, until brought into notice by the works of Sir Robert Schomburgk, the discoverer of the Victoria Regia, and subsequently by that most popular writer, Mr. Anthony Trollope, who visited the Colony in 1860, and who thus describes it in his book on the West Indies:

"It is hardly necessary to explain that Georgetown is the capital of the province of Demerara, and that Demerara is the centre province in the colony of British Guiana, or that there are three provinces, Berbice, Demerara and Essequibo, so called from the names of the three great rivers of the country. Demerara is flat; and the Berbice is flat, and so is Essequibo. The whole of this land is formed by the mud which has been brought down by these great rivers, and by others.

The Corentyne is the most easterly, separating our colony from Dutch Guiana, or Surinam. Then comes the Berbice. The next (counting only the larger rivers) is the Demerara. Then, more to the west, the Essequibo, and, running into that, the Mazarony and Cuyuni; and then, northwest along the coast, the Pomeroon; and lastly of our own rivers, the Guiana (or Whynee), though I doubt whether, for absolute purposes of colonization, we have ever gone so far as this. And beyond that are rolled, in slow but turbid volume, the huge waters of the Orinoco. On its shores we make no claim. Though the Delta of the Orinoco is still called Guiana, it belongs to the Republic of Venezuela.

These are the boundaries along the South American shore, which hereabouts, as all men know, looks northward with an easterly slant towards the Atlantic.

Between us and our Dutch friends on the right hand, the limits are clear enough. On the left hand, matters are not quite so clear, with the Venezuelians. But to the rear! To the rear there is an eternity of sugar and cotton capability in mud. Turning back by unknown mountains, the wilderness of Brazil, the river Negro, and the tributaries of the Amazon, an endless extent of sugar capability, to which England's colony can lay claim, if only she could manage so much as the surveying of it.

Guiana is an enormous extent of flat mud, the alluvial deposit of those

**No. 116.**

mighty rivers which for so many years have been scraping together earth in those wild unknown upland countries, and bringing it down conveniently to the seaboard, so that the world might have sugar to its tea. There is no limit to the fertility and extent of this region. The only limit is in labour. The present culture only skirts the seaboard and the river sides.

You will hardly find an estate,—I do not think that you can find one,—that has not a water frontage. This land formerly belonged to the Dutch, and by them was divided out into portions, which on a map have about them an Euclidical appearance. Let A, B, C, D, be a right-angled parallelogram, of which the sides A B and C D are three times the length of the other sides A C and B D. 'Tis thus you would describe a Demerara property, and the C E D would have reference to the relative quantities of sugar, molasses and rum producible therefrom.

But these strips of land, though they are thus marked out on the maps with four exact lines, are presumed to run back to any extent that the owner may choose to occupy. He starts from the water, and is bounded on each side; but backwards! Backwards he may cultivate canes up to the very Andes, if only he could get coolies."

Though there is a vein of humour in this account, I do not know any description which conveys a better or more accurate idea of the colony, which, I may add, was first settled by the Dutch nearly three hundred years ago, and finally passed into our possession in 1803. It is within easy reach of England, and the Royal Mail steamers call at Georgetown twice a month—being timed to do the distance from Southampton *via* St. Thomas in twenty-one days.

---

**No. 117.****A Journey up the Cuyuni in 1880; by Michael McTurk.**

[Reprinted from *Timohri*, being the Journal of the Royal Agricultural and Commercial Society of British Guiana, 12<sup>o</sup>. Demerara, 1882. Vol. 1, pp. 126-132.]

Three separate parties of Indians having reported that some Venezuelans were making boats up the Cuyuni, and some Venezuelans having come down that river, and others having been seen in the forest in the neighbourhood of the Penal Settlement, it seemed right that I should ascend the Cuyuni to investigate the state of the inhabitants of the upper reaches of the river. Accordingly, I left Kalacoon on the Mazaruni on Thursday, 14th October, 1880.

Rain began to fall before we left, and the aeta-Calli and hackea (*Tecoma* sp.?) trees were budding—a sure sign of the approach of wet weather. Rain continued to fall from the 14th to 18th, the first three days after leaving, and the river commenced to swell, and the downward current to increase, so much that we did not reach Warriri, the place where the Gold

**No. 117.**

Mining Company carried on operations some years ago, until Saturday evening. The place is now overgrown with bushes and creepers, but the house still stands, though much out of repair. Here I saw recent tracks of persons wearing boots, who had remained for some time, and had slept under the house; there was also a buoy, such as is used for fishing lines, in the river opposite. Shortly after passing Warriri we saw a broken paddle in the water under the bushes, and a little further a half-made paddle. About  $\frac{1}{2}$  mile from these was a bark canoe (woodskin) overturned in the water. That evening we camped above the Yeniah Falls, above which none of us had ever ascended. Before this fall there are two portages, where boats have to be unloaded and hauled over the rocks on rollers. After passing the second of these, the river for some miles is free from any large falls such as require the boats to be unloaded and hauled over, Yanamoo and the Payuco being the largest. The land too, except near the portages, is comparatively low, with a small hill here and there. Above Payuco we had no more rain. The sun was very hot, and either in front or behind nearly all the way; so that when we could do so we journeyed at night. At mid-day on the 23rd, while hauling up the falls at Wohmopoh, we saw some Indians (Acowois), the first we had seen since leaving. They were drying their hammocks and cassava on the rocks, and soon became friendly on my giving them some tobacco. These Indians were from the head of the Urawan; and having been working with the Venezuelans, were now on their way to Georgetown to spend the money they had earned, which was all gold, English, American and Venezuelan.

Although the distance is much greater, these people prefer to go to Georgetown rather than purchase from the Venezuelans at Cayou and Caratal, where they said there were plenty of shops and English people. Everything there is very dear; a flask of powder, such as costs 20 cents in Georgetown, costing 96 cents at Cayou, and a cake of cassava, such as costs 8 cents in Essequibo, costing 24 cents. The Venezuelans on the Urawan told me the same. One of the Acowois agreed to turn and go with us as far as the Urawan. After unloading and hauling over the boats at Wohmopoh (where there is a portage), we remained in camp until Monday morning.

On the 26th we came to the first Carib settlement above Timoonie falls, and shortly after to another on the opposite side, called Koratoka (the cock). On 28th we passed three more Carib settlements, at one of which, called Arra-outa (the baboon), the people undertook to make cassava for us by the time we came back. At 4 P. M. the same day we first saw the mountains, Akarecoo-tepoo and Anakare-ye-tepoo; and the next day we passed these mountains on our left, as also another called Tirimbandaboo. These mountains are of sand-stone, and are of similar formation to those on the Polaro and in the neighbourhood of Noraima; flat-topped, with precipitous sides, the bare, red sand-stone being exposed in many places.

On 24th we passed the last Carib settlement on the Cuyuni. Above,



**No. 117.**

but a long way off, are other settlements of Acawois and Kamaracotas. This last Carib settlement is called Apo-ye-kifoo (the place burnt by fire). On the 3rd, at 8 P. M., we entered the Urawan. The Cuyuni and the Urawan are here each 300 yards wide, the latter coming from about N. E. At 10 A. M. we turned up the Urawan. The water of the creek is white and muddy in appearance, but leaves no sediment after being put to subside. On the 4th, at 8 A. M., I could not get the larger boat any further; the whole creek, as far as I could see, seemed filled by rocks, great boulders of granite, 40 or 50 feet square, with small rills of water running between. There is a considerable fall here in rainy weather called "Rurrewa." The men carrying the small boat over the rocks, at 11 A. M. we came to water sufficient to float her. From there I went on in the small boat with two men, often having to carry the boat over the rocks for considerable distances. On two of the rocks at Rurrewa, at about the level of the water when the creek is full, were drawings of frogs—several on one rock and one on another. They were about nine inches long, and seem to have been made by rubbing on the rock with some harder substance. Many, on the larger rock, had become detached by the scaling of the granite. About a mile above these there is another drawing of a frog on a rock, differing from the others in that it has a line down its centre and another of about four inches long from its mouth upward to the left. The Accawoi Indians call these drawings Parrah-coosa, from Parrah, a frog. They knew nothing of their origin, but that they were made many moons since. At 4 P. M. we passed the first Accawoi houses on this creek. One of the Indians here spoke Spanish. The Savannah opens down to the creek a little below this place, on the opposite side. On the 5th, at 7 A. M., we saw several Venezuelans camped on the rocks. They civilly enough asked what we had to sell, and eventually begged for some ammunition and tobacco. About a mile farther we came to a landing apparently of some importance. The path leads from this over the Savannah to Cayou, which is the nearest Venezuelan town or village. About a mile from the landing, along the path, is the nearest house, Francisco's. It is a two days' journey over the Savannah along this path to Cayou. From Francisco the Savannah is open and undulating, with clumps of trees several acres in extent here and there; and where the grass had not been burnt off it was over six feet high and excellent as pasture. The many Venezuelan houses scattered here and there on the Savannah were very similar in structure and material to those of Indians, but that some were partly enclosed, the rough doors and windows being of raw deer skins. The people who inhabit these houses seem to be of the same class as the squatters on our own rivers, and are of mixed Indian and Spanish blood. I saw neither white men nor negroes, though one or two had mulatto hair. They live like Indians, by cultivating cassava and plantains, or by grazing a few cattle or mining for gold at Caratal and in the neighbourhood. They use donkeys to carry their cassava and firewood from

**No. 117.**

their fields to their houses. The Accawoi Indians work with these Venezuelans, and are paid wages up to 27 dollars per month; but they say they are often beaten by their masters without redress. The Caribs will not work in this way; but I am told that during the revolution they take wages to fight for either or both factions, there being an understanding among them that they are not to injure their own countrymen if possible, but to kill the opposing Venezuelans. From the Caribs I learned that a number of Spaniards had come down the Urawan in canoes taken from the Indians and had taken away the guns of the men living above Arravuta; they had also dug up and taken away the cassava. From the appearance of the fields, the robbery appeared to have been committed about three months previously. At Koratoka the cassava had also been stolen, but not to such an extent as at Arravuta. Most of the Venezuelans went back up the Urawan, but some came down to Timmoonie and got the Caribs there to make cassava bread for them, promising payment, but took it away after it had been baked, threatening to beat the Indians when they remonstrated. The Caribs say they were too few to resist the Spaniards, who, moreover, had taken away their guns. These occurrences were, I think, the origin of the reports I had heard, and the Spaniards seen near the settlement were those who came down from Timmoonie; and these probably made their way back to Venezuelan territory by way of Moroooca and Trinidad.

The land up the Cuyuni seems lower than that on the Essequibo and Mazaruni, but is now fertile, there not being so much sand in it, so that grass springs up wherever a large tree falls or a small clearing is made. The forest trees to above Payuco Falls are different. I saw no greenheart or Souari-nut trees above that fall, but quantities of long-john, silk-cotton and hog-plum trees. Bamboo grew all along the side of the river from above Puyuco to the mouth of the Urawan. From Apo-ye-kiffoo upwards, the forest for miles on both banks of the river and for considerable distance inland had been burned. The Indians say such fires occur spontaneously, and burn until stopped by the rains or some large creek.

I left Francisco's on the afternoon of the 5th and called at Arravouta for the promised cassava. No occurrence of note happened until the 15th when we nearly lost one of our boats while lowering it over a large fall. The rocks were slippery; and one of the men fell just as the boat was going over, the jerk throwing most of the others down, which caused a sudden strain on the rope, burying the bow of the boat in the fall, so that it immediately filled and was carried away. Luckily there were no rocks, or it would have been broken into small pieces. The load had been taken out and carried across, so fortunately we lost nothing but the time taken to bale.

The rain commenced on the 14th and fell continuously, so that the river rose about four inches during the night of 16th.

We ran the last of all the falls at 8 P. M. on the 18th and arrived at Kalacoon without further incident at 10.30 A. M., having been exactly five weeks away.

## No. 118.

## The gold industry of British Guiana, 1895.

[Reprinted from *British Guiana, and its Resources*, by the author of "Sardinia and its Resources" (Robert Tennant) 12.\* London, 1895; pp. 3-77.]

[Page 30.]

"The official records of gold produced from 1884 to the present time show in a succinct form the progress of the gold industry. They are as follows:

Years.	Gold.		
	oz.	d.	g.
1884.....	250	0	0
1885.....	939	0	0
1886.....	6,518	1	12
1887.....	10,986	14	0
1888-89.....	20,216	1	8
1889-90.....	32,332	16	5
1890-91.....	66,864	4	21
1891-92.....	110,555	12	5
1892-93.....	134,124	7	23
1893-94.....	138,527	16	14
1894 (April 1 to December 31).....	110,432	4	16
Total.....	631,746	19	8

These results, marvellous as they are, are rendered still more astonishing when the great physical difficulties and general surroundings are taken into account; and when, too, it is borne in mind that the whole of this output has been obtained *exclusively* from the washing of alluvial deposits along the banks of the smaller rivers and creeks, and that the work has been carried on in the most primitive and unsystematic manner, by means of old-fashioned "sluices," "battels," and "toms," handled by men unversed in gold-working, and supervised by overseers, many of whom are equally ignorant and inexperienced.

These alluvial deposits appear to be impartially distributed over almost every part of the colony, and are now being worked on nearly every tributary of the great rivers, Essequibo, Mazaruni, Cuyuni, Barima and Demerara. The deposits lie at a depth varying from a few inches to 15 feet below the surface, which is for the most part covered by a slight layer of soil and vegetable matter; they consist of coarse and fine sand, pebbles of quartz, quartzite and greenstone, held together by tenacious brownish yellow clay, under which are found the auriferous strata, varying in thickness from six inches to six feet, and beneath is a plastic clay, white or green, but generally green, in colour. These beds have evidently been formed from the wearing away in past ages, by the action of water and weather, of the rocky formations on the higher grounds, and have been carried down by water or glacial action into the valleys and flats below;

**No. 118.**

and they must, therefore, in a limited course of years—the exact period being necessarily dependent on their extent and the rapidity with which they are worked—be exhausted. Up to the present time no shafts have been sunk to any depth through the upper strata of these deposits for the purpose of testing whether there are deeper beds below.”

[Page 38.]

“Meanwhile, however, public attention has been drawn towards the general development of the country by an announcement from the Colonial Office of the willingness of Government to grant large concessions to capitalists—whether in England or the colony—who will embark their money and devote their influence and energies to carrying out schemes for colonisation and sound development. The inducements thus held out, with the implied promise of Government support in the making of roads and improving of access generally, have already led to preliminary arrangements being entered into for the formation of such syndicates; and there is a confident expectation that, ere many months are over, they will be brought in a practical shape before the public. It is to be hoped when these companies make their appearance, that their objects and purposes will be clearly defined, that the direction and management will be such as to inspire and deserve public confidence, that they will be free from the speculative taint which too frequently characterises commercial enterprises, and—what is also of paramount importance—that they will be backed by a large capital, amply sufficient to carry out fully and effectually the objects and purposes for which they are formed. Hitherto the want of these essentials has been the cause of the lukewarmness with which such undertakings have been received, and of the ill success they have so far met with in this country.”

[Page 41.]

“When these preliminary formalities have been complied with, an application has to be made within two months to the Mines Office for a ‘grant.’ This application has then to be advertised four times in the *Official Gazette*; and, if no objection by a rival claimant be lodged, the location is at once allowed. From this time, not less than six men must be kept continuously at work on the claim (or ‘grant’ as it is then called) and a rent of \$2 per month for a mining, and \$1 per month for a placer grant has thenceforth to be paid; the grant, though nominally at the will of the Crown, is perpetual, so long as the rent is paid. The only other payment is a royalty of ninety cents per oz., which is equal to 5 per cent. upon the total value of the gold actually obtained.”

[Page 43.]

“During the short period that placer working has been carried on there have been several marvellous successes. One small syndicate on the Mazaruni river, no great distance from the disputed ground,

**No. 118.**

with a capital of \$13,500 in 4,500 shares of \$3 each, returned in the first three years to its fortunate members a dividend of \$1 per share per month, which is equal to 400 per cent. per annum, but it is now almost exhausted; and there are other placers worked by individuals which are producing still more, one placer on the Essequibo having paid no less than £20,000 a year for the first four years on a capital of £180 contributed by two Portuguese merchants, the other partner (a Frenchman) taking the remaining one-third for his share, as 'discoverer and locator.' Many other instances could be given of working men, in conjunction with small capitalists, making as many hundred dollars per month as were originally embarked in the enterprise. These, of course, are some of the prizes; but the blanks are many, arising, however, in most cases from ignorance or dishonesty."

The *modus operandi* of prospecting has generally been as follows: A prospector, usually a coloured man, knows of some place where there is, or he thinks, or has been told, there is, alluvial gold; he applies to some tradesman or clerk, or any one else, who is known to have speculative tendencies and a small sum of money at command, and he proposes that, if provisions and a crew be found, he will proceed to "prospect" and "locate" in their joint names, "on sharing terms," the person finding the capital taking the larger share (generally two-thirds), and the prospector the other third in the enterprise; and, if the prospector has any mining knowledge or common honesty, success generally follows. When gold has been found, either on the surface, or by digging and panning the alluvial soil, the claim is "located." A journey back to the capital is then usually taken to perfect the location at the Mines Office, and to make arrangements for working. For effecting this, a gang of black labourers, with a few shovels, picks, and battels, wages and provisions for three months, are all that is needed. A sum of from £50 to £150, dependent on the scale of operations, will amply provide these requisites, within two months, even if the placers were only of moderate richness, there will be enough gold produced to pay off the first expenditure, keep the placer at work, and give profitable returns in the future. On arriving at the location with men and stores, the first operation is to select the site for a camp, and to build sheds (called "logies") for the prospector and men to live in, and for sheltering the provisions and stores."

[Page 45.]

"In this selection water is an essential, not only for domestic purposes, but for working the placer, and the situation should be either on or near to the banks of a creek, so as to enable a trench to be cut with the requisite fall to work the sluices. The line of the proposed trench, and the ground it is proposed to work, must then be cleared of wood, the trench dug, sluices with 'stop-offs' and dams (where necessary) made, and the sluice-boxes set up; meanwhile other men having been clearing off the top layer of earth, and exposing the 'pay-dirt' ready for washing. Great care

**No. 118.**

is taken to ensure that the sluice is placed in a position to work as much ground as possible, otherwise, as the workings proceed, a fresh trench has to be dug. The sluice-boxes should not, however, be sunk with too much fall, for although the greater fall allows more 'pay-dirt' being washed in a given time, yet it also allows the finer portions of gold to be carried over the 'riffles' by the rush of water; and the advantage of treating a greater quantity of gravel is thus often more than counterbalanced by the less saving of gold. The number of men employed at a sluice varies according to its size and extent; for an average sluice eight to nine men are usually allowed, two to uncover the soil and fill the sluice, two to deal with the tailings, or refuse soil, and the rest to attend to the sluice-box and keep it clear. Hydraulicing, which has been adopted on a large scale with such wonderful results in California and other countries, does not seem to be practicable in the country, for though a sufficient volume of water could generally be obtained, the necessary fall for the tail race would be wanting; for the gold deposits are found on the low and flat lands lying along the river banks where the water is sluggish, and indeed almost a dead level for miles."

[Page 47.]

"The wages paid to the ordinary black labourer are sixty-four cents per day; but, in addition, he has to be fed, housed, and supplied with medicine and medical comforts, and these latter items form no inconsiderable sum; for, though there is seldom serious illness amongst the blacks, there is much 'shamming' to avoid work, and the average cost per man (including over-lookers) cannot be put down at less than \$1 per day, inclusive of Sundays, when no work is carried on. The other working expenses are, however, comparatively trifling; on a fairly good-yielding and fairly-managed placer the total cost varies from 50 to 70 per cent. of the value of the gold obtained; on rich placers it is considerable less, not more than one-third, and on the poorer placers it is much greater. This percentage of expenses is, however, undoubtedly high, and it is mainly, indeed almost wholly, caused by the great cost and loss of time in the transport of men and provisions to the field of operation. This, however, will be materially reduced when the steamer and railway communications now contemplated are completed. The saving in working expenses at the more inaccessible workings will be reduced at least one-third, in some cases even more, and the whole of this saving will, of course, be so much additional profit. Moreover, when this reduction of cost is brought about, many placers which now barely pay their way will be brought into profitable working and others which cannot be worked now except at a loss, will be able to resume operations, and add to the general output. There are, it is estimated, upwards of 200 placers now in actual work, the returns from which vary from a few oz. to 1,000 oz. gold per month, or an average of about 50 oz. each; the aggregate capital invested in these workings does not, it is stated, amount to more than the value of a year's production."

**No. 118.**

[Page 48.]

“ Amongst these many ventures there are, of course, many failures and many losses, owing, in some cases, to the prospector being mistaken as to the richness of the location, but far oftener to dishonesty and idleness. It is no uncommon occurrence for prospecting or working parties, fully equipped and provisioned for three or four months, never to get further on their way to the diggings than the first falls on the river they have to ascend, and if there is no store or shop where alcohol of some kind or other is to be had (and this, of course, is well known before starting, and a stock has been previously laid in) they move to the nearest resting-place, and remain idly there till the store of liquor and provisions is exhausted. They then either return to town with a dismal story of ‘no gold to be found’ or they have been ‘down with fever;’ or, if they think there is a chance of getting further supplies and playing the same game over again, a few small nuggets or some fine gold (which has been either borrowed or stolen) are produced as convincing proof that gold is there, and that further prospecting is all that is required to ensure a certain fortune. It need scarcely be said that, when such appeals are successful, the second expedition is as disastrous as the first.”

“ The great problem of the day, the labour question, is pushing its way to the front in this colony, though in a somewhat different phase from that presented in England and other countries. It is estimated that there are now engaged in the ‘diggings’ between 6,000 and 7,000 negroes, many of whom have no doubt been taken from the sugar plantations, where they formerly worked for a few months in the year in cane cutting, for which work, from their fine physique, they are more fitted than coolies, who, on the other hand, are better suited for the lighter and more intelligent labour in the sugar factories.”

[Page 51.]

“ Owing to the peculiar physical features of this colony, prospecting for gold, or, indeed, travelling at all, is slow and difficult and attended with unusual risks and hardships. The country is intersected in all directions by large rivers, creeks, and swamps, and, from the coast to the higher lands in the interior, it is clothed with forest trees and a dense undergrowth. There are no roads that can be traversed by mules or carts, except those along the sea-coast through the plantations; the Indian tracks, or paths, that can be travelled on foot are few and far between; and to make headway through the forest a path has to be slowly and laboriously hewn with a hatchet, shaped like a cutlass, and especially adapted for such work. Game, fur or feather is scarce, and owing to the thick bush, can only be got by native hunters, who are not always to be relied on; provisions have, therefore, to be carried either by the prospectors themselves, or by bearers hired for the purpose. To reach the gold-fields the large rivers are, of course, utilised to the utmost available

**No. 118.**

extent, but, unfortunately, none of the rivers (except the Barima) are navigable for a greater continuous length than forty miles. There are either rapids or falls which no steamer can contend against, or shallow water which no ocean-going ship can get through, and transshipment of passengers and cargo into small launches or boats to be made—a tedious and costly operation, which, when the contemplated railways are completed and steamers are placed on the higher reaches of the rivers, will be rendered less and less frequent; but, even with the present facilities of access, communication with the gold-fields contrasts most favourably, both as to cheapness and speed, with transport in other gold-producing countries; and as labour, fuel, and water (the three great items in the cost of production) are abundant everywhere, the colony possesses every requisite for working its gold-fields more economically and efficiently than in any other country in the world.”

[Page 58.]

“Timber did not commence to be an article of export till 1850, some years after the cultivation of coffee was discontinued.”

“All the timber lands belonged to Government, and a ‘grant’ for felling is to be had on very easy terms—viz., the cost of the survey and a royalty of a few cents (varying from 1½ cent to ½ cent per cubic foot). Nearly all the best timber lands adjoining the navigable rivers, where the trees can be felled and floated easily down to market, have been ‘gone over,’ but there are hundreds of thousands of acres in the interior still untouched by the axe, which are virgin forests. The heavier logs have to be kept on the surface while floating down the river by light punts, but a good sized raft can be thus supported, as the actual weight is only the difference between the gravity of the wood and the water.”

“Wood-cutters are paid generally by piece-work from 3 to 5 cents (depending on the hardness of the wood) per cubic foot, cut and squared, and a good workman will fell 50 cubic feet a day, thus earning \$2, which is considered a high wage in this country.”

[Page 92.]

“The navigation of the rapids, which on some of the larger rivers occur at intervals of a few miles, causes great cost and delay, and is always attended with danger. Scarcely a month elapses without the record of a boat being swamped, and most of its crew drowned, and the cargo lost.”

“Inland travelling has to be done on foot; there are no roads or tracks where even a mule (the most sure-footed of all beasts of burden) could make its way, except along the sea-coast, where there are macadamised carriage roads for short distances. There is only one railway; it was constructed in 1840, and is amongst the earliest of Colonial railways. It runs from the capital, through the sugar plantations, along the east coast to the river Mahaica for about twenty miles.”



APPENDIX

PART 5

DOCUMENTS FROM DIPLOMATIC SOURCES



**No. 119.**

**The Earl of Kimberley, Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs of Great Britain, to Sir Julian Pauncefote, British Ambassador at Washington, February 23, 1895.**

[Reprinted from Blue Book "United States No. 1 (1896)," No. 9, pp. 5-6.]

On the 25th ultimo the United States' Ambassador referred in conversation to the dispute between Her Majesty's Government and the Government of Venezuela with regard to the boundary of British Guiana, and said that his Government would gladly lend their good offices to bring about a settlement by means of an arbitration.

I explained to Mr. Bayard that Her Majesty's Government had expressed their willingness to submit the question, with certain limits, to arbitration, but that they could not agree to the more extensive reference on which the Venezuelan Government insisted. At his Excellency's request I promised to communicate to him a Memorandum on the present position of the matter, and to show him a map setting out the points in dispute.

Mr. Bayard called here again on the 20th instant, and, in pursuance of my promise, I read to him the Memorandum, of which a copy is inclosed for your Excellency's information, and showed him a map of the territory in dispute. I told his Excellency that the Venezuelans had recently made an aggression upon the territory in our occupation, and had, according to the reports which had reached us, ill-treated some of the colonial police stationed there.

On Mr. Bayard observing that the United States' Government were anxious to do anything in their power to facilitate a settlement of the difficulty by arbitration, I reminded his Excellency that, although Her Majesty's Government were ready to go to arbitration as to a certain portion of the territory, which I had pointed out on the map, they could not consent to any departure from the Schomburgk line.

I am, &c.

(Signed) **KIMBERLEY.**

[Inclosure in above.]

*Memorandum on the Venezuelan Boundary Question read to the Ambassador of the United States, dated February 20, 1895.*

The readiness of Her Majesty's Government to discuss this question in a friendly spirit has been shown by the fact that although the Government of Venezuela broke off relations with Her Majesty's Government in 1887, and have as yet offered no apology for their conduct, yet informal Representatives of Venezuela have three times been received at the Foreign Office with a view to preliminary negotiations on the question of boundary.

**No. 119.**

The negotiations between the two Governments for the settlement of the disputed boundary which have taken place during the last fifty years have led to no result, because Venezuela has insisted on maintaining a claim extending beyond the River Essequibo and including a large portion of long-settled districts of the Colony of British Guiana.

On the other hand, Great Britain has throughout been prepared to make large abatements from her extreme claim, although Her Majesty's Government have been continually accumulating stronger documentary proofs of the correctness of that extreme claim as being their inheritance from their Dutch predecessors.

When, therefore, persistent attempts at encroachment by Venezuela, and the increasing demand for the due exercise of jurisdiction within the western districts of the Colony of British Guiana, made it impossible to leave the question of boundary quite uncertain, Her Majesty's Government in 1886 decided to proclaim what is known as the Schomburgk line as the minimum limit of their jurisdiction and of their territorial claim, and that line has since been treated as the provisional boundary of the Colony. This is the boundary which has lately been violated in a marked manner by the Venezuelans.

Her Majesty's Government have consistently declined, and still decline, to submit to arbitration the question of the right to territory long settled and governed as part of a British Colony, nor are they now prepared to accept any material modification of the provisional boundary proclaimed in 1886.

On the other hand, they have offered to concede to Venezuela without arbitration a large portion of the territory comprised in their extreme claim, and they are ready to go to arbitration respecting an intermediate zone, as to the exact limit of which they would be prepared to accept modifications having a proper regard to natural boundaries.

These views of Her Majesty's Government have been communicated to the Government of Venezuela in 1890, and again in 1893. To the last of those communications no answer has been returned.

---

**No. 120.**

**The Earl of Kimberley, Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs of Great Britain, to Sir Julian Pauncefote, British Ambassador at Washington, March 20, 1895.**

[Reprinted from Blue Book "United States No. 1 (1896)," No. 10, pp. 6-7.]

SIR:

*Foreign Office, March 20, 1895.*

The United States' Ambassador asked me to-day if I could give him any further information as to the differences between this country and Venezuela.

**No. 120.**

I said I could add nothing to the Answer which Sir E. Grey had given in the House of Commons.\*

Her Majesty's Government were awaiting a communication from the Government of Venezuela, but they would certainly require redress for the outrages committed by Venezuelan soldiers on District Inspector Barnes and other British subjects.

Mr. Bayard suggested that it might be advantageous that Venezuela should send a Special Envoy to discuss the boundary question. He thought that that had been done on more than one occasion.

I said I did not remember exactly what had taken place as to sending a Special Envoy here, but that diplomatic relations had been broken off in 1887 by the Venezuelan Government, who had given the British Minister his passports.

I am, &c.  
(Signed)

KIMBERLEY.

\* Extract from Hansard, p. 2, March 11, 1895:—

*Sir G. Baden-Powell* (Liverpool, Kirkdale): I beg to ask the Under-Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs whether officers and members of the British Guiana police last winter were attacked by Venezuelan armed forces, seized, and carried into Venezuelan territory from British territory; whether he can state what has happened to these British subjects, and when they were enabled to return to their homes; whether the Venezuelan Government have offered any explanation; and what steps the Government proposes to take to arrange the questions in dispute which give rise to such international complications.

*Sir Edward Grey*: Some officers and members of the British police force were seized on the right bank of the River Cuyuni and taken to a Venezuelan station at El Dorado early in January. They were released on the 30th January, and all of them have now returned to Demerara. The Government of Venezuela have summoned the General Commissioner on the Cuyuni and the Military Commander to Carácas to give explanations, and have appointed a Special Commission to investigate the matter. Her Majesty's Government will wait for a reasonable time to hear what is the result of the inquiry instituted by the Government of Venezuela before they determine what reparation should be required.

March 14, 1895:—

*Mr. A. Cross* (Glasgow, Camlachie): I beg to ask the Under-Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs whether Her Majesty's Government are now represented at Carácas with the Republic of Venezuela; and, if so, what steps, if any, are being taken to bring about a *modus vivendi* for the settlement of disputes now pending?

*Sir Edward Grey*: Her Majesty's Government have no diplomatic Representative in Venezuela, but British interests in that country are in charge of the German Representative at Carácas. Her Majesty's Government are, and always have been, ready to come to an amicable arrangement with the Venezuelan Government for the settlement of pending disputes, and their views on the subject were communicated to that Government in 1890 and again in 1893, to the latter of which communications no answer has been returned. Her Majesty's Government must therefore maintain the provisional boundary proclaimed in October 1886. This boundary does not embrace their whole claim, and the Venezuelan Government have more than once been informed that Her Majesty's Government are willing to submit the right to certain territory outside this boundary to arbitration.

**No. 121.**

**Extracts from Instruction of Mr. Olney, Secretary of State of the United States, to Mr. Bayard, Ambassador of the United States at London, July 20, 1895.**

[Reprinted from Blue Book "United States No. 1 (1896)" No. 11, pp. 7-13, 19-20.]

SIR:

I am directed by the President to communicate to you his views upon a subject to which he has given much anxious thought, and respecting which he has not reached a conclusion without a lively sense of its great importance, as well as of the serious responsibility involved in any action now to be taken.

It is not proposed, and for the present purposes is not necessary, to enter into any detailed account of the controversy between Great Britain and Venezuela respecting the western frontier of the Colony of British Guiana. The dispute is of ancient date, and began at least as early as the time when Great Britain acquired, by the treaty with the Netherlands of 1814, "the establishments of Demerara, Essequibo, and Berbice." From that time to the present the dividing line between these "establishments" (now called British Guiana) and Venezuela has never ceased to be a subject of contention. The claims of both parties, it must be conceded, are of somewhat indefinite nature. On the one hand, Venezuela, in every Constitution of Government since she became an independent State, has declared her territorial limits to be those of the Captaincy-General of Venezuela in 1810; yet, out of "moderation and prudence," it is said, she has contented herself with claiming the Essequibo line—the line of the Essequibo River that is—to be the true boundary between Venezuela and British Guiana. On the other hand, at least an equal degree of indefiniteness distinguishes the claim of Great Britain. It does not seem to be asserted, for instance, that in 1814 the "establishments" then acquired by Great Britain had any clearly-defined western limits which can now be identified, and which are either the limits insisted upon to-day, or, being the original limits, have been the basis of legitimate territorial extensions. On the contrary, having the actual possession of a district called the Pomeroon district, she apparently remained indifferent as to the exact area of the Colony until 1840, when she commissioned an engineer, Sir Robert Schomburgk, to examine and lay down its boundaries. The result was the Schomburgk line, which was fixed by metes and bounds, was delineated on maps, and was at first indicated on the face of the country itself by posts, monograms, and other like symbols. If it was expected that Venezuela would acquiesce in this line the expectation was doomed to speedy disappointment. Venezuela at once protested, and with such vigour and to such purpose that the line was explained to be only tentative—part of a general boundary scheme concerning Brazil and the Netherlands, as well as Venezuela—and the monuments of the line set up by Schomburgk were removed by the express order of Lord Aberdeen.

**No. 121.**

Under these circumstances, it seems impossible to treat the Schomburgk line as being the boundary claimed by Great Britain as matter of right, or as anything but a line originating in considerations of convenience and expediency. Since 1840 various other boundary lines have from time to time been indicated by Great Britain, but all as conventional lines—lines to which Venezuela's assent has been desired, but which in no instance, it is believed, have been demanded as matter of right. Thus, neither of the parties is to-day standing for the boundary line predicated upon strict legal right—Great Britain having formulated no such claim at all, while Venezuela insists upon the Essequibo line only as a liberal concession to her antagonist.

Several other features of the situation remain to be briefly noticed. The continuous growth of the undefined British claim, the fate of the various attempts at arbitration of the controversy, and the part in the matter heretofore taken by the United States. As already seen, the exploitation of the Schomburgk line in 1840 was at once followed by the protest of Venezuela and by proceedings on the part of Great Britain which could fairly be interpreted only as a disavowal of that line. Indeed—in addition to the facts already noticed—Lord Aberdeen himself in 1844 proposed a line beginning at the River Moroco, a distinct abandonment of the Schomburgk line. Notwithstanding this, however, every change in the British claim since that time has moved the frontier of British Guiana farther and farther to the westward of the line thus proposed. The Granville line of 1881 placed the starting-point at a distance of 29 miles from the Moroco in the direction of Punta Barima. The Rosebery line of 1886 placed it west of the Guiana River, and about that time, if the British authority known as the "Statesman's Year Book" is to be relied upon, the area of British Guiana was suddenly enlarged by some 33,000 square miles—being stated as 76,000 square miles in 1885, and 109,000 square miles in 1887. The Salisbury line of 1890 fixed the starting-point of the line in the mouth of the Amacuro west of the Punta Barima on the Orinoco. And finally, in 1893, a second Rosebery line carried the boundary from a point to the west of the Amacuro as far as the source of the Cumano River and the Sierra of Usupamo. Nor have the various claims thus enumerated been claims on paper merely. An exercise of jurisdiction corresponding more or less to such claims has accompanied or followed closely upon each, and has been the more irritating and unjustifiable if, as is alleged, an agreement made in the year 1850 bound both parties to refrain from such occupation pending the settlement of the dispute.

While the British claim has been developing in the manner above described, Venezuela has made earnest and repeated efforts to have the question of boundary settled. Indeed, allowance being made for the distractions of a war of independence and for frequent internal revolutions, it may be fairly said that Venezuela has never ceased to strive for its adjustment. It could, of course, do so only through peaceful methods, any resort to

**No. 121.**

force as against its powerful adversary being out of the question. Accordingly, shortly after the drawing of the Schomburgk line, an effort was made to settle the boundary by Treaty, and was apparently progressing towards a successful issue when the negotiations were brought to an end in 1844 by the death of the Venezuelan Plenipotentiary. In 1848 Venezuela entered upon a period of civil commotions which lasted for more than a quarter of a century, and the negotiations thus interrupted in 1844 were not resumed until 1876. In that year Venezuela offered to close the dispute by accepting the Moroco line proposed by Lord Aberdeen. But, without giving reasons for his refusal, Lord Granville rejected the proposal, and suggested a new line comprehending a large tract of territory all pretension to which seemed to have been abandoned by the previous action of Lord Aberdeen. Venezuela refused to assent to it, and negotiations dragged along without result until 1882, when Venezuela concluded that the only course open to her was arbitration of the controversy. Before she had made any definite proposition, however, Great Britain took the initiative by suggesting the making of a Treaty which should determine various other questions as well as that of the disputed boundary. The result was that a Treaty was practically agreed upon with the Gladstone Government in 1886 containing a general arbitration clause under which the parties might have submitted the boundary dispute to the decision of a third Power or of several Powers in amity with both. Before the actual signing of the Treaty, however, the Administration of Mr. Gladstone was superseded by that of Lord Salisbury, which declined to accede to the arbitration clause of the Treaty, notwithstanding the reasonable expectations of Venezuela to the contrary, based upon the Premier's emphatic declaration in the House of Lords that no serious Government would think of not respecting the engagements of its predecessor. Since then, Venezuela on the one side has been offering and calling for arbitration, while Great Britain on the other has responded by insisting upon the condition that any arbitration should relate only to such of the disputed territory as lies west of a line designated by herself. As this condition seemed inadmissible to Venezuela, and as, while the negotiations were pending, new appropriations of what is claimed to be Venezuelan territory continued to be made, Venezuela in 1887 suspended diplomatic relations with Great Britain, protesting, "before Her British Majesty's Government, before all civilized nations, and before the world in general, against the acts of spoliation committed to her detriment by the Government of Great Britain, which she at no time and on no account will recognize as capable of altering in the least the rights which she has inherited from Spain, and respecting which she will ever be willing to submit to the decision of a third Power." Diplomatic relations have not since been restored, though what are claimed to be new and flagrant British aggressions forced Venezuela to resume negotiations on the boundary question—in 1890 through its Minister in Paris and a Special Envoy on that subject—and in 1893 through a confidential Agent, Señor Mi-



**No. 121.**

chelena. These negotiations, however, met with the fate of other like previous negotiations—Great Britain refusing to arbitrate except as to territory west of an arbitrary line drawn by herself. All attempts in that direction definitely terminated in October 1893, when Señor Michelena filed with the Foreign Office the following declaration:—

“I perform a most strict duty in raising again in the name of the Government of Venezuela a most solemn protest against the proceedings of the Colony of British Guiana, constituting encroachments upon the territory of the Republic, and against the declaration contained in your Excellency’s communication that Her Britannic Majesty’s Government considers that part of the territory as pertaining to British Guiana, and admits no claim to it on the part of Venezuela. In support of this protest, I reproduce all the arguments presented to your Excellency in my note of the 29th of last September and those which have been exhibited by the Government of Venezuela on the various occasions they have raised the same protest.

“I lay on Her Britannic Majesty’s Government the entire responsibility of the incidents that may arise in the future from the necessity to which Venezuela has been driven to oppose by all possible means the dispossession of a part of her territory; for, by disregarding her just representations to put an end to this violent state of affairs through the decision of Arbiters, Her Majesty’s Government ignores her rights, and imposes upon her the painful though peremptory duty of providing for her own legitimate defence.”

To the territorial controversy between Great Britain and the Republic of Venezuela, thus briefly outlined, the United States has not been, and, indeed, in view of its traditional policy, could not be indifferent. The note to the British Foreign Office by which Venezuela opened negotiations in 1878 was at once communicated to this Government. In January 1881 a letter of the Venezuelan Minister at Washington respecting certain alleged demonstrations at the mouth of the Orinoco was thus answered by Mr. Evarts, then Secretary of State:--

“In reply, I have to inform you that, in view of the deep interest which the Government of the United States takes in all transactions tending to attempted encroachments of foreign Powers upon the territory of any of the Republics of this continent, this Government could not look with indifference to the forcible acquisition of such territory by England if the mission of the vessels now at the mouth of the Orinoco should be found to be for that end. This Government awaits, therefore, with natural concern, the more particular statements promised by the Government of Venezuela, which it hopes will not be long delayed.”

In the February following Mr. Evarts wrote again on the same subject as follows:—

“Referring to your note of the 21st December last, touching the operations of certain British war-vessels in and near the mouth of the Orinoco

**No. 121.**

River, and to my reply thereto of the 31st ultimo, as well as to the recent occasions in which the subject has been mentioned in our conferences concerning the business of your mission, I take it to be fitting now, at the close of my incumbency of the office I hold, to advert to the interest with which the Government of the United States cannot fail to regard any such purpose with respect to the control of American territory as is stated to be contemplated by the Government of Great Britain; and to express my regret that the further information promised in your note with regard to such designs had not reached me in season to receive the attention which, notwithstanding the severe pressure of public business at the end of an administrative term, I should have taken pleasure in bestowing upon it. I doubt not, however, that your representations in fulfilment of the awaited additional orders of your Government will have like earnest and solicitous consideration at the hands of my successor."

In November 1882 the then state of negotiations with Great Britain, together with a copy of an intended note suggesting recourse to arbitration, was communicated to the Secretary of State by the President of Venezuela, with the expression of the hope that the United States would give him his opinion and advice, and such support as it deemed possible to offer Venezuela, in order that justice should be done her. Mr. Frelinghuysen replied, in a despatch to the United States' Minister at Carácas, as follows:—

"This Government has already expressed its view that arbitration of such disputes is a convenient resort in the case of failure to come to a mutual understanding, and intimated its willingness, if Venezuela should so desire, to propose to Great Britain such a mode of settlement. It is felt that the tender of good offices would not be so profitable if the United States were to approach Great Britain as the advocate of any prejudged solution in favour of Venezuela. So far as the United States can counsel and assist Venezuela, it believes it best to confine its reply to the renewal of the suggestion of arbitration and the offer of all its good offices in that direction. This suggestion is the more easily made, since it appears, from the instruction sent by Señor Seijas to the Venezuelan Minister in London on the same 15th July, 1882, that the President of Venezuela proposed to the British Government the submission of the dispute to arbitration by a third Power.

"You will take an early occasion to present the foregoing considerations to Señor Seijas, saying to him that, while trusting that the direct proposal for arbitration already made to Great Britain may bear good fruit (if, indeed, it has not already done so by its acceptance in principle), the Government of the United States will cheerfully lend any needful aid to press upon Great Britain in a friendly way the proposition so made; and at the same time you will say to Señor Seijas (in personal conference, and not with the formality of a written communication) that the United States, while advocating strongly the recourse of arbitration for the adjustment

**No. 121.**

of international disputes affecting the States of America, does not seek to put itself forward as their Arbiter; that, viewing all such questions impartially, and with no intent or desire to prejudge their merits, the United States will not refuse its arbitration if asked by both parties; and that, regarding all such questions as essentially and distinctively American, the United States would always prefer to see such contentions adjusted through the arbitrament of an American rather than an European Power."

In 1884 General Guzman Blanco, the Venezuelan Minister to England, appointed with special reference to pending negotiations for a general Treaty with Great Britain, visited Washington on his way to London, and, after several conferences with the Secretary of State respecting the objects of his mission, was thus commended to the good offices of Mr. Lowell, our Minister at St. James':—

"It will necessarily be somewhat within your discretion how far your good offices may be profitably employed with Her Majesty's Government to these ends, and at any rate you may take proper occasion to let Lord Granville know that we are not without concern as to whatever may affect the interests of a sister Republic of the American Continent and its position in the family of nations.

"If General Guzman should apply to you for advice or assistance in realizing the purposes of his mission you will show him proper consideration, and, without committing the United States to any determinate political solution, you will endeavour to carry out the views of this instruction."

The progress of General Guzman's negotiations did not fail to be observed by this Government, and in December 1886, with a view to preventing the rupture of diplomatic relations—which actually took place in February following—the then Secretary of State, Mr. Bayard, instructed our Minister to Great Britain to tender the arbitration of the United States in the following terms:—

"It does not appear that at any time heretofore the good offices of this Government have been actually tendered to avert a rupture between Great Britain and Venezuela. As intimated in my No. 58, our inaction in this regard would seem to be due to the reluctance of Venezuela to have the Government of the United States take any steps having relation to the action of the British Government which might, in appearance even, prejudice the resort to further arbitration or mediation which Venezuela desired. Nevertheless, the records abundantly testify our friendly concern in the adjustment of the dispute; and the intelligence now received warrants me in tendering through you to Her Majesty's Government the good offices of the United States to promote an amicable settlement of the respective claims of Great Britain and Venezuela in the premises.

"As proof of the impartiality with which we view the question, we offer our arbitration, if acceptable, to both countries. We do this with

**No. 121.**

the less hesitancy, as the dispute turns upon simple and readily ascertainable historical facts.

“Her Majesty’s Government will readily understand that this attitude of friendly neutrality and entire impartiality touching the merits of the controversy, consisting wholly in a difference of facts between our friends and neighbours, is entirely consistent and compatible with the sense of responsibility that rests upon the United States in relation to the South American Republics. The doctrines we announced two generations ago, at the instance and with the moral support and approval of the British Government, have lost none of their force or importance in the progress of time, and the Governments of Great Britain and the United States are equally interested in conserving a status the wisdom of which has been demonstrated by the experience of more than half-a-century.

“It is proper, therefore, that you should convey to Lord Iddesleigh, in such sufficiently guarded terms as your discretion may dictate, the satisfaction that would be felt by the Government of the United States in perceiving that its wishes in this regard were permitted to have influence with Her Majesty’s Government.”

This offer of mediation was declined by Great Britain with the statement that a similar offer had already been received from another quarter, and that the Queen’s Government were still not without hope of a settlement by direct diplomatic negotiations. In February 1888, having been informed that the Governor of British Guiana had by formal Decree laid claim to the territory traversed by the route of a proposed railway from Ciudad Bolivar to Guacipati, Mr. Bayard addressed a note to our Minister to England, from which the following extracts are taken:—

“The claim now stated to have been put forth by the authorities of British Guiana necessarily gives rise to grave disquietude, and creates an apprehension that the territorial claim does not follow historical traditions or evidence, but is apparently indefinite. At no time hitherto does it appear that the district of which Guacipati is the centre has been claimed as British territory, or that such jurisdiction has ever been asserted over its inhabitants, and if the reported Decree of the Governor of British Guiana be indeed genuine it is not apparent how any line of railway from Ciudad Bolivar to Guacipati could enter or traverse territory within the control of Great Britain.

“It is true that the line claimed by Great Britain as the western boundary of British Guiana is uncertain and vague. It is only necessary to examine the British Colonial Office List for a few years back to perceive this. In the issue for 1877, for instance, the line runs nearly southwardly from the mouth of the Amacuro to the junction of the Cotinga and Takutu Rivers. In the issue of 1887, ten years later, it makes a wide *détour* to the westward, following the Yuruari. Guacipati lies considerably to the westward of the line officially claimed in 1887, and it may perhaps be in-

**No. 121.**

structive to compare with it the map which doubtless will be found in the Colonial Office List for the present year.

“ It may be well for you to express anew to Lord Salisbury the great gratification it would afford this Government to see the Venezuelan dispute amicably and honourably settled by arbitration or otherwise, and our readiness to do anything we properly can to assist to that end.

“ In the course of your conversation you may refer to the publication in the London “ Financier ” of the 24th January (a copy of which you can procure and exhibit to Lord Salisbury), and express apprehension lest the widening pretensions of British Guiana to possess territory over which Venezuela’s jurisdiction has never heretofore been disputed may not diminish the chances for a practical settlement.

“ If, indeed, it should appear that there is no fixed limit to the British boundary claim, our good disposition to aid in a settlement might not only be defeated, but be obliged to give place to a feeling of grave concern.”

In 1889, information having been received that Barima, at the mouth of the Orinoco, has been declared a British port, Mr. Blaine, then Secretary of State, authorized Mr. White to confer with Lord Salisbury for the re-establishment of diplomatic relations between Great Britain and Venezuela on the basis of a temporary restoration of the *status quo*, and on May 1 and May 6, 1890, sent the following telegrams to our Minister to England (Mr. Lincoln):—

“ May 1, 1890.

“ Mr. Lincoln is instructed to use his good offices with Lord Salisbury to bring about the resumption of diplomatic intercourse between Great Britain and Venezuela as a preliminary step towards the settlement of the boundary dispute by arbitration. The joint proposals of Great Britain and the United States towards Portugal, which have just been brought about, would seem to make the present time propitious for submitting this question to an international arbitration. He is requested to propose to Lord Salisbury, with a view to an accommodation, that an informal conference be had in Washington, or in London, of Representatives of the three Powers. In such conference the position of the United States is one solely of impartial friendship towards both litigants.”

“ May 5, 1890.

“ It is nevertheless desired that you shall do all you can consistently with our attitude of impartial friendship to induce some accord between the contestants by which the merits of the controversy may be fairly ascertained, and the rights of each party justly confirmed. The neutral position of this Government does not comport with any expression of opinion on the part of this Department as to what these rights are, but it is confident that the shifting footing on which the British boundary question has rested for several years past is an obstacle to such a correct appreciation of the nature and grounds of her claim as would alone warrant the formation of any opinion.”

**No. 121.**

In the course of the same year, 1890, Venezuela sent to London a Special Envoy to bring about the resumption of diplomatic relations with Great Britain through the good offices of the United States' Minister. But the mission failed, because a condition of such resumption, steadily adhered to by Venezuela, was the reference of the boundary dispute to arbitration. Since the close of the negotiations initiated by Señor Michelena in 1893, Venezuela has repeatedly brought the controversy to the notice of the United States, has insisted upon its importance to the United States as well as to Venezuela, has represented it to have reached an acute stage—making definite action by the United States imperative—and has not ceased to solicit the services and support of the United States in aid of its final adjustment. These appeals have not been received with indifference, and our Ambassador to Great Britain has been uniformly instructed to exert all his influence in the direction of the re-establishment of diplomatic relations between Great Britain and Venezuela, and in favour of arbitration of the boundary controversy. The Secretary of State, in a communication to Mr. Bayard, bearing date the 13th July, 1894, used the following language:—

“The President is inspired by a desire for a peaceable and honourable settlement of the existing difficulties between an American State and a powerful Transatlantic nation, and would be glad to see the re-establishment of such diplomatic relations between them as would promote that end.

“I can discern but two equitable solutions of the present controversy. One is the arbitral determination of the rights of the disputants as the respective successors to the historical rights of Holland and Spain over the region in question. The other is to create a new boundary-line in accordance with the dictates of mutual expediency and consideration. The two Governments having so far been unable to agree on a conventional line, the consistent and conspicuous advocacy by the United States and England of the principle of arbitration, and their recourse thereto in settlement of important questions arising between them, makes such a mode of adjustment especially appropriate in the present instance, and this Government will gladly do what it can to further a determination in that sense.”

Subsequent communications to Mr. Bayard direct him to ascertain whether a Minister from Venezuela would be received by Great Britain. In the Annual Message to Congress of the 3rd December last, the President used the following language: “The boundary of British Guiana still remains in dispute between Great Britain and Venezuela. Believing that its early settlement, on some just basis alike honourable to both parties, is in the line of our established policy to remove from this hemisphere all causes of difference with Powers beyond the sea, I shall renew the efforts heretofore made to bring about a restoration of diplomatic relations between the disputants, and to induce a reference to arbitration, a resort which Great Britain so conspicuously favours in principle and respects in

**No. 121.**

practice, and which is earnestly sought by her weaker adversary." And, on the 22nd February, 1895, a Joint Resolution of Congress declared, "That the President's suggestion . . . that Great Britain and Venezuela refer their dispute as to boundaries to friendly arbitration be earnestly recommended to the favourable consideration of both parties in interest."

The important features of the existing situation, as shown by the foregoing recital, may be briefly stated:—

1. The title to territory of indefinite but confessedly very large extent is in dispute between Great Britain on the one hand, and the South American Republic of Venezuela on the other.

2. The disparity in the strength of the claimants is such that Venezuela can hope to establish her claim only through peaceful methods—through an agreement with her adversary either upon the subject itself or upon an arbitration.

3. The controversy with varying claims on the part of Great Britain has existed for more than half-a-century, during which period many earnest and persistent efforts of Venezuela to establish a boundary by agreement have proved unsuccessful.

4. The futility of the endeavour to obtain a conventional line being recognized, Venezuela, for a quarter of a century, has asked and striven for arbitration.

5. Great Britain, however, has always and continuously refused, and still refuses, to arbitrate except upon the condition of a renunciation of a large part of the Venezuelan claim, and of a concession to herself of a large share of the territory in controversy.

\* \* \* \* \*

Great Britain, however, assumes no such attitude. On the contrary, she both admits that there is a controversy, and that arbitration should be resorted to for its adjustment. But, while up to that point her attitude leaves nothing to be desired, its practical effect is completely nullified by her insistence that the submission shall cover but a part of the controversy—that, as a condition of arbitrating her right to a part of the disputed territory, the remainder shall be turned over to her. If it were possible to point to a boundary which both parties had ever agreed or assumed to be such either expressly or tacitly, the demand that territory conceded by such line to British Guiana should be held not to be in dispute might rest upon a reasonable basis. But there is no such line. The territory which Great Britain insists shall be ceded to her as a condition of arbitrating her claim to other territory has never been admitted to belong to her. It has always and consistently been claimed by Venezuela. Upon what principle—except her feebleness as a nation—is she to be denied the right of having the claim heard and passed upon by an impartial Tribunal? No reason or shadow of reason appears in all the voluminous literature of the subject.

**No. 121.**

“It is to be so because I will it to be so” seems to be the only justification Great Britain offers. It is, indeed, intimated that the British claim to this particular territory rests upon an occupation, which, whether acquiesced in or not, has ripened into a perfect title by long continuance. But what prescription affecting territorial rights can be said to exist as between Sovereign States? Or, if there is any, what is the legitimate consequence? It is not that all arbitration should be denied, but only that the submission should embrace an additional topic, namely, the validity of the asserted prescriptive title either in point of law or in point of fact. No different result follows from the contention that as a matter of principle Great Britain cannot be asked to submit, and ought not to submit, to arbitration her political and sovereign rights over territory. This contention, if applied to the whole or to a vital part of the possessions of a Sovereign State, need not be controverted. To hold otherwise might be equivalent to holding that a Sovereign State was bound to arbitrate its very existence. But Great Britain has herself shown in various instances that the principle has no pertinency when either the interests or the territorial area involved are not of controlling magnitude, and her loss of them as the result of an arbitration cannot appreciably affect her honour or her power. Thus, she has arbitrated the extent of her colonial possessions twice with the United States, twice with Portugal, and once with Germany, and perhaps in other instances. The North-West Water Boundary Arbitration of 1872 between her and this country is an example in point, and well illustrates both the effect to be given to long-continued use and enjoyment, and the fact that a truly great Power sacrifices neither prestige nor dignity by reconsidering the most emphatic rejection of a proposition when satisfied of the obvious and intrinsic justice of the case.

By the Award of the Emperor of Germany, the Arbitrator in that case, the United States acquired San Juan and a number of smaller islands near the coast of Vancouver as a consequence of the decision that the term “the channel which separates the continent from Vancouver’s Island,” as used in the Treaty of Washington of 1846, meant the Haro Channel, and not the Rosario Channel. Yet a leading contention of Great Britain before the Arbitrator was that equity required a Judgment in her favour, because a decision in favour of the United States would deprive British subjects of rights of navigation of which they had had the habitual enjoyment from the time when the Rosario Strait was first explored and surveyed in 1798. So though, by virtue of the Award, the United States acquired San Juan and the other islands of the group to which it belongs, the British Foreign Secretary had in 1859 instructed the British Minister at Washington as follows:—

“Her Majesty’s Government must, therefore, under any circumstances, maintain the right of the British Crown to the Island of San Juan. The interests at stake in connection with the retention of that island are too important to admit of compromise, and your Lordship will consequently



**No. 121.**

bear in mind that, whatever arrangement as to the boundary-line is finally arrived at, no settlement of the question will be accepted by Her Majesty's Government which does not provide for the Island of San Juan being reserved to the British Crown."

Thus, as already intimated, the British demand that her right to a portion of the disputed territory shall be acknowledged before she will consent to an arbitration as to the rest seems to stand upon nothing but her own *ipsi dixit*. She says to Venezuela, in substance:—

"You can get none of the debatable land by force, because you are not strong enough; you can get none by Treaty, because I will not agree; and you can take your chance of getting a portion by arbitration only if you first agree to abandon to me such other portion as I may designate."

**No. 122.**

**Mr. Bayard, Ambassador of the United States at London, to the Marquis of Salisbury, August 8, 1895.**

[Reprinted from Blue Book "United States No. 1 (1896)," No. 13, pp. 21-22.]

My Lord,

With reference to the subject of the interview which you did me the honour to accord to me yesterday, and as connected with the instruction of the Secretary of State of the United States which I had then the honour to communicate to your Lordship, and to place a copy thereof in your hands, I beg leave now to communicate the purport of a supplementary instruction, dated the 24th July, since received by me, in reference to the Anglo-Venezuelan boundary dispute, and the alleged enlargement of the territorial area claimed for British Guiana of 33,000 square miles between 1884 and 1886.

This statement is made on the authority of the British publication entitled "The Statesman's Year Book," edited by Mr. J. Scott Keltie, Assistant Secretary to the Royal Geographical Society, and is corroborated by the British "Colonial Office List."

Under the head of British Guiana in the issue of 1885, and at p. 24, it is therein stated: "It is impossible to specify the exact area of the Colony, as its precise boundaries between Venezuela and Brazil respectively are undetermined, but it has been computed to be 76,000 square miles." In the same publication for 1886 the same statement occurs, with the change in the area to "about 109,000 square miles."

The maps in the volumes mentioned are identical, so that the increase of 33,000 square miles thereby claimed for British Guiana is not thereby explained; but later "Colonial Office List" maps show a varying sweep of the boundary westward into what previously figured as Venezuelan territory, while no change is noted in the Brazilian frontier.

I am duly mindful of your Lordship's emphatic disavowal to me yester-

**No. 122.**

day of any official authority for the statements contained in the "Colonial Office List," but communicate the fact of their publication, in serial continuity, here in London, and the absence of any known correction. It may also be noted that, on the title-page, the work is alleged to be compiled from official records, by permission of the Secretary of State for the Colonies, by Mr. John Anderson, an official of the Colonial Office.

I have also the honour to transmit herewith a volume, published by the United States' Government, of Papers relating to their Foreign Relations for 1894, in which (at p. 812, &c.) is contained a Memorandum on the Guiana and Venezuela boundary question, communicated to the late Mr. Gresham, Secretary of State, by Señor Andrade, the Venezuelan Envoy to the United States—a compendium which may be of convenience to you, and which is sent in accordance with your Lordship's intimation of a desire to receive the same.

I have, &c.

(Signed)

T. F. BAYARD.

**No. 123.**

The Marquis of Salisbury to Sir Julian Pauncefote, British Ambassador at Washington, November 26, 1895.

[Reprinted from Blue Book "United States No. 1 (1896)," No. 16, pp. 24-32.]

Sir,

In my preceding despatch of to-day's date I have replied only to the latter portion of Mr. Olney's despatch of the 20th July last, which treats of the application of the Monroe doctrine to the question of the boundary dispute between Venezuela and the colony of British Guiana. But it seems desirable, in order to remove some evident misapprehensions as to the main features of the question, that the statement of it contained in the earlier portion of Mr. Olney's despatch should not be left without reply. Such a course will be the more convenient, because, in consequence of the suspension of diplomatic relations, I shall not have the opportunity of setting right misconceptions of this kind in the ordinary way in a despatch addressed to the Venezuelan Government itself.

Her Majesty's Government, while they have never avoided or declined argument on the subject with the Government of Venezuela, have always held that the question was one which had no direct bearing on the material interests of any other country, and have consequently refrained hitherto from presenting any detailed statement of their case either to the United States or to other foreign Governments.

It is, perhaps, a natural consequence of this circumstance that Mr. Olney's narration of what has passed bears the impress of being mainly, if not entirely, founded on *ex parte* statements emanating from Venezuela, and gives, in the opinion of Her Majesty's Government, an erroneous view of many material facts.

**No. 123.**

Mr. Olney commences his observations by remarking that "the dispute is of ancient date, and began at least as early as the time when Great Britain acquired by the Treaty with the Netherlands in 1814 the establishments of Demerara, Essequibo, and Berbice. From that time to the present the dividing line between these establishments, now called British Guiana, and Venezuela has never ceased to be subject of contention."

This statement is founded on misconception. The dispute on the subject of the frontier did not, in fact, commence till after the year 1840.

The title of Great Britain to the territory in question is derived, in the first place, from conquest and military occupation of the Dutch settlements in 1796. Both on this occasion, and at the time of a previous occupation of those settlements in 1781, the British authorities marked the western boundary of their possessions as beginning some distance up the Orinoco beyond Point Barima, in accordance with the limits claimed and actually held by the Dutch, and this has always since remained the frontier claimed by Great Britain. The definitive cession of the Dutch settlements to England was, as Mr. Olney states, placed on record by the Treaty of 1814, and although the Spanish Government were parties to the negotiations which led to that Treaty, they did not at any stage of them raise objection to the frontiers claimed by Great Britain, though these were perfectly well known to them. At that time the Government of Venezuela had not been recognized even by the United States, though the province was already in revolt against the Spanish Government, and had declared its independence. No question of frontier was raised with Great Britain either by it or by the Government of the United States of Colombia, in which it became merged in 1819. That Government, indeed, on repeated occasions, acknowledged its indebtedness to Great Britain for her friendly attitude. When in 1830 the Republic of Venezuela assumed a separate existence its Government was equally warm in its expressions of gratitude and friendship, and there was not at the time any indication of an intention to raise such claims as have been urged by it during the latter portion of this century.

It is true, as stated by Mr. Olney, that, in the Venezuelan Constitution of 1830, Article 5 lays down that "the territory of Venezuela comprises all that which previously to the political changes of 1810 was denominated the Captaincy-General of Venezuela." Similar declarations had been made in the fundamental laws promulgated in 1819 and 1821.

I need not point out that a declaration of this kind made by a newly self-constituted State can have no valid force as against international arrangements previously concluded by the nation from which it has separated itself.

But the present difficulty would never have arisen if the Government of Venezuela had been content to claim only those territories which could be proved or even reasonably asserted to have been practically in the

**No. 123.**

possession and under the effective jurisdiction of the Captaincy-General of Venezuela.

There is no authoritative statement by the Spanish Government of those territories, for a Decree which the Venezuelan Government allege to have been issued by the King of Spain in 1768, describing the Province of Guiana as bordered on the south by the Amazon and on the east by the Atlantic, certainly cannot be regarded as such. It absolutely ignores the Dutch settlements, which not only existed in fact, but had been formally recognized by the Treaty of Munster of 1648, and it would, if now considered valid, transfer to Venezuela the whole of the British, Dutch, and French Guianas, and an enormous tract of territory belonging to Brazil.

But of the territories claimed and actually occupied by the Dutch, which were those acquired from them by Great Britain, there exist the most authentic declarations. In 1759, and again in 1769, the States-General of Holland addressed formal remonstrances to the Court of Madrid against the incursions of the Spaniards into their posts and settlements in the basin of the Cuyuni. In these remonstrances they distinctly claimed all the branches of the Essequibo River, and especially, the Cuyuni River, as lying within Dutch territory. They demanded immediate reparation for the proceedings of the Spaniards and reinstatement of the posts said to have been injured by them, and suggested that a proper delineation between the Colony of Essequibo and the Rio Orinoco should be laid down by authority.

To this claim the Spanish Government never attempted to make any reply. But it is evident from the archives which are preserved in Spain, and to which, by the courtesy of the Spanish Government, reference has been made, that the Council of State did not consider that they had the means of rebutting it, and that neither they nor the Governor of Cumaná were prepared seriously to maintain the claims which were suggested in reports from his subordinate officer, the Commandant of Guiana. These reports were characterized by the Spanish Ministers as insufficient and unsatisfactory, as "professing to show the Province of Guiana under too favourable a light," and finally by the Council of State as appearing from other information to be "very improbable." They form, however, with a map which accompanied them, the evidence on which the Venezuelan Government appear most to rely, though it may be observed that among other documents which have from time to time been produced or referred to by them in the course of the discussions is a Bull of Pope Alexander VI in 1493, which, if it is to be considered as having any present validity, would take from the Government of the United States all title to jurisdiction on the Continent of North America. The fundamental principle underlying the Venezuelan argument is, in fact, that, inasmuch as Spain was originally entitled of right to the whole of the American Continent, any territory on that Continent which she cannot be shown to have acknowledged in positive and specific terms to have passed to another

**No. 133.**

Power can only have been acquired by wrongful usurpation, and if situated to the north of the Amazon and west of the Atlantic must necessarily belong to Venezuela, as her self-constituted inheritor in those regions. It may reasonably be asked whether Mr. Olney would consent to refer to the arbitration of another Power pretensions raised by the Government of Mexico on such a foundation to large tracts of territory which had long been comprised in the Federation.

The circumstances connected with the marking of what is called the "Schomburgk" line are as follows:—

In 1835 a grant was made by the British Government for the exploration of the interior of the British Colony, and Mr. (afterwards Sir Robert) Schomburgk, who was employed on this service, on his return to the capital of the Colony in July 1839, called the attention of the Government to the necessity for an early demarcation of its boundaries. He was in consequence appointed in November 1840 Special Commissioner for provisionally surveying and delimiting the boundaries of British Guiana, and notice of the appointment was given to the Governments concerned, including that of Venezuela.

The intention of Her Majesty's Government at that time was, when the work of the Commissioner had been completed, to communicate to the other Governments their views as to the true boundary of the British Colony, and then to settle any details to which those Governments might take objection.

It is important to notice that Sir R. Schomburgk did not discover or invent any new boundaries. He took particular care to fortify himself with the history of the case. He had further, from actual exploration and information obtained from the Indians, and from the evidence of local remains, as at Barima, and local traditions, as on the Cuyuni, fixed the limits of the Dutch possessions, and the zone from which all trace of Spanish influence was absent. On such data he based his reports.

At the very outset of his mission he surveyed Point Barima, where the remains of a Dutch fort still existed, and placed there and at the mouth of the Amacura two boundary posts. At the urgent entreaty of the Venezuelan Government these two posts were afterwards removed, as stated by Mr. Olney, but this concession was made on the distinct understanding that Great Britain did not thereby in any way abandon her claim to that position.

In submitting the maps of his survey, on which he indicated the line which he would propose to Her Majesty's Government for adoption, Sir R. Schomburgk called attention to the fact that Her Majesty's Government might justly claim the whole basin of the Cuyuni and Yuruari on the ground that the natural boundary of the Colony included any territory through which flow rivers which fall into the Essequibo. "Upon this principle," he wrote, "the boundary-line would run from the sources of the Carunani towards the sources of the Cuyuni proper, and from thence

**No. 123.**

towards its far more northern tributaries, the Rivers Iruary (Yuruari) and Iruang (Yuruan), and thus approach the very heart of Venezuelan Guiana." But, on grounds of complaisance towards Venezuela, he proposed that Great Britain should consent to surrender her claim to a more extended frontier inland in return for the formal recognition of her right to Point Barima. It was on this principle that he drew the boundary-line which has since been called by his name.

Undoubtedly, therefore, Mr. Olney is right when he states that "it seems impossible to treat the Schomburgk line as being the boundary claimed by Great Britain as matter of right, or as anything but a line originating in considerations of convenience and expediency." The Schomburgk line was in fact a great reduction of the boundary claimed by Great Britain as matter of right, and its proposal originated in a desire to come to a speedy and friendly arrangement with a weaker Power with whom Great Britain was at the time, and desired to remain, in cordial relations.

The following are the main facts of the discussions that ensued with the Venezuelan Government:—

While Mr. Schomburgk was engaged on his survey the Venezuelan Minister in London had urged Her Majesty's Government to enter into a Treaty of Limits, but received the answer that, if it should be necessary to enter into such a Treaty, a survey was, at any rate, the necessary preliminary, and that this was proceeding.

As soon as Her Majesty's Government were in possession of Mr. Schomburgk's reports, the Venezuelan Minister was informed that they were in a position to commence negotiations, and in January 1844, M. Fortique commenced by stating the claim of his Government.

This claim, starting from such obsolete grounds as the original discovery by Spain of the American Continent, and mainly supported by quotations of a more or less vague character from the writings of travellers and geographers, but adducing no substantial evidence of actual conquest or occupation of the territory claimed, demanded the Essequibo itself as the boundary of Venezuela.

A reply was returned by Lord Aberdeen, then Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs, pointing out that it would be impossible to arrive at any agreement if both sides brought forward pretensions of so extreme a character, but stating that the British Government would not imitate M. Fortique in putting forward a claim which it could not be intended seriously to maintain. Lord Aberdeen then proceeded to announce the concessions which, "out of friendly regard to Venezuela," Her Majesty's Government were prepared to make, and proposed a line starting from the mouth of the Moroco to the junction of the River Barama with the Waini, thence up the Barama to the point at which that stream approached nearest to the Acarabisi, and thence following Sir R. Schomburgk's line from the source of the Acarabisi onwards.

A condition was attached to the proffered cession, viz., that the Vene-

**No. 123.**

zuelan Government should enter into an engagement that no portion of the territory proposed to be ceded should be alienated at any time to a foreign Power, and that the Indian tribes residing in it should be protected from oppression.

No answer to the note was ever received from the Venezuelan Government, and in 1850 Her Majesty's Government informed Her Majesty's Chargé d'Affaires at Carácas that as the proposal had remained for more than six years unaccepted, it must be considered as having lapsed, and authorized him to make a communication to the Venezuelan Government to that effect.

A report having at the time become current in Venezuela that Great Britain intended to seize Venezuelan Guiana, the British Government distinctly disclaimed such an intention, but inasmuch as the Government of Venezuela subsequently permitted projects to be set on foot for the occupation of Point Barima and certain other positions in dispute, the British Chargé d'Affaires was instructed in June 1850 to call the serious attention of the President and Government of Venezuela to the question, and to declare to them, "that, whilst, on the one hand, Great Britain had on intention to occupy or encroach on the disputed territory, she would not, on the other hand, view with indifference aggressions on that territory by Venezuela."

The Venezuelan Government replied in December of the same year that Venezuela had no intention of occupying or encroaching upon any part of the territory the dominion of which was in dispute, and that orders would be issued to the authorities in Guiana to abstain from taking any steps contrary to this engagement.

This constitutes what has been termed the "Agreement of 1850," to which the Government of Venezuela have frequently appealed, but which the Venezuelans have repeatedly violated in succeeding years.

Their first acts of this nature consisted in the occupation of fresh positions to the east of their previous settlements, and the founding in 1858 of the town of Nueva Providencia on the right bank of the Yuruari, all previous settlements being on the left bank. The British Government, however, considering that these settlements were so near positions which they had not wished to claim, considering also the difficulty of controlling the movements of mining populations, overlooked this breach of the Agreement.

The Governor of the Colony was in 1857 sent to Carácas to negotiate for a settlement of the boundary, but he found the Venezuelan State in so disturbed a condition that it was impossible to commence negotiations, and eventually he came away without having effected anything.

For the next nineteen years, as stated by Mr. Olney, the civil commotions in Venezuela prevented any resumption of negotiations.

In 1876 it was reported that the Venezuelan Government had, for the second time, broken "the Agreement of 1850" by granting licences to

**No. 123.**

trade and cut wood in Barima and eastward. Later in the same year that Government once more made an overture for the settlement of the boundary. Various delays interposed before negotiations actually commenced; and it was not till 1879 that Señor Rojas began them with a renewal of the claim to the Essequibo as the eastern boundary of Venezuelan Guiana. At the same time he stated that his Government wished "to obtain, by means of a Treaty, a definitive settlement of the question, and was disposed to proceed to the demarcation of the divisional line between the two Guianas in a spirit of conciliation and true friendship towards Her Majesty's Government."

In reply to this communication, a note was addressed to Señor Rojas on the 10th January, 1880, reminding him that the boundary which Her Majesty's Government claimed, as a matter of strict right on grounds of conquest and concession by Treaty, commenced at a point at the mouth of the Orinoco, westward of Point Barima, that it proceeded thence in a southerly direction to the Imataca Mountains, the line of which it followed to the north-west, passing from thence by the high land of Santa Maria just south of the town of Upata, until it struck a range of hills on the eastern bank of the Caroni River, following these southwards until it struck the great backbone of the Guiana district, the Roraima Mountains of British Guiana, and thence southwards to the Pacaraima Mountains. On the other hand, the claim which had been put forward on behalf of Venezuela by General Guzman Blanco in his Message to the National Congress of the 20th February, 1877, would involve the surrender of a province now inhabited by 40,000 British subjects, and which had been in the uninterrupted possession of Holland and of Great Britain successively for two centuries. The difference between these two claims being so great, it was pointed out to Señor Rojas that, in order to arrive at a satisfactory arrangement, each party must be prepared to make very considerable concessions to the other, and he was assured that, although the claim of Venezuela to the Essequibo River boundary could not, under any circumstances, be entertained, yet that Her Majesty's Government were anxious to meet the Venezuelan Government in a spirit of conciliation, and would be willing, in the event of a renewal of negotiations for the general settlement of boundaries, to waive a portion of what they considered to be their strict rights if Venezuela were really disposed to make corresponding concessions on her part.

The Venezuelan Minister replied in February 1881 by proposing a line which commenced on the coast a mile to the north of the Moroco River, and followed certain parallels and meridians inland, bearing a general resemblance to the proposal made by Lord Aberdeen in 1844.

Señor Rojas' proposal was referred to the Lieutenant-Governor and Attorney-General of British Guiana, who were then in England, and they presented an elaborate Report, showing that in the thirty-five years which had elapsed since Lord Aberdeen's proposed concession natives and others



**No. 123.**

had settled in the territory under the belief that they would enjoy the benefits of British rule, and that it was impossible to assent to any such concessions as Señor Rojas' line would involve. They, however, proposed an alternative line, which involved considerable reductions of that laid down by Sir R. Schomburgk.

This boundary was proposed to the Venezuelan Government by Lord Granville in September 1881, but no answer was ever returned by that Government to the proposal.

While, however, the Venezuelan Minister constantly stated that the matter was under active consideration, it was found that in the same year a Concession had been given by his Government to General Pulgar, which included a large portion of the territory in dispute. This was the third breach by Venezuela of the Agreement of 1850.

Early in 1884 news arrived of a fourth breach by Venezuela of the Agreement of 1850, through two different grants which covered the whole of the territory in dispute, and as this was followed by actual attempts to settle on the disputed territory, the British Government could no longer remain inactive.

Warning was therefore given to the Venezuelan Government and to the concessionnaires, and a British Magistrate was sent into the threatened district to assert the British rights.

Meanwhile, the negotiations for a settlement of the boundary had continued, but the only replies that could be obtained from Señor Guzman Blanco, the Venezuelan Minister, were proposals for arbitration in different forms, all of which Her Majesty's Government were compelled to decline as involving a submission to the Arbitrator of the claim advanced by Venezuela in 1844 to all territory up to the left bank of the Essequibo.

As the progress of settlement by British subjects made a decision of some kind absolutely necessary, and as the Venezuelan Government refused to come to any reasonable arrangement, Her Majesty's Government decided not to repeat the offer of concessions which had not been reciprocated, but to assert their undoubted right to the territory within the Schomburgk line, while still consenting to hold open for further negotiation, and even for arbitration, the unsettled lands between that line and what they considered to be the rightful boundary, as stated in the note to Señor Rojas of the 10th January, 1880.

The execution of this decision was deferred for a time, owing to the return of Señor Guzman Blanco to London, and the desire of Lord Rosebery, then Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs, to settle all pending questions between the two Governments. Mr. Olney is mistaken in supposing that in 1886 "a Treaty was practically agreed upon containing a general arbitration clause, under which the parties might have submitted the boundary dispute to the decision of a third Power, or of several Powers in amity with both." It is true that General Guzman Blanco proposed that the Commercial Treaty between the two countries should contain a clause of

**No. 123.**

this nature, but it had reference to *future* disputes only. Her Majesty's Government have always insisted on a separate discussion of the frontier question, and have considered its settlement to be a necessary preliminary to other arrangements. Lord Rosebery's proposal made in July 1886 was "that the two Governments should agree to consider the territory lying between the boundary-lines respectively proposed in the 8th paragraph of Señor Rojas' note of the 21st February, 1881, and in Lord Granville's note of the 15th September, 1881, as the territory in dispute between the two countries, and that a boundary-line within the limits of this territory should be traced either by an Arbitrator or by a Joint Commission on the basis of an equal division of this territory, due regard being had to natural boundaries."

Señor Guzman Blanco replied declining the proposal, and repeating that arbitration, on the whole claim of Venezuela, was the only method of solution which he could suggest. This pretention is hardly less exorbitant than would be a refusal by Great Britain to agree to an arbitration on the boundary of British Columbia and Alaska, unless the United States would consent to bring into question one-half of the whole area of the latter territory. He shortly afterwards left England, and as there seemed no hope of arriving at an agreement by further discussions, the Schomburgk line was proclaimed as the irreducible boundary of the Colony in October 1886. It must be borne in mind that in taking this step Her Majesty's Government did not assert anything approaching their extreme claim, but confined themselves within the limits of what had as early as 1840 been suggested as a concession out of friendly regard and complaisance.

When Señor Guzman Blanco, having returned to Venezuela, announced his intention of erecting a lighthouse at Point Barima, the British Government expressed their readiness to permit this if he would enter into a formal written agreement that its erection would not be held to prejudice their claim to the site.

In the meanwhile, the Venezuelan Government had sent Commissioners into the territory to the east of the Schomburgk line, and on their return two notes were addressed to the British Minister at Carácas, dated respectively the 26th and 31st January, 1887, demanding the evacuation of the whole territory held by Great Britain from the mouth of the Orinoco to the Pomeroon River, and adding that should this not be done by the 20th February, and should the evacuation not be accompanied by the acceptance of arbitration as the means of deciding the pending frontier question, diplomatic relations would be broken off. In pursuance of this decision the British Representative at Carácas received his passports, and relations were declared by the Venezuelan Government to be suspended on the 21st February, 1887.

In December of that year, as a matter of precaution, and in order that the claims of Great Britain beyond the Schomburgk line might not be

**No. 123.**

considered to have been abandoned, a notice was issued by the Governor of British Guiana formally reserving those claims. No steps have, however, at any time been taken by the British authorities to exercise jurisdiction beyond the Schomburgk line, nor to interfere with the proceedings of the Venezuelans in the territory outside of it, although, pending a settlement of the dispute, Great Britain cannot recognize those proceedings as valid, or as conferring any legitimate title.

The question has remained in this position ever since; the bases on which Her Majesty's Government were prepared to negotiate for its settlement were clearly indicated to the Venezuelan Plenipotentiaries who were successively dispatched to London in 1890, 1891, and 1893 to negotiate for a renewal of diplomatic relations, but as on those occasions the only solutions which the Venezuelan Government professed themselves ready to accept would still have involved the submission to arbitration of the Venezuelan claim to a large portion of the British Colony, no progress has yet been made towards a settlement.

It will be seen from the preceding statement that the Government of Great Britain have from the first held the same view as to the extent of territory which they are entitled to claim as a matter of right. It comprised the coast-line up to the River Amacura, and the whole basin of the Essequibo River and its tributaries. A portion of that claim, however, they have always been willing to waive altogether; in regard to another portion, they have been and continue to be perfectly ready to submit the question of their title to arbitration. As regards the rest, that which lies within the so-called Schomburgk line, they do not consider that the rights of Great Britain are open to question. Even within that line they have, on various occasions, offered to Venezuela considerable concessions as a matter of friendship and conciliation, and for the purpose of securing an amicable settlement of the dispute. If as time has gone on the concessions thus offered diminished in extent, and have now been withdrawn, this has been the necessary consequence of the gradual spread over the country of British settlements, which Her Majesty's Government cannot in justice to the inhabitants offer to surrender to foreign rule, and the justice of such withdrawal is amply borne out by the researches in the national archives of Holland and Spain, which have furnished further and more convincing evidence in support of the British claims.

The discrepancies in the frontiers assigned to the British Colony in various maps published in England, and erroneously assumed to be founded on official information, are easily accounted for by the circumstances which I have mentioned. Her Majesty's Government cannot, of course, be responsible for such publications made without their authority.

Although the negotiations in 1890, 1891, and 1893 did not lead to any result, Her Majesty's Government have not abandoned the hope that they may be resumed with better success, and that when the internal politics of Venezuela are settled on a more durable basis than has lately appeared

**No. 123.**

to be the case, her Government may be enabled to adopt a more moderate and conciliatory course in regard to this question than that of their predecessors. Her Majesty's Government are sincerely desirous of being in friendly relations with Venezuela, and certainly have no design to seize territory that properly belongs to her, or forcibly to extend sovereignty over any portion of her population.

They have, on the contrary, repeatedly expressed their readiness to submit to arbitration the conflicting claims of Great Britain and Venezuela to large tracts of territory which from their auriferous nature are known to be of almost untold value. But they cannot consent to entertain, or to submit to the arbitration of another Power or of foreign jurists, however eminent, claims based on the extravagant pretensions of Spanish officials in the last century, and involving the transfer of large numbers of British subjects, who have for many years enjoyed the settled rule of a British Colony, to a nation of different race and language, whose political system is subject to frequent disturbance, and whose institutions as yet too often afford very inadequate protection to life and property. No issue of this description has ever been involved in the questions which Great Britain and the United States have consented to submit to arbitration, and Her Majesty's Government are convinced that in similar circumstances the Government of the United States would be equally firm in declining to entertain proposals of such a nature.

Your Excellency is authorized to state the substance of this dispatch to Mr. Olney, and to leave him a copy of it if he should desire it.

I am, &c.,  
(Signed) SALISBURY.

**No. 124.**

**Mr. Bayard, Ambassador of the United States at London, to the Marquis of Salisbury, February 3, 1896.**

[Reprinted from Blue Book "United States No. 1 (1896)," No. 18, p. 32.]

My Lord,

I have the honour to inform you that I am instructed by the Secretary of State of the United States to make known to your Lordship that a Commission to investigate and report upon the true divisional line between the Republic of Venezuela and British Guiana has, under the authority of the Congress, been appointed by the President of the United States, which Commission is now in session at Washington, and has chosen Mr. Justice Brewer, of the Supreme Court of the United States, as its President.

Through its President, this Commission has suggested to the Secretary of State, that, being distinctly and in no view an arbitral Tribunal, but having its duty limited to a diligent and careful ascertainment of the facts touching the territory referred to and in dispute for the information of the President, it would be grateful for such assistance to that end as could be

**No. 124.**

obtained by the friendly co-operation and aid of the Governments of Great Britain and Venezuela.

Wherefore I beg leave to make application to your Lordship that, if entirely consistent with your sense of international propriety, the Commission may be furnished with such documentary proof, historical narrative, unpublished archives, or other evidence as may be within the power of Her Majesty's Government, as well as for any facilities which may conveniently be extended to assist the Commission in the purposes of its institution.

In communicating these wishes of the Commission to the Secretary of State, its President states:

"It is scarcely necessary to say that if either Great Britain or Venezuela should deem it proper to designate an Agent or Attorney, whose duty it would be to see that no such proofs were omitted or overlooked, the Commission would be grateful for such evidence of good-will, and for the valuable results which would be likely to follow therefrom. Either party making a favourable response to the wish so expressed by the President of the Commission would of course be considered only as *amicus curiæ*, and to throw light upon difficult and complex questions of fact."

The purposes of the investigation proposed by the Commission are certainly hostile to none—nor can it be of advantage to any that the effort to procure the desired information should fail of its purpose—the sole concern of the United States being the peaceful solution of the controversy between two friendly Powers.

I am, &c.,  
(Signed) T. F. BAYARD.

**No. 125.**

**The Marquis of Salisbury to Mr. Bayard, Ambassador of the United States at London, February 7, 1896.**

[Reprinted from Blue Book "United States No. 1 (1896)," No. 19, p. 33.]

Your Excellency,

I have the honour to acknowledge your Excellency's letter of the 3rd instant.

Any information which is at the command of Her Majesty's Government upon any subject of inquiry that is occupying the attention of the Government of the United States will be readily placed at the disposal of the President.

Her Majesty's Government are at present collecting the documents which refer to the boundary questions that have for some years been discussed between Great Britain and Venezuela, in order that they may be

**No. 125.**

presented to Parliament. As soon as the collection is complete, and ready for press, Her Majesty's Government will have great pleasure in forwarding advance copies to your Excellency.

I have, &c.,  
(Signed) SALISBURY.

**No. 126.**

Mr. Olney, Secretary of State of the United States, to Mr. Bayard, Ambassador of the United States at London, May 8, 1896.

No. 1118.]

SIR: I have received from the Commission appointed "to investigate and report upon the true divisional line between the Republic of Venezuela and British Guiana" a communication, a copy of which is hereto annexed.

I fully appreciate the right of the British Government to ignore the request of the Commission for such references to documents as will enable it to verify the statements of the British Blue Book. It will be quite impossible, I think, for this Government to find any fault if the request is not acceded to. Yet, bearing in mind the manner in which the present effort of the United States to settle this long-standing boundary question is now regarded by the British Government—that it has been characterized in the highest official quarter as an endeavor to ascertain the truth in coöperation with Her Majesty's Government—I do not feel at liberty not to bring the request of the Commission to the immediate notice of that Government. The object of the commission in such request is unmistakably apparent upon the very face of its communication. While setting on foot an original and independent investigation of the source of knowledge, it desires such references to authorities cited as will at once facilitate its work and at the same time make it certain that nothing confirmatory of the British contention is by any inadvertence overlooked.

You will communicate this despatch, with its exhibit, to Lord Salisbury by reading the same to him at the first opportunity and leaving a copy, should he so desire—a copy being herewith enclosed for that purpose.

I am, etc.,

RICHARD OLNEY.

[Enclosure in No. 1118.]

Mr. Justice Brewer to Mr. Olney.

WASHINGTON, D. C., May 6, 1896.

SIR: I beg to call your attention to the following situation:

A vital question before the Commission is whether there was ever any actual Dutch settlement west of the Pomeroon and especially at or near Barima Point.

**No. 126.**

The claim is broadly made in the British Blue Book, "that by 1648 the Dutch settlements in Guiana extended along the coast the whole way from the River Maroni to the Barima." The corollary from this, of course, is that the treaty of Munster confirmed the title of the Dutch to this entire territory—a corollary that is sought to be enforced by the claim of subsequent, if not continued, occupation.

In support of this contention, it is stated in the Blue Book that "in 1684 the Dutch commander of Essequibo recommended that a strong little post should be established at Barima in place of the small watchhouse that already existed there." It is again stated that "in the same year (1757) the Spanish commandant on the Orinoco complained to the Dutch authorities of disorders at Barima, showing that the Dutch then had jurisdiction there." And again, that "in the same year (1764) the Dutch West India Company, in a memorial to the States-General, declared that the colony of Essequibo comprised that district of the northeast coast of South America which lies between the Spanish colony of Orinoco and the Dutch colony of Berbice, and was intersected not only by the chief river Essequibo, but also by various small rivers, as the Barima, Waini, Maroco, Pomeroon, and Demerera, wherefore also it bore the name of the colony of Essequibo and dependent rivers "

As authority for these statements, reference is simply made in a general way to The Hague records; no documents nor extracts from documents are given.

These general statements upon which the British Government apparently bases its right to Point Barima find no recognition, so far as we have yet ascertained, in the works of standard historians of the colony, either English or Dutch. In fact, the most eminent of these historians, Gen. P. M. Netscher, in summing up the whole controversy in an article published during the present year in the *Tijdspiegel*, seems to have found nothing in the Dutch archives to support the British contention.

Whether the Dutch really occupied Point Barima in 1648 or not, it would seem from a quotation given by General Netscher, taken from the archives of the Zeeland Chamber, that by 1680 at the latest such occupation, if it ever existed, had ceased and that the point had been definitely abandoned.

The latest of the English historians of the colony, Mr. Rodway, goes so far as to seem to put into the mouth of the Dutch West India Company not merely a refusal to establish a post at Barima Point, but the significant reply that "the Orinoco was too far away to be safe; if the Dutchmen went there, the Spaniards might want to go to Essequibo" (Rodway's *History of British Guiana*, vol. 1, p. 36). In view of the above seeming contradictions between the statements of the British Government and those of standard historians, it seems to us of the utmost importance to ascertain the precise wording and purport of the passages relied on by the authors of the Blue Book, and to ourselves have a thorough examination made of the

**No. 126.**

Dutch archives. With this end in view, we have concluded to send Prof. George L. Burr to Holland to make such an examination. It would assist him materially if the British Government would furnish him with a reference to the documents upon which the statements of the Blue Book are based, and it has occurred to us that there would be no impropriety in your communicating a request through our ambassador at London to furnish such information. Professor Burr's address will be care of the United States minister at The Hague.

I remain, etc.,

DAVID J. BREWER,  
*President.*

**No. 127.**

**Mr. Bayard, Ambassador of the United States at London, to The Marquis of Salisbury, May 16, 1896.**

MY LORD: On Wednesday next I propose, with Your Lordship's permission, to pay my respects to you at the Foreign Office, and will then bring with me, for Your Lordship's information, an instruction this day received by me from the Secretary of State of the United States, accompanied by a copy of a communication to him from the Commission appointed to investigate and report upon the true divisional line between British Guiana and the Republic of Venezuela, the object of which, as explained therein, is to obtain references to certain authoritative documents bearing upon the statements of the Blue Book laid before Parliament in March last (Venezuela No. 1, 1896), and which will facilitate the duties with which the Commission has been charged, in relation to which I had the honor to address Your Lordship on the 3d of February last and to receive a courteous and favorable reply, for which I duly returned expressions of the gratification felt thereupon by my Government.

I have, etc.,

T. F. BAYARD.

**No. 128.**

**The Marquis of Salisbury to Mr. Bayard, Ambassador of the United States at London, May 30, 1896.**

YOUR EXCELLENCY: Her Majesty's Government have given immediate attention to the despatch from Mr. Olney which you left with me on the 19th instant, transmitting copy of a letter from the Commission appointed to investigate and report upon the true divisional line between the Republic of Venezuela and British Guiana. The letter contains a request that the Commission may be furnished with particulars of certain documents in The Hague archives referred to in the Blue Book relating to the question, which was presented to Parliament in March last.



**No. 128.**

The Commission appointed by the President of the United States, the objects of which were described in detail by Your Excellency in your note of the 3d of February, received from Her Majesty's Government, through Your Excellency, the information which had, at that time, been collected for presentation to Parliament.

Her Majesty's Government will shortly be in a position to present further papers in elucidation of the subject, and I will have great pleasure in forwarding to you advanced copies as soon as they are printed. I believe that you will find in them not only the particular Hague records to which attention is directed in Mr. Justice Brewer's letter, but all the other records of a similar character referred to in the British preliminary statement.

If, on the examination of the forthcoming Blue Book, it shall appear that there are any other documents in regard to which information is desired, Her Majesty's Government will be glad to render any assistance in their power towards furnishing such information.

Her Majesty's Government are glad to learn that Professor Burr is about to make an examination of the archives at The Hague, and will be happy to place at his disposal all the information they can give, with a view to assisting his researches.

I enclose a memorandum by Her Majesty's Attorney-General, who is advising Her Majesty's Government in this question, containing some further information and observations on the points raised in Mr. Justice Brewer's letter.

I have, etc.,

SALISBURY.

---

[Enclosure.]

*Memorandum.* The omission to print The Hague records in the appendix to the Blue Book Venezuela No. 1, of 1896, was due to pressure of time and to the mass of documents which had to be examined and translated.

The three documents to which reference is made in Mr. Justice Brewer's letter of the 6th of May, 1896, enclosed in Mr. Olney's despatch of the 8th of May, viz:

1. The document in the "Hague records" referred to in the "preliminary statement" at page 9 of the above-mentioned Blue Book, under date 1684, respecting the establishment of a post at Barima.

2. The document referred to at page 12, under date 1757, reporting complaints by the Spanish commandant to the Dutch authorities as to disorders at Barima; and

3. The memorial referred to at page 13, under date 1764—

**No. 128.**

will all be found printed in the appendix to the Blue Book which is now in course of preparation and which will shortly be issued and placed at the disposal of the United States Government.

All the other Hague records referred to or cited in the preliminary statement will also be printed in the same Blue Book, and they will be accompanied by a large number of other Dutch and Spanish documents corroborating and confirming the facts brought forward in the preliminary statement.

As regards the observation made in Mr. Justice Brewer's letter that the claim that Dutch Guiana extended to Point Barima finds no recognition, as far as the Commission have yet ascertained, in the works of the standard historians of the colony, either English or Dutch, this is not the place for an exhaustive examination of the views of historians. But upon this particular point, to which attention is called, the opinions of two modern historians quoted in the letter can scarcely be regarded as sufficient to rebut the facts advanced in the British statement, supported by the documents already or now about to be published and confirmed by historians who wrote at far earlier dates, and with full opportunity of knowing the real circumstances.

The statement quoted from the work of General Netscher that there is nothing in the Dutch archives to support the British contention must have been made with an imperfect knowledge of those documents. It will be found on examination that the original Dutch archives undoubtedly corroborate the British contention. The fact that at various dates, at the end of the sixteenth and beginning of the seventeenth centuries, the Dutch had occupied the territory in the neighborhood of Barima is completely established by the contemporary documents, both Dutch and Spanish.

Whether Barima was abandoned by the Dutch is a question which can only be satisfactorily dealt with upon a review of the whole history of the Dutch proceedings in regard to that place. In the opinion of Her Majesty's Government, there is certainly no sufficient evidence to warrant the statement that either the Dutch or the British abandoned it, still less that it was ever occupied by the Spaniards. As regards the citation from Mr. Rodway's history, it is sufficient to refer to Mr. Rodway's own summary of the question of boundary at page 168 of the third volume. He there says:

“Of all the native tribes in tropical America, the Caribs were the most powerful. Notwithstanding the reports of its riches, which led to a number of expeditions in search of the golden city of Manoa d'Eldorado, Spain never obtained a footing in Guiana. On every occasion when an attempt was made, the intruders were driven out, so that for nearly a century the country was preserved intact. Then came the first Dutch traders, who proclaimed themselves enemies to Spain and friends of the

**No. 128.**

Caribs, with the result that small settlements were permitted in several places. Then, as the trade became of more importance, posts were established in the interior, and the whole country, from the Essequibo to the Orinoco, was opened to the Dutchman, though effectually closed to the Spaniard. It may be safely stated that if such a condition of things existed to-day in any part of Africa, the country would be considered as virtually belonging to the trading nation. By and by, as the trading stations became colonies, the Commandeurs Essequibo became arbitrators in disputes among the native tribes, and later again the Indians of the northwest, from the rivers Barima to the Pomeroon, and of the interior received annual presents in consideration of assistance in capturing runaway slaves and putting down disturbances. They were therefore in the position of protected native races, and it may be confidently affirmed that, although a Spaniard could not at that time safely travel in any part of Guiana, the Dutch, on the other hand, was free of the whole country.

“ We have shown in former chapters that Spain disputed the right of Essequibo to hunt slaves at the mouth of the Orinoco, but we do not find that any serious quarrel resulted. About the middle of the seventeenth century there was a Dutch outpost at the mouth of the Barima, where a slave market of the Caribs was held. It was abandoned in the year 1680, probably because it did not pay, but certainly not from fear of the Spaniards; in fact, it was intimately connected with the Pomeroon colony, and when that failed the Barima post was necessarily given up.”

The following citation from leading works on the subject of Guiana (to which others might be added) is sufficient to show that the testimony of standard historians and writers corroborates the British view of the facts.

Hartsinck, in his *Beschrijving van Guiana*, published at Amsterdam in 1770 (volume 1, p. 146), states:

“ As we have before mentioned, Guyana may be now conveniently divided into four parts, as regards the present possessions established there by the European powers, viz.:

“ I. Into Spanish Guyana, lying on both sides of the banks of the River Orinoco, extending westward as far as the Rio Negro and to the south as far as the River Barima, which is situated in  $8^{\circ} 5'$  north latitude and discharges itself into the mouth of the Orinoco, or, according to others, stretching to the east of the River Waimy, or Wainy, about 5 miles east of the Orinoco, the which serves as the southern boundary of Spanish and Dutch Guyana.

“ II. Into Dutch Guyana, extending from Spanish as far as French Guyana; but as the boundary line between Dutch and French Guyana, it is a matter of dispute between the Dutch and the French whether the same should commence from the River Sinamari, lying about  $5^{\circ} 32'$ , or from the River Marowine, in about  $5^{\circ} 50'$ , the which dispute we shall consider more at length under the head of Surinam.”

At page 257 of the same volume he states:

**No. 128.**

"Some bound Dutch Guiana on the west by the River Barima, which lies in  $8^{\circ} 5'$  north latitude and discharges itself into the mouth of the Orinoco; others consider it as bounded on the west by the River Wayne, lying about 4 miles east of the Orinoco.

"The first rivers found in Dutch Guyana as we proceed (in a southeasterly direction) from the Orinoco are the Barima, about 1 mile wide, where we (the Dutch) formerly had a fort; 3 miles further, the Amacura, of the same width, and which, as well as the before-mentioned one, discharges itself into the Orinoco; full 3 miles to the eastward, the Moco Moco; not 2 miles further, the River Waine, three-fourths of a mile wide, but shallow."

Rolt, in his *History of South America*, published in London, 1756 (p. 500), writes:

"1. Dutch Guiana extends along the coast, from the mouth of the River Oroonoko, in  $9^{\circ}$  of north latitude, to the River Maroni, where the English formerly built a little fort, in  $6^{\circ} 20'$  of north latitude."

Pestal, in his *Commentarii de Republica Batava* (published at Leyden, 1795), vol. 1, p. 177, says:

"From Spanish Guiana the frontier of Dutch Guiana, looking southward, is divided by the River Barima, which flows into the Orinoco, or, according to other opinions, by the more easterly River Wainy."

Baron Alexander de Humboldt, in his *Personal Narrative of Travels to the Equinoctial Regions of the New Continent during the years 1799-1804*, states as follows (English edition published in London, 1826, vol. 6, p. 162):

"The limits of Spanish Guayana on the north and west are, first, the Oroonoko from Cape Barima to San Fernando de Atababo, and then a line stretching from north to south from San Fernando towards a point 15 leagues west of the little fort of San Carlos. The line crosses the Rio Negro a little above Maroa. The northeast frontier, that of the English Guyana, merits the greatest attention on account of the political importance of the mouths of the Oroonoko, which I have discussed in the twenty-fourth chapter of this work. The sugar and cotton plantations had already reached beyond the Rio Pomaroun under the Dutch Government; they extend farther than the mouth of the little River Moroco, where a military fort is established. (See the very interesting map of the colonies of Esse-qui-bo and Demarara, published by Maj. F. de Bouchenroeder in 1798.) The Dutch, far from recognizing the River Pomaroun, or the Moroco, as the limit of their territory, placed the boundary at Rio Barima, consequently near the mouth of the Oroonoko itself; whence they draw a line of demarkation from north northwest to south southeast towards Cuyuni. They had even taken military occupation of the eastern bank of the small Rio Barima before the English in 1666 had destroyed the forts of New Zealand and New Meddleburgh, on the right bank of Pomaroun. Those forts and that of Kyk-over-al (look everywhere around), at the confluence of

**No. 128.**

the Cuyuni, Masaruni, and Essequibo, have not been reestablished. Persons who had been on the spot assured me, during my stay at Angostura, that the country west of Pomaroun, of which the possession will one day be contested by England and the Republic of Colombia, is marshy, but exceedingly fertile."

*May 28, 1896.*

**No. 129.**

**Heads of proposed treaty between Venezuela and Great Britain for settlement of Venezuela boundary question as agreed upon between Great Britain and the United States.**

[Reprinted from UNITED STATES, *Department of State*. Papers relating to the Foreign Relations, etc. Transmitted to Congress, Dec. 7, 1896, Washington, 1897, pp. 254-255.]

## I.

An arbitral tribunal shall be immediately appointed to determine the boundary line between the colony of British Guiana and the Republic of Venezuela.

## II.

The tribunal shall consist of two members nominated by the judges of the Supreme Court of the United States, and two members nominated by the judges of the British Supreme Court of Justice, and of a fifth juror selected by the four persons so nominated, or, in the event of their failure to agree within three months from the time of their nomination, selected by His Majesty the King of Sweden and Norway.

The person so selected shall be president of the tribunal.

The persons nominated by the judges of the Supreme Court of the United States and of the British Supreme Court of Justice, respectively, may be judges of either of said courts.

## III.

The tribunal shall investigate and ascertain the extent of the territories belonging to, or that might lawfully be claimed by the United Netherlands or by the Kingdom of Spain, respectively, at the time of the acquisition by Great Britain of the colony of British Guiana, and shall determine the boundary line between the colony of British Guiana and the Republic of Venezuela.

## IV.

In deciding the matters submitted the arbitrators shall ascertain all the facts which they deem necessary to a decision of the controversy, and shall be governed by the following rules, which are agreed upon by the high contracting parties as rules to be taken as applicable to the case, and by such principles of international law not inconsistent therewith as the arbitrators shall determine to be applicable to the case.

**No. 129.****RULES.**

(a.) Adverse holding or prescription during a period of fifty years shall make a good title. The arbitrators may deem exclusive political control of a district, as well as actual settlement thereof, sufficient to constitute adverse holding or to make title by prescription.

(b.) The arbitrators may recognize and give effect to rights and claims resting on any other ground whatever, valid according to international law, and on any principles of international law which the arbitrators may deem to be applicable to the case, and which are not in contravention of the foregoing rule.

(c.) In determining the boundary line, if territory of one party be found by the tribunal to have been at the date of this treaty in the occupation of the subjects or citizens of the other party, such effect shall be given to such occupation as reason, justice, the principles of international law, and the equities of the case shall, in the opinion of the tribunal require.

**RICHARD OLNEY,  
JULIAN PAUNCEFOTE.**

November, 12, 1896.

APPENDIX

PART 6

MISCELLANEOUS DOCUMENTS





**No. 130.**

**West India Company (Zeeland Chamber) to Director-General and Council in Essequibo, June 20, 1777, directing that, for security of colony, friendship with Indians be cultivated.**

[Translated from a Spanish translation of the original in archives at Georgetown, Demerara.]

We confirm by these presents the orders already given several times to cultivate friendly feelings with the Indians, which same may be of great service in recovering fugitive slaves, and as it appears to the Representative and Directors to be most necessary to attract the Indians and maintain friendly feelings in them that they may be always at the service of the Government, upon which the security of both colonies so greatly depends, it has been deemed necessary to order this by these presents to you very earnestly.

We believe it to be the more necessary to repeat these orders, in that they have been so badly fulfilled that even the staffs with silver knobs, which were sent to be presented to the chiefs of the Indians, have not been distributed to them, notwithstanding the express orders of the Representative and Directors, as seen in the inventory corresponding to the year 1776, which has been sent to us.

Besides this, the Representative and Directors are informed that the Indian chiefs never, or at least rarely, present themselves because they are not invited to do so, this being, nevertheless, very necessary, and that for this reason the trifles (or toys) sent, remain for the greater part in the shops (according to the inventory sent), while it would be expedient to present, from time to time, these trifles to the Indian chiefs in order to stimulate them to present themselves.

**No. 131.**

**Extract from Treaty of Peace and Recognition between Venezuela and Spain, signed at Madrid, March 30, 1845.**

[Translated from copy in *Coleccion de Tratados Públicos de Venezuela*, fol., Caracas, 1884, p. 75.]

ART. 1ST. Her Catholic Majesty making use of the powers invested in her by decree of the General Cortes of the Kingdom, dated December 4, 1836, renounces on her behalf and on behalf of her heirs and successors, the sovereignty, rights and titles belonging to her over the American territory, known under the old name of Captain-Generalcy of Venezuela, now the Republic of Venezuela.

ART. 2ND. By virtue of said renunciation and cession, Her Catholic Majesty recognizes the Republic of Venezuela as a free, sovereign, and independent Nation, consisting of the provinces and territories specified in its constitution and other subsequent laws, viz.: Margarita, Guayana, Cumaná, Barcelona, Caracas, Carabobo, Barquisemeto, Barinas, Apure, Merida, Trujillo, Coro, and Maracaibo, and any other territories or islands that may belong to said Republic.

**No. 132.****Treaty as to Boundaries and River Navigation, between Venezuela and Brazil, signed at Caracas, May 5, 1859.**

[Translated from copy in *Coleccion de Tratados Públicos de Venezuela*, fol., Caracas, 1884, pp. 95-98.]

The Republic of Venezuela and His Majesty the Emperor of Brazil, recognizing the necessity of reaching a final agreement as to the boundaries of their respective territories, in order to firmly establish that harmony happily existing between both countries, and remove any cause for discord; and wishing at the same time to facilitate and promote, between each other, freedom of communication over the common frontier and through the rivers on the portion belonging to each, have agreed to make a treaty for said purpose, and have appointed as their representatives, viz:

His Excellency the President of the Republic of Venezuela, Senor Licenciado Luis Sanojo, etc., etc., etc.

And His Majesty the Emperor of Brazil, Señor Felipe José Pereira Leal, Official of the Order of the Rose, Knight of the Orders of Christ and St. Benedict of Aviz and of the Imperial Order of the Southern Cross, His Keeper of the Wardrobe, and Charge d'Affaires in the Republics of Venezuela, New Granada and Equador, etc., etc., etc.

Who, after having exchanged their respective powers, which were found in good and due form, have agreed to the following articles:

ART. 1. There shall be perfect, firm and sincere friendship between the Republic of Venezuela and its citizens, on the one part, and His Majesty, the Emperor of Brazil and his successors and subjects, on the other, in all their respective possessions and territories.

ART. 2. The Republic of Venezuela and His Majesty, the Emperor of Brazil, declare and define the dividing line in the following manner:

1st. The dividing line to begin at the headwaters of the river Memachi and, continuing along the highest part of the ground, to pass along the headwaters of the Aquio, of the Tomo, and of the Guainia and Iquiare or Issana, so that all the waters running to the Aquio and Tomo shall belong to Venezuela, and those running into the Guainia, Xié and Issana, to Brazil; and to cross the Rio Negro, opposite the island of San José, lying near the Cucui rock.

2nd. From the island of San José, to continue in a straight line, cutting the Maturaca channel in the middle, or at the point agreed upon by the delimiting Commissioners and that may conveniently divide said channel; and thence passing along the Cupi, Imeri, Guai and Urucusiro hills, to cross the road which unites by land the Castano and Marari rivers, and along the Tapirapécó ridge of mountains, follow the summits of the Parima range of mountains, so that the waters running to the Padaviri, Marari and Cababuri, shall belong to Brazil, and those running to the Turuaca or Idapa or Xiaba to Venezuela.

**No. 132.**

3rd. To follow along the Parima ridge up to the angle formed by the latter with the Pacaramia ridge, so that all the waters running into the Rio Blanco shall belong to Brazil, and those running into the Orinoco, to Venezuela; the line to continue along the highest points of aforesaid Pacaramia ridge, so that the waters running into the Rio Blanco shall, as has been said, belong to Brazil, and those running into the Essequibo, Cuyuni and Caroni to Venezuela as far as the territory of both States may extend on their eastern side.

ART. 3. After the ratification of the present treaty, the two high contracting Powers shall each appoint a Commissioner, who, by common consent and within the shortest term practicable, shall proceed to the demarcation of the line at the points where it is necessary, in conformity with the above stipulations.

ART. 4. If during the demarcation, grave doubts should arise, resulting from a want of exactness in the indications of the present treaty; in the absence of correct maps, and of thorough explorations, said doubts shall be passed upon amicably by both Governments, to which same shall be submitted by the Commissioners, and the finding or decision resulting therefrom shall be considered as an interpretation of, or addition to, said treaty, it being understood that if such doubts should occur on one point, this shall not prevent the demarcation from continuing as to the other points indicated in the treaty.

ART. 5. If, for the purpose of fixing at any point, limits more natural or convenient to either nation, an exchange of territories should be deemed advantageous, this may be done, by opening new negotiations therefor, the demarcation, however, to be proceeded with, as if no such change was to be affected.

ART. 6. His Majesty, the Emperor of Brazil, declares that, while treating with the Republic of Venezuela in relation to the territory situated to the westward of Rio Negro, and bathed by the waters of rivers Tomo and Aquio, whose ownership is claimed by the Republic of Venezuela, but which has already been claimed by Nueva Granada, it is not his intention to prejudice any title that the latter Republic may prove to said territory.

ART. 7. The Republic of Venezuela and his Majesty, the Emperor of Brazil, agree in declaring free the communications between their States over the common frontier and that the passage of persons with their baggage over said frontier, be exempt from all national or municipal tax, said persons and their baggage being subject only to such police and fiscal regulations as each Government may establish in its own territory.

ART. 8. The Republic of Venezuela agrees to allow duly registered Brazilian vessels to pass from Brazil to Venezuela and *vice versa*, through the rivers Negro or Guainia, in the portion belonging to it, Casiquiare

**No. 132.**

and Orinoco, provided they observe the fiscal and police regulations established by the superior authorities of Venezuela.

In reciprocity thereof, and by way of compensation, His Majesty, the Emperor of Brazil, agrees to allow Venezuelan vessels, duly registered, freely to cross from Venezuela to Brazil, and *vice versa*, through the rivers Negro or Guainia, and the Amazon, in the portion exclusively belonging to him, and to go out to the ocean and *vice versa*, provided they observe the fiscal and police regulations established by the competent Brazilian superior authorities.

It being understood and declared that in said navigation is not included that from port to port of the same nation, or of coast navigation along rivers, which the High Contracting Parties reserve for their respective citizens and subjects.

ART. 9. The regulations established by the High Contracting Parties must be the most favorable to navigation and trade between both countries.

Each of the States shall adopt on that portion of the rivers corresponding to it, in as far as it be possible, and by mutual consent, a uniform system of river police; and shall also strive to attend to the convenience of said uniformity as regards the fiscal system and method it may establish in the ports of entry.

ART. 10. No Brazilian vessel can be considered as having the conditions requisite to be regularly registered for the aforesaid navigation, in the waters of Venezuela, if her owner and captain should not be subjects of the Empire of Brazil.

No Venezuelan vessel can be considered as having the conditions requisite to be regularly registered for the aforesaid navigation in the waters of Brazil if her owner and captain should not be citizens of the Republic of Venezuela.

In the crew of the vessels of each of the High Contracting Parties there must be at least one-third Venezuelans or Brazilians, or two-thirds riparian foreigners, and at all events the captain must belong to the nation whose flag is borne by the vessel.

ART. 11. The vessels referred to in the preceding article can trade in such ports of Venezuela or Brazil as are or may hereafter be opened for the purpose by the respective governments.

If the arrival at said ports should be caused by main force, and the vessel should leave with the cargo she brought, no dues shall be charged for entry, stay or clearance.

ART. 12. Each one of the two governments shall designate the places, besides the ports of entry, wherein vessels, whatever their destination, may communicate with the shore, either directly or by means of boats, in order to repair damages, get supplies of fuel or other needed objects, and in order

**No. 132.**

that these and the ones generally called "*de boca abierta*," or without waist (?), not carrying goods for trading purposes, but only passengers, may stop and pass the night.

At these places the local authorities, although the vessel may proceed in direct transit, shall demand the exhibition of the list of her crew and passengers, and of the manifest of her cargo, viséing all or some of these documents free of charge.

The passengers shall not be allowed to land there without having first obtained the consent of the corresponding authority, to whom, for the purpose, they shall exhibit their passports to be examined by same.

ART. 13. Both governments shall reciprocally give notice of the places destined by them for the communications provided for in the preceding article; and should either deem it advisable to make some change therein, it shall notify the other with the necessary anticipation.

ART. 14. All communication with land, not authorized, or at places not designated, except in the cases of main force, shall be punished by a fine, in addition to the other penalties incurred by the offenders, according to the laws of the country where the offense was committed.

ART. 15. The discharge of part or all of her cargo, outside the ports of entry, shall be permitted to any vessel only when, by reason of distress, or other extraordinary circumstance, she should be unable to continue her voyage. provided her captain (where this may be possible) shall previously apply to the officers of the nearest fiscal station, or in defect thereof, to any other local authority, and he shall submit to such measures as these officers or authorities may judge necessary, to prevent any clandestine importation.

The measures that may have been taken by the captain, of his own accord, before notifying said officers or local authority, shall be justifiable if he should show that they were indispensable for the safety of his vessel or of her cargo.

The goods thus discharged, if re-exported on the same vessel or on smaller ones, shall pay no duties whatever.

ART. 16. All transshipment made without previous authorization, or without the formalities prescribed in the preceding article, is subject to fine, besides the penalties imposed by the laws of the country upon those committing the crime of contraband.

ART. 17. If by reason of violation of the police and fiscal measures concerning free river transit, some seizure of merchandise, vessel or small craft should be effected, said seizure shall be removed at once, upon presentation of a bond or guarantee sufficient to cover the value of the objects seized.

If the violation should have attached no penalty other than a fine, the

**No. 132.**

offender, on presentation of the same guarantee, may proceed on his voyage.

ART. 18. In cases of shipwreck or any other misfortune, the local authorities shall lend all the assistance within their means, both for saving the lives, vessel and cargo, and for gathering and keeping what has been saved.

ART. 19. If the captain or owner of the cargo, or the one representing him, should wish to convey same from said place, directly to the port of its destination, or to any other, he may do so without paying any dues, except only the charges for salvage.

ART. 20. If the captain of the vessel, or owner of the merchandise, or the person representing him should not be present to meet the charges for salvage, these shall be paid by the local authority, and made good by the owner or his agent; or by the merchandise, whereof shall be sold at public auction, according to the laws of each of the countries, what may be required for this object, and for the payment of the corresponding duties. As for the remaining merchandise, it shall be dealt with according to the laws of each country, relating to cases of shipwrecks in territorial waters.

ART. 21. Each State can establish a duty destined toward the expenses of lighthouses, signal buoys and any other assistance afforded by it to navigation; but said duty shall be collected only on vessels or boats going directly to its ports, or touching at them (except in cases of *force majeure*) should they load or discharge there.

Beyond this duty, river navigation shall neither directly nor indirectly be burdened by any other impost whatsoever.

ART. 22. Both High Contracting Parties, realizing how expensive are the undertakings of steam navigation, and that at the outset no Venezuelan or Brazilian Company established for steam navigation over the fluvial highways could bring any profit;

They reciprocally engage to promote same, in the manner and through the means to be subsequently stipulated by especial conventions and agreements.

ART. 23. All the stipulations of this treaty, not referring to boundaries, shall remain in force during the period of ten years, to count from the date of the exchange of the respective ratifications; after which they shall continue to subsist until one of the High Contracting Parties shall notify the other of its desire to have them withdrawn, and they shall cease twelve months after the date of said notification.

ART. 24. The present treaty shall be ratified by His Excellency the President of the Republic of Venezuela or by the person in charge of the executive power thereof, and by His Majesty, the Emperor of Brazil; and

**No. 132.**

the ratifications thereof shall be exchanged at Caracas or at Rio Janeiro within the term of one year from the date of its approval by the Venezuelan Congress, or before, should it be possible.

In witness whereof, we the undersigned Plenipotentiaries of His Excellency the President of the Republic of Venezuela, and of His Majesty, the Emperor of Brazil, by virtue of our full powers, do hereby sign the present treaty, affixing thereto our respective seals.

Done in the City of Caracas, Capital of the Republic of Venezuela, on the 5th day of May in the year of our Lord 1859.

LUIS SANOJO.

FELIPE JOSÉ PEREIRA LEAL.

**No. 133.**

Extract from letter from Professor G. L. Burr to S. Mallet-Prevost, September 14, 1896, as to Schomburgk's Physical Map and the Curumu Post.

[Printed from copy of the original.]

I have purposely held this letter from day to day, that I might return once more fresh to my inspection of these maps, and satisfy myself as to some suspicion or conjecture which had arisen in my mind since the day before. I have this morning again studied most carefully, with glass and with naked eye, the final map—the so-called "Physical Map" ("British Guiana No. 422")—of Schomburgk, of 1844. There is surely on it no suggestion of boundary anywhere and I cannot believe there ever has been. No trace or suggestion of erasure can be found by the most careful study in all lights.

I note, however, this morning something else that interests me upon this map. At the mouth of the Curumu, the Hebert map, following the first Schomburgk map of 1841, represents just across the Cuyuni, a fort, describing it as the "*Cariya*. Site of the former Spanish *Destacement de Cuyuni*." This the British Blue Book ("Venezuela No. 5") declares a mere quotation from Humboldt, and since proven an error. This final Schomburgk map of 1844 also places this post on the south bank of the Cuyuni, but a mile or two below the point opposite the mouth of the Curumu, and describes it only as "*Cadiva*" ("in Rns.")—which clearly means "in ruins." I shall beg to be allowed to photograph this map. The change from "*Cariya*" to "*Cadiva*" as well as the "in rns." surely implies added knowledge: he has since been at the spot on his way from Roraima. It is now clear where the Leipzig and the Stanford maps get their wording: but they are not as clear as to the place. Schomburgk's map even pictures these ruins conventionally thus: ( - - - )

Most truly yours,

GEORGE L. BURR.

**No. 134.**

**Note respecting a charter proposed for Essequibo and Demerara by G. A. W. Ruysch, June 22, 1803; by Prof. G. L. Burr.**

[Reprinted from U. S. Commission Report, Vol. 2, p. 657, foot note.]

Under date of June 21, 1803, one reads in the minutes of the Council of the American Colonies: "The President stated to the meeting that he had received from a former member of this Council, G. A. W. Ruysch, a charter drafted by him for the agricultural colonies of the State, with the request that if he saw fit he would present it to the Council, that the Council might make at its convenience such use of it as it should deem proper." The charter was referred to the Committee on Policy, and is never heard of again. The document itself bears a marginal memorandum, stating that it was submitted to the Council of the Colonies on June 22, 1803. Ruysch, who on July 8, 1802, had been granted leave of absence because of ill health, had resigned from the Council on April 1, 1803.

**No. 135.**

**J. Calcaño Mathieu, Venezuelan Minister of Foreign Affairs, to José Andrade, Venezuelan Minister in Washington, as to the Venezuelan, Brazilian and Guianan frontier; May 23, 1898.**

[Printed from translation of certified copy of the original.]

MINISTRY OF FOREIGN RELATIONS }  
 Department of Foreign Public Law. }  
 No. 761. }

CARACAS, May 23, 1898.

MR. MINISTER:

In the Brief recently presented by Venezuela, in the question of her boundaries with British Guiana, this frontier has been claimed: "The boundary line between the United States of Venezuela and the Colony of British Guiana, begins at the mouth of the Essequibo river; thence runs southward along the waterway of said river to its union with the Cuyuni and Mazaruni rivers; thence around the island of Kykoveral, leaving it on the east; thence along the waterway of said Essequibo river to the line separating the territory of the United States of Venezuela from the territory of the United States of Brazil."

The boundary with Brazil, agreed upon in the treaty of May 5, 1859, should be along the summit of the Parima ridge of mountains to the angle formed by the latter with the Pacaraima ridge, continuing along its highest points, so that the waters that run into the river Branco belong to Brazil, and to Venezuela those falling into the Essequibo, Cuyuni and



**No. 135.**

Caroni rivers, as far as where the territories of both States extend on their eastern side.

Up to the present, only the boundary line from the principal head of the Menachi to the Cupi hill has been fixed upon the ground by the Commissioners of both parties who met in 1880. The rest of the line has not been set by mutual agreement, but only by the Brazilian Commissioners. His work having been presented to Venezuela for her acceptance, she has withheld it, because she holds that the concurrence of her representatives is indispensable, natural and rightful.

The question now is to find out how the boundary proposed in the Brief of Venezuela can be connected with the frontier of the latter and Brazil. The wording made use of in the Agreement wherein it is fixed, is too vague, namely: "As far as where the territories of both States extend on their eastern side." The Commissioner of Brazil who traced by himself the final portion of the line, carries it up to a point which he calls S. Anai, without naming the Essequibo.

In the map of Brazil of 1880 by C. Brockes and C. Held, the limit with Venezuela is placed at a distance, leaving out part of this, including its sources, in British Guiana.

In the book entitled "Nociones sobre Corografía del Brasil, for Joaquin Manuel de Madeco," which is accompanied by said map, we read: "The lines of the frontier of Brazil with British Guiana are two: the first on the north, and the second on the east; in the first, as also in Dutch Guiana, France disputes the right of Brazil; in the first it is England that disputes it, the origin of her unexpected claims and diplomatic controversies being the action of the President of the Province of Para, in compelling an English missionary who was teaching the Indians there, to leave the territory that had always been considered and recognized as Brazilian, up to the Pacaraima mountains, the acknowledged boundary line. *The outcome of the negotiations between the respective governments, was the neutralization of the territory situated between the Tacutú and Regumuri rivers, until the necessary explorations should finally determine the true boundaries.*"

The following maps should be consulted:

1st.—Atlas of Codazzi, whereof in No. 10 a territory is marked on the south, extending to the Acarai Mountains, and embracing the upper part of the Essequibo, from the mouth of the Rupununi, with the note: "Territory considered as usurped by the English."

2nd—The map attached to the statistical year-books of Venezuela wherein the same extension is given it on the southeast.

3rd—Schomburgk's map of 1840, which gives the claims of Venezuela as he understood them, of Brazil and of Great Britain.

4th—The aforesaid map of Brockes and Held.

5th—The maps of Surville, Cruz Cano y Olmedilla, and Requena which

**No. 135.**

extended the boundaries of Spanish Guiana to the Tumucuraque mountains, making it confine with the present Dutch Guiana and with the French.

Besides the above-mentioned maps, the sketches are forwarded of the Venezuelan-Brazilian frontier, set in 1879-1880 by the joint Commission of both countries, and of the continuation of same to its termination by only one Commissioner of Brazil.

It is desired that from this study should result, not only the connection of the frontier of Venezuela and Brazil with that of Venezuela and British Guiana, but also a standard which may serve to appreciate the merit of the demarcation made unilaterally from the Cupi hill to the S. Anay.

Although Codazzi in his geography makes the boundaries of Venezuela and Brazil to coincide at the mouth of the Rupununi, this is done without taking into account the usurpation which he himself points out in his map. See Montenegro, Geography of Venezuela, and Marmol's pamphlet on the boundaries of Guiana.

The study herein recommended, is very urgent; it is required for the 27th instant, with the return of the accompanying maps.

I am your very attentive servant,

J. CALCAÑO MATHIEU.

**No. 136.**

Minister of Public Works to Minister of Foreign Affairs, Venezuela, as to the Venezuelan-Brazilian and Guianan frontier; June 7, 1898.

[Printed from translation of certified copy of original.]

MINISTRY OF PUBLIC WORKS. }  
D. de V. de C. A. y C. }  
No. 294. }

CARACAS, June 7, 1898.

TO THE MINISTER OF FOREIGN AFFAIRS,

Present.

As the result of the study of the subject which you are pleased to submit to the consideration of this Ministry, in your note of May 23, 1898, No. 761, F. P. L., I have the honor of reporting to you as follows:

The tracing of the boundaries between Venezuela and Brazil presents no difficulty from its western extremity to Monte Anay, a mountain belonging to the Pacaraima range; but from this point toward the east the following doubt occurs: Whether the line of demarcation proceeds directly until it cuts the Essequibo river at the mouth of the Rupunini, as set down in Codazzi's Atlas (Map of the Canton of Upata), or turns toward the south in the direction of the headwaters of the Essequibo river, separating the waters of the latter from those of the Branco river, as shown on the maps

**No. 136.**

published in the statistical year-books of Venezuela and on Bianconi's Map of 1889.

The question, therefore, is reduced to ascertaining whether the headwaters of the Essequibo belong to Venezuela, or not.

The treaty agreed upon between Brazil and Venezuela, on May 5, 1859, says that the boundary between both Nations should follow "along the summit of the Parima range of mountains to the angle formed by the latter with the Pacaraima range, so that all the waters running into the river Branco should belong to Brazil, and those running into the Orinoco, to Venezuela, the line to continue along the highest peaks of said Pacaraima range, so that the waters running into the river Branco should, as has been said, belong to Brazil, and those running into the Essequibo, Cuyuni and Caroni, to Venezuela, as far as where the territories of both States extend on their eastern side."

By virtue of this clause, it is clear that the boundary line, to the east of Monte Anay, should not deviate from the division of waters mentioned in the Treaty, but follow them up until the eastern extremity of the Republic is reached, which is, according to the Brief presented by Venezuela, the waterway of the Essequibo. Now, as the above mentioned division of waters turns towards the south, and as it cannot cut the Essequibo, except at its headwaters, it follows that the latter point becomes precisely the conjunction of the southern and eastern frontier of Venezuela. It is so set down in the explanatory map which I have the honor of subjoining to the present note.

To Venezuela, therefore, belongs the territory comprised within Monte Anay, the mouth of the Rupununi and the headwaters of the Essequibo river; an ownership which is furthermore verified by the following documents:

1st.—In the geographical map of Don Francisco Requena, 1796, which contains the boundary line between the dominions of Spain and Portugal, it is shown that the old Captain Generalship of Caracas extended to the east until it conjoined with French Guiana, comprising in its territory all the headwaters of the Essequibo.

2nd.—In the map of Cruz Cano y Olmedilla, 1775, and in the chorographic map of Nueva Andalucia, made by Surville in 1778, it is seen that all the basin of the Essequibo lying south of the mouth of the Rupununi river, belonged at the time to Spanish Guiana.

3rd.—From the Direction issued February 4, 1779, by the Intendant-General of Venezuela, wherein rules are given for settling the province of Guiana, it is inferred that the lands belonging to Spain extended eastward until they reached the confines of French Guiana, leaving on one side the territories of Dutch Guiana, while those of the Crown of Portugal remained on the south.

4th.—In the map of Mannert, 1803, it also appears that the headwaters of the Essequibo belonged to Nueva Andalucia.

**No. 136.**

5th.—In the Geography of Montenegro, Vol. IV., page 3, we read the following: "The easternmost part of Venezuela is the one which touches French Guiana, toward  $2^{\circ} 10'$  latitude north, and  $56^{\circ} 4'$  longitude west" (Greenwich). And further on it adds that the line marking the eastern frontier of the Republic cuts the river Essequibo toward  $4^{\circ} 12'$  north latitude, and continues along the summits of the Tumucuraque range, until it confines with French Guiana at the intersection of said range with the Acaray mountains. The boundary line then swerves back along the latter range up to a point where the Acaray mountains meet the Pacaraima range, thus leaving all the headwaters of the Essequibo in Venezuelan territory.

6th.—Codazzi's Atlas (Map No. 10) notes that the territory in question was then considered as usurped by the English, which is an indication that it did not belong to them legitimately.

From the foregoing exposition it appears that the Republic has a right to all the headwaters of the river Essequibo. But, as in the Brief presented by Venezuela, and for reasons that have no doubt been duly considered, only the waterway of said river has been claimed as a frontier, it follows, in the opinion of the undersigned, that the demarcation that should be maintained is the one traced on the accompanying map, namely, *the waterway of the Essequibo, from the point where it empties into the sea to its headwaters, continuing thence to Monte Anay along the range of mountains which divide the waters of the Essequibo from those which run into river Branco.*

The paragraph transcribed by the Señor Minister of Foreign Relations, from the work of Don Joaquin M. de Macedo, regarding the neutralization, agreed upon between England and Brazil, of the territory lying between the Tacutú and Regumuri rivers, can be no argument against this conclusion, for it is known that England illegally occupies all the headwaters of the Essequibo, as can be seen in the aforesaid Atlas of Codazzi (Map No. 10).

The Señor Minister also desires that the study recommended by him to this Ministry, should result in a standard which may serve to appreciate the merit of the demarcation made unilaterally by the Brazilian Commission, from the Cupi hill to the Anay range.

Upon this point I beg to state, that having compared the geographical co-ordinates of some angles of the line in question, with those corresponding to the same points of the line traced in the map accompanying the statistical year-books of Venezuela, there appear some slight discrepancies as to the latitude; but regarding the longitude the discrepancies amount to  $1^{\circ} 25'$  against Venezuela. The proper thing to do, in this case, would be to send a Venezuelan Commission who upon the ground would ascertain which of the parties was in fault. If this is not practicable for the present, and if the settlement of the question is urgent, I am of opinion that it would be advisable to accept the frontier traced in the

**No. 136.**

Brazilian map, since it was made by an honorable and competent Commission of that country, but with the following proviso:

*“Inasmuch as there are differences between the line of demarcation fixed unilaterally by the Brazilian Commission, and the one set down in the official map of Venezuela, the latter Republic accepts the former line, with the condition that should there be any inaccuracy in the geographical co-ordinates of some of its points, these shall be corrected; so that in definitive the frontier line should always mark the division of waters mentioned in the Treaty of 1859.”*

It should also be borne in mind that the map presented by the Brazilian Commission offers more differences as compared with that of the statistical year-book of Venezuela, than is the case with the Atlas of Codazzi, the only scientific work we have upon the subject.

The foregoing is in reply to your note of May 23, of the current year.

God and Federation.

A. SMITH.

**No. 137.**

Notes and comments on the British Case by Dr. Rafael Seijas, dated June 20, 1898.

On pages 17 and 18 of the British Case we read:

The Spanish Colonists who occupied the territory which is now Venezuela, Equador, and Colombia, declared their independence of Spain in 1810, and the war of independence extended for a time into the Orinoco district. At this time, and up to the year 1816, as may be seen by the Table of Missions in the Appendix, the savannah land between the Orinoco and the Yuruari was still in part occupied by the Capuchin Missions.

In May 1817, however, the rebel troops collected the missionaries at Caruachi, and then massacred them. The General in command had intended to take the missionaries to Tupuquen and Tumeremo, which were described as the outermost in the Eastern district.

The natural consequence of this action was the rapid decay of the Mission villages, and the territory relapsed into a state of barbarism.

In the passage above quoted, grievous confusion has been made between Venezuela, New Granada and Equador, the idea being conveyed that in 1810, they formed *one* people, and that it rose in revolt simultaneously. Nothing could be less exact. They were three separate peoples. One was called the Captaincy-General of Venezuela, the other, the New Kingdom of Granada or Viceroyship of Santa Fé (Holy Faith), and the third, the Kingdom or Presidency of Quito.

They had different governments, and they worked and acted with entire independence from one another, although under the common dependence to Spain. Venezuela began her independence on the 19th of April, 1810,

**No. 137.**

depriving Captain-General Emparan of his power, banishing him and other Spanish officials, and establishing a *Junta* to take charge of the government named by King Ferdinand, in imitation of those which had been formed in Spain. On the 5th of July, 1811, seven provinces of those which composed the Captaincy-General of Venezuela declared their independence of Spain. In that same year they constituted themselves into a federal republic after the model and example of the United States of America. During the course of the war which Spain waged against them, Venezuela and New Granada mutually helped each other, and that was why Bolivar, who had conquered in both territories, urged their union in 1819, by means of a law to that effect, when the Venezuelan Congress met at Angostura. This law was approved by the Congress of Venezuela and Colombia, assembled in the town of Rosario de Cúcuta, in the year 1821, and the union was a sort of common nationality, in a simple or consolidated form, not a federal union. The new republic was called Colombia, and its life lasted ten years, for in 1830 Venezuela and Equador separated from New Granada, and again assumed their independent existence.

As regards Colombia it had been made a viceroyship by the Spanish government the last time in 1743. It had under its control, for some time, the provinces of Guayana, Cumaná, Margarita and Maracaibo; but, in 1777, these were incorporated into the Captaincy-General of Venezuela forever.

In the year 1810, the revolution of New Granada, following the example of Venezuela, established a *Junta* that should take the place of the Viceregal Government named by Spain. This took place on the 20th of July. From 1812 on, the provinces began to proclaim their independence.

With respect to the Presidency of Quito, it named its *Junta* on the 23rd of September, 1810, and did not declare its independence from Spain until the 11th of December, 1811. It did not incorporate itself into Colombia till 1824, as appears by the decree published by its Congress, on the 11th of July, General Francisco de Paula Santander, Vice-President of Colombia, being its acting President, and Señor José Manuel Restrepo being Secretary of State for the Interior at the time. Here are the proofs:

The act of independence of Venezuela, proclaimed the 5th of July, 1811, begins thus: "We, the representatives of the united provinces of Caracas, Cumaná, Barinas, Margarita, Barcelona, Mérida and Trujillo, which form the American Confederation of Venezuela, in the Southern Continent, in Congress assembled, and having due regard to the full and absolute possession which we enjoy of our rights, which we justly and legitimately recovered on the 19th of April, 1810, as a consequence of the campaign of Bayona, and the occupation of the Spanish throne by conquest, and the succession of another dynasty, constituted without our consent, etc.

**No. 137.**

It ends with the following words:

"We, therefore, in the name and by the will and authority of the virtuous people of Venezuela, solemnly declare to the world, that the United Provinces are and ought to be, from this day forth, in fact and by right, free, sovereign and independent States; and that they are absolved from all submission and dependence to the crown of Spain, or to those who call themselves its possessors and representatives, and that as a free and independent State, it has full power to assume the form of government that shall be most in conformity with the general will of its people; to declare war, make peace, enter into alliances, arrange treaties of commerce, boundaries and navigation; to do and execute all the other acts which free and independent nations do and execute."\*

The fundamental law of the union of the peoples of Colombia:

"We, the representatives of the peoples of New Granada and Venezuela, in general Congress assembled,

"Having carefully examined the fundamental law of the Republic of Colombia, agreed to by the Congress of Venezuela, in the city of Santo Thomé de Angostura, on the 17th day of December, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and nineteen, and whereas,"

"In the name and under the auspices of Almighty God, we have decided to decree, and do hereby decree, the solemn ratification of the fundamental law of the Republic of Colombia, of which mention has been made, in the following terms:

"Article 1st: The peoples of New Granada and Venezuela are united into one nation, under the express condition that its government shall be, now and ever, popular representative in form.

"Art. 2nd: This new nation shall be known as and denominated by the title of *Republic of Colombia*.

\* \* \* \* \*

"Done at the palace of the Congress of Colombia, in the town of Rosario de Cúcuta, on the 12th of July, in the year of Our Lord 1821, the eleventh of our independence." (The signatures follow, and the "Be it executed" of the Vice-President of the Republic, Señor Castillo, countersigned by the Minister of the Interior, Señor Diego B. Urbaneja, on the 18th of the same July).

DECREE of the Congress of Colombia, June 11th, 1824:

The Senate and House of Representatives of the Republic of Colombia, in Congress assembled \* \* \* decree:

Article 1st.—What has been accorded and decreed, by the towns, corporations and important persons of the City of Quito, on the 29th of May of the year 12, relative to separating from the monarchy of Spain

\* See Compendium of the History of Venezuela, from 1797 to 1880, by Rafael Maria Baralt and Ramon Diaz.

**No. 137.**

and joining the Republic of Colombia; and rewarding the divisions of Colombia and Perú, that waged the Southern campaign, and particularly the President Liberator, the Vice-President of the Republic and General Antonio Sucre, is hereby approved."\*

The facts relative to the establishment of Juntas and declarations of independence of New Granada and Quito, have been taken, among other sources, from the work of Doctor José Manuel RESTREPO, entitled *Revolution of the Republic of Colombia*, 2nd edition, Besançon, 1858.

With regard to the death of the missionaries, it was a misfortune, which has nothing whatever to do with the question of the boundary line between Venezuela and British Guiana, and which was due solely to the excitement of the officers under whose charge they were, and who acted by their own authority.

Two evident and well-proven inaccuracies in the afore-mentioned paragraphs of the British Case, and relating to historical points, which can easily be ascertained in many works, more or less recent, and without doubt to be found in the well-stocked English libraries, should put the arbitrators on their guard against accepting the assertions of the said book without the presentation of proofs.

On pages 69 and 70 of this same book [British Case], its compilers return to the same subject and repeat the same errors.

It now becomes necessary to go back and trace the history since the beginning of this century of the territory occupied by the Spanish Missions. It will be shown that the Missions had ceased to exist and that the territory had relapsed into a state of barbarism.

In 1810 the Province of Venezuela declared itself independent of the Crown of Spain. In the course of the wars which followed, the Missions were overrun by the patriot troops in 1817, and most of the missionaries were murdered.

At this time the Missions had not been extended beyond the limits which they had in 1788. A declaration made by José Felix Blanco, who was in charge of the Missions at the time of these murders, and who made the declaration in order to show that Bolivar was not responsible for them, states that it had been proposed to imprison the missionaries in the Missions of Tupuquen and Tumeremo, which, he says, were "the last in the Eastern District;" and a Table, published in the official records of the State of Guayana, which purports to show the Missions existing in 1813, when a Decree was passed suppressing them, shows that no new Mission had been established since Tumeremo in 1788.

By a Decree of Congress at Angostura in 1820 the Missions were divided into five districts, but it appears that as organized religious communities they had practically ceased to exist. Padre Blanco, above mentioned, who had been appointed to take charge of them in July 1819, and who governed during the year 1820, stated after-

\* Laws of the Republic of Colombia, comprising all the laws, decrees and resolutions decreed by its Congresses from the year 1821 to the last Congress of 1827. Reprinted carefully from the Bogotá official edition. 3 volumes. Caracas, 1840.



**No. 137.**

wards that when he took charge of them "they were already wretched skeletons; those of the Upper and Lower Caroni did not exist, nor those of the south, except Puedpa, Ayma, and Pastora as mere shadows. The desolation of those of the centre had reached to such a lamentable extremity that San Antonio, for example, which at my departure in November of 1817 consisted of 900 Indians, when I returned in July 1819 had only something under 100."

The compilers of the British Case reassert their error that Venezuela declared itself independent in 1810 from the Crown of Spain, and they take great pains to prove that the Missions had ceased to exist at the beginning of the century and that their territory had lapsed into a state of barbarism. To this end, they recall the fact that Father Blanco who had had charge of them in 1817, and again from 1819 to 1820, tells of the decadence they suffered between the first and second period.

Even if this were true, it would in nowise invalidate the rights of the nation that had established itself in those places. The degree of prosperity or decadence of a people has no bearing on the question of its rights. Supposing a certain property were converted into a desert, it would not follow that its owner would thereby lose his rights to it. To pretend that the State to which it belongs has abandoned a certain territory, because of its state of decay, is absurd.

Still less can the British Government have recourse to such reasoning since it brings forth as an argument in favor of the rights acquired by the Dutch, in the Cuyuni, that in 1703, they had a post established in the highest part of that river, which did not last one month; another which was destroyed by the Spanish in 1758; and still another, which was quickly abandoned, no vestige whatever of them being left.

How different is this case from that of the Missions of Guiana, which, if they have fallen off, still they have not therefore been abandoned, but on the contrary have been very carefully preserved, and many of them have figured as a part of the political divisions of Guiana, not to speak of other places, as may be seen, that in the department called *Heres*, are included districts called, *Ciudad Bolivar*, *Victoria*, *Carolina*, *Barceloneta*, *Borbón*, *Moitaco*, *Piedra*, *Puruci*, *Maripa*, *Aripao* and *Piacoa*. In the Department *Guzman Blanco*, the districts *Upata*, *San Felix*, formerly *Puerto de Tablas*, *Cupapuy*, *Palmar*, *Miamo* and *Guri*, together with the hamlets *San Antonio*, *Carachi*, and *Altagracia*, comprised within *Upata*, and *San Pedro de Las Rocas*, comprised in *Guri*." In the department of *Roscio*, the districts of *Guasipati*, *Nueva Providencia*, *Tumeremo*, *Pastora* and *Callao*.

In the department of *Cedeño Caicara*, *La Arenosa*, *San Rafael*, *Sesenta*, *San Pedro*, *Punta Brava de Orinoco*, *El Oso*, *Santa Rita*, *El Banco*, *Santa Lucia*, *El Mato*, *El Zamuro*, *El Peñón*, *Punta Brava*, *La Bendición*, *Gua-cimal*, *La Soledad*, *Morono*, *San Antonio*, *Sacuima*, *Jan José de Guarna*, *La Concepción*, *Guamalito*, *La Guayra*, *Chacirifra*, *Capuchino*, *Las Mercedes*, *Las Lajitas* and *Guaniamo*.

**No. 137.**

Cuchivero, with the suburbs, Chicharro Danta, Las Raices, Punta de Cerro, Las Adjuntas, Temblador, El Eslabón, Guarirumana, *San Francisco*, Mata, La Candelaria, Quilma, San Joaquin, La Mata, Soronia, San José, Barrichú and Tierra Colorada.

Altagracia, with the suburbs Santa Bárbara, *La Pastora*, Los Cochinitos, *San José*, Buena Vista, Tucuragua, Chirivital and San Isidro.

“The years of war and desolation of the times of independence being over, the authorities of Venezuela founded anew, Pimchin, Tomo, Tiriquin, San Felipe, Buena Vista, Santa Cruz, San Pedro, San Antonio and Santa Barbara, and lately, at great expense, and under the enlightened direction of a high functionary with his corresponding staff, Venezuela nourishes those settlements, introducing civilization, the care of the fields, the breeding of domestic animals and commerce with Angostura, in order to reap, some day, the fruit of its labors and sacrifices ”

Thus said Señor Fermin Toro, Minister Plenipotentiary of Venezuela, to Señor Colonel Joaquin Acosta, Plenipotentiary of New Granada, in the course of the discussion had by them in 1844 relative to the boundary limits of both republics. (Reply, on the 10th of September, by the Plenipotentiary of Venezuela, upon the point in dispute of the Upper Orinoco, Casiquiare and River Negro.\*)

The law of Colombia of October 4, 1821, abolished the tribute imposed upon the Indians, ordered that their services should be rightfully rewarded and made them the equal, before the law, of the other citizens. It absolved them, for a period of five years, from the payment of duties and all other civil contributions, with respect to the entailed estates and other effects they might possess in common. It ordered that the reservations of land assigned to them by the Spanish laws, should be distributed among them, with full rights and titles to possession. It assigned the sources whence the stipends of the clergy in their several parishes should be taken. It decreed the continuance of their natural protectors, who were charged with attending to the communities over which they exercised control, without abridging the rights of the Indians to exercise all other acts and to appear both before a civil and criminal court, as all other citizens are entitled to, the Indians being privileged by being permitted to plead gratuitously, as the poor are entitled to do. It preserved their communities, charged with economic functions, which were especially designed to the better administration, concentration and distribution of the goods of the community, subject to the parochial judges, and to last while the entailed estates were being divided. And, lastly, it authorized the settlement of other citizens in the Indian territorial reservations, but upon condition that these new settlers should pay rent for the ground they might occupy,

---

\* See pages 376 and 377, Volume 3, of the official publication, entitled *Titles of Venezuela in its boundaries with Colombia*, submitted and arranged in their order, according to the deposition of the illustrious American and Regenerator of Venezuela, General Antonio Guzman Blanco, President of the Republic, Caracas, 1876.

**No. 137.**

and not injure or molest the Indians in their pastures, plantations or other products of their entailed estates.

The law of Colombia of August 3, 1824, ordered the distribution of the public lands in proportionate areas to each one of the heathen tribes that expressed the desire to abandon its nomad life and to settle down into formal parochial districts, ruled and governed as were the others in the republic; that they be aided, in every way possible, in proportion to their number and necessities; that they be provided with parish priests, secular and regular, in the new, as well as in the old districts, that lacked them; that fathers or priests be selected from other dioceses for these missions, when the diocese proper should be without any ecclesiastics for the said purpose; that these parishes be supplied with the effects and holy vessels required.

The Colombian law of May 1st, 1826, ordered that the Indian tribes that inhabited the coasts of Grajira, Darien and Mosquitos, and the other uncivilized tribes existing in the republic, should be protected as Colombian citizens worthy of the consideration and special care of the Government; that the necessary measures should be taken looking to their civilization and to the establishment of a mutual and intimate communication with the neighboring settlements; and that special regulations to govern their commerce with the natives and with strangers should be issued.

On its part, Venezuela on the 1st of May of 1841, published a law upon the government and civilization of its Indians. By this it authorized the Executive to carry out that object and to gather them into towns, under the direction of the proper authorities, and under a special legislation, suitable to their circumstances, until they should be in a position to be placed under the general law of the Republic. The Executive was ordered to name the number of the *priestly missionaries* he deemed necessary for the settlements of the Indians, being authorized to call them from foreign countries, and to pay their trip and transportation to their respective places, and to assign them the proper payment or pension. It ordered that every Indian family that consented to live under the care of the missions and in settlements, should be given a quantity of public lands and tools of agriculture, seeds for the field, some cattle, the necessary clothing and some domestic animals. It also empowered the Executive to grant public lands to the families of Venezuelan citizens or foreigners that should like to establish themselves in an Indian settlement. It ordered that Congress should put down in its Budget every year, the sum required to attend to the payment of pensions and other expenses of the reduction and civilization of the Indians; and that the Executive should decree the necessary laws for the organization of the *Missions* or new settlements of the Indians; should make all convenient special arrangements for their commerce with the native Colombians and with foreigners, should specify the duties of the missionaries, and should fill up the gaps which might be noticed in the law.

**No. 137.**

By virtue of this law, the President of the Republic, on the 18th of August, 1841, issued a decree, organizing the native Indian settlements of Guayana, and another, the 20th of the same month, upon the organization of the District of the Rio Negro. Both were declared null and void by the decrees of the 15th of October, 1842. In the first of the new decrees, the reduction and civilization of Indians in the province of Guayana was organized, by a general division of the territory and the authorities; a Director-General being created, vice directors, circuit chiefs and *missionaries*; setting forth the duties of the *missionaries*, the powers of the public officers in the civil and criminal affairs relating to the Indians, the funds of the Missions, their administration and employment, and the assignment of the State officers, with various other provisions.

The second of these decrees concerned the organization of the District of Rio Negro, and its provisions were similar to those of the first.

But among the State officials which it established, it put the so-called *doctrineros* (teachers of doctrine) by the side of the circuit chiefs, with the proviso, among others, that they should teach the Indians the Spanish language and Christian doctrine.

On the 22nd of October, 1842, the President promulgated a decree relative to the Indians of the Goajira, and an organic constitution or set of laws for the regulation of its commerce, and the reduction of the Indians of Maracaibo. Here again *Missionaries* begin to reappear, to whom a sum of money is assigned with which to pay them.

On the 6th of November, 1845, the decree of the District of Rio Negro was revoked; but the *Missionaries* were retained, as well as the *Superintendents of Missions*.

It is known, that about that time, some priests were brought hither from Spain, among whom Father Olegario, of Barcelona, is still among us here, as the parish priest of La Pastora; and also that visitors to the Missions were appointed, whose reports were considered and indications followed.

In 1856, a greater importance was given to said regions of the East, by the creation of the new province of Amazonas, composed of the District of the Rio Negro, and fixing the boundaries that separated it from Guayana. The reduction and civilization of the native Indians was again confided to *Missionaries*.

Although this decree has been reformed and the title of *province* has been changed to that of *territory*, in consequence of the adoption of the federal designation, the real nature of things has remained the same. As late as 1891, the presence of *Missionaries* was solicited to administer to the Indians, and some of them are still here.

It will thus be seen, that the Government of Venezuela has continued with perseverance the object of civilizing the native Indians, and to this end, has employed the efficacious co-operation of the *Missionaries*; that these have always been treated with the greatest consideration and res-

**No. 137.**

pect; that here they are not put to death, because the incident of 1817 had its origin and explanation in the fatal circumstances of the war against the Spanish yoke; and lastly, that the Indian towns of Guayana have not been abandoned anew to relapse into a state of barbarism, but have become part of the organization of the political departments, into which that territory is to-day divided.

Caracas, June 20th, 1898.

(Signed) RAFAEL SEIJAS.

**No. 138.**

Notes and Comments on the British Case by Dr. Rafael Seijas, dated June 20, 1898.

In 1896, some English newspapers objected to some of the translations presented or published in British Blue Book, Venezuela No. 1 (1896), and these exceptions appeared so justly taken that a list of *errata* was added, in order to correct some of the errors specified. One of these was found in an extract of secret information, relative to the possessions of the King of Spain in America, in which it was said that,

It appears that the Dutch settlements in Guayana extend from close to the River Amazonas to the Orinoco;

which was corrected to read,

It appears that the Dutch settlements in Guayana already extended from close to the River Amazon at least as far as the Pomeroon.

Mention was also made of a document, entitled, "General Description of all His Majesty's Dominions in America, 2 vols., MS. Anonymous, 1640 (?)," \* to be found only in the King's Library, Royal Palace, Madrid. To the suggested date of 1640 it was objected that the colony of Pomaroon did not exist at that time; accordingly when the same document is now presented in the British Case, Appendix, volume I, pp. 179-181, with the following note added: "It is difficult to fix the date of this document. It could not well have been earlier than 1665, at which date the colony in Pomaroon was in its prime. On the other hand, the mention of a colony on the Wiapoco points to 1676, or thereabouts."

The passage referred to says thus, in the Spanish text: "Twenty leagues to leeward on the Paumaron river, is the town of New Calandia, which is very large and rich in products, as it contains the largest factory to be found in all this coast, and so they exercise great care in protecting it, as it is already very near the Orinoco river, where the Presidio of Goyana [Guayana] is situated, and which belongs to your Majesty."

In the Venezuelan Brief of 1896, † exception was also taken to a translation

\* Blue Book, Venezuela No. 1 (1896), p. 56.

† The case of Venezuela, a reply to the British Blue Book, etc., Atlanta, Ga., 1896, p. 135. Note: This book forms part of Vol. 9, U. S. Com. Reports.

**No. 138.**

of a letter from the Prefect of Missions, Brother Benito de la Garriga, who had written: "*Other Dutchmen* had settled much to this side up the Cuyuni, near the mouth of the Curumo, which is not far distant from the Cavallapi Mission, and afterwards they withdrew." Instead of *Other Dutchmen*, the translation read, "*Other Dutch families*;" and besides, it suppressed the last clause, viz.: "*and afterwards they withdrew*."

This same letter is reprinted in the British Case, Appendix, vol. iv., pp. 19-24, where the first error noted above is permitted to stand, but the second having been corrected; as the words "*but afterwards withdrew*" have been added (p. 23).

One objection was as well founded as the other, and the translators should have corrected both mistakes.

In any case, if *other Dutchmen* had established themselves far to the north of the Cuyuni about 1769, and *they afterwards withdrew*, all argument deduced from this fact disappears; because, if the Dutch had considered the Cuyuni as theirs, they would have remained there, instead of retiring. Had they remained, they would have been expelled by the Spaniards, as Father Garriga says a group of them were driven out, by his denunciation, in 1758, for having constructed a cabin or hut on the coast of that river for the purpose of buying *poitos* [Indian slaves]. It is proven that the barrack was not re-established till some years afterwards, first in one place, and afterwards in another, and finally was abandoned altogether.

In the Venezuelan Brief of 1896,\* in the article entitled "Occupation," a translation of an opinion of the Spanish Council of State, relative to Don Manuel Centurion, was pointed out as defective; as an attempt was made to belittle him, when, on the contrary, the afore-mentioned Council praised his services and considered them worthy of a still higher recompense.

Now, in the British Case, Appendix, vol. iv, pp. 148-160, there appears the report of the Council of the 16th of February of 1776 and 20th of April following, with its text entire, both in English and in Spanish. Various passages, which had been omitted before have now been inserted, and the errors in translation to which reference had been made have been corrected.

In the Venezuelan Brief of 1896,† attention was also called to the following passage, published in the Blue Book, Venezuela No. 1 (1896), page 23, and which was made to refer to the Missions:

In 1817 General Bolivar, President of Colombia (with which Venezuela was then incorporated), whose headquarters were at Angostura, issued a decree of the Government of Guyana in the following terms:

"General Vicente Sucre, Governor of Guyana, must be considered not only as Governor of the Fort of Old Guayana, but also as Military Governor of the Orinoco as far as its old mouth."

\* The Case of Venezuela, a reply to the British Blue Book, etc., 80. Atlanta, Ga., 1896, p. 138 et seq. Note: This book forms part of vol. 9 of U. S. Com. Report.

† The same.

**No. 138.**

It was objected that in the year 1817 Colombia did not exist, and therefore, General Bolivar could not have been its President; that Sucre was not a General at the time, but a Colonel; that the decree related not to *one fort*, but to *the forts* of Old Guayana; that there seemed to be no reason for calling the Department of the Lower Orinoco the *Orinoco as far as its old mouth*; and it appeared probable that the compiler of the Blue Book had left incomplete the expression of his thought.

The fault has now been rectified, in British Case, Appendix, vol. vi, p. 8, in which the decree of Bolivar is published in its entirety, as it stands in the collection of Blanco and Azpurria, and it is couched in the following terms:

“Simon Bolivar, the Supreme Chief, to the Governor of Guayana.

“To the Governor General of Guayana.”

“HEADQUARTERS AT ANGOSTURA.

December 17th, 1817, 7th.

DEAR GOVERNOR:

Colonel Vicente Sucre is to be considered not only as the Governor of the forts of Old Guayana, but also as the Military Commander of the Department of the Lower Orinoco, entrusted with the command of the line formed by the chain of towns from Carmache to Piacoa, as its immediate Commander. I pray your Excellency to so apprise him, and to communicate the fact to those who should be so informed.

God keep your Excellency many years.

SIMON BOLIVAR.”

But the object in bringing forth this document is not expressed.

2. Then this remark was made:

It is impossible to appreciate the relevancy of the citation made by the Blue Book, wherein the translator says *General* instead of *Colonel* Sucre, *fort* instead of *forts* of Old Guiana, and *of the Orinoco to the old mouth* instead of *Department of the Lower Orinoco*—as is expressed in the aforesaid resolution. There being no apparent connection between the words quoted and the question of boundary, it seems probable that the compiler of the Blue Book did not complete the expression of his idea.

This same remark might again appropriately be made, because, although it is true that the original document of Bolivar has been quoted and that it has been translated less incorrectly than before, it is nevertheless true, that no mention of this decree is to be found in the arguments or exposition of the British side of the question, nor any reference whatever as to the purpose of its introduction. Even the words which the Blue Book No. 1 contained with reference to it have been omitted from the latest English documents.

**No. 138.**

It has been asserted by some, that the question refers to a decree issued by the Liberator, under date of October 15th, 1817, after he had taken possession of the province of Guayana. In this document, it appears to be divided into 3 departments. The third is known as the Lower Orinoco, with the following boundaries: To the North, the streams of the Orinoco from the mouth of the Caroni to where the Rio Grande empties into the ocean *and the coast of the sea as far as the fort Muruca, inclusive.* To the East and South, the boundaries are the foreign possessions, the Western boundaries are determined by the Eastern boundaries of the Central Department.

These latter are "the streams of this river (Caroni) up to its origin, in a straight line toward the Parime lake, and thence, to the Amanovise river, as far as its union with the Parime river."

This decree was sent by the Governor of Guayana, Señor Pedro Folastero, with his report of December 6th, 1831, to the Deputy of that province, Señor Manuel de Aurrecoechea, and it is certified to by Señor Felipe Delepiani, Secretary, under date of the 3d of the same month. It came to this Ministry, with the following report of the Governor of Guiana, Señor Pedro Navarro, who, on the 5th of October of 1841, said to the Secretary of State at the office of the Treasury Department:

"Investigating the question of the boundaries of Guiana that this government is now discussing with the English nation, there came to my notice that Señor Manuel de Aurrecoechea, Custom House Superintendent at this port, retained in his keeping a certified copy, bearing the signature of the secretary of the State Department in Guiana, of the royal letter patent, issued by the King of Spain at Aranjuez, on May 5th, 1768, and of the decree published by *the Liberator President of Colombia*, at Angostura, the 15th of October, 1817, together with a document in which the Governor of that province handed them over to Aurrecoechea, as the representative of that district in 1831."

"Yesterday I officially requested Mr. Aurrecoechea to send me the aforesaid three documents, which he very patriotically has already done. And as they may prove of use to the government in the said question, I hasten to forward them, by the present mail, precisely as they came to my hands, as there is no time to make authorized copies of them."

"In the meantime, I am still awaiting the information which your Excellency desired to know, in your communication of the 2nd of last month, and to ascertain which I have addressed myself to all the province; and it would afford me great satisfaction if I could find something among the results of my labors, that might prove of use, and which I would hasten to inform you of.

I remain, Yours very faithfully,

(Signed) P. NAVARRO."



**No. 138.**

The document to which Señor P. Navarro refers is as follows:

"*Venezuela. Government of the Province of Guayana.*"

*Angostura, Dec. 6th, 1831.*

To the Deputy of this Province,

Manuel de Aurrecochea.

"Obediently to your communication, dated 3rd of the present month, you will find enclosed the two copies, duly authorized and sealed, by the undersigned, the Secretary of this government, relative to the decrees to which Your Excellency refers with regard to creating this portion of the territory of Venezuela into a province, according to the royal letter patent of the 5th of May, 1768, and the decree issued by General Bolivar, during his term as *Supreme Chief*, on the 15th of October, 1817.

"I have the honor to fulfil your Excellency's wishes, these documents having been obtained from a private individual, because our Archives contain nothing referring to the matter.

With best regards, I beg leave to remain,

Obedient servant,

(Signed) PEDRO VOLASTERO."

Nothing more is required to make it clear that the decree attributed to Bolivar is not an authentic document, because it is not to be found in the government archives at Guiana and the copy herewith presented was furnished in 1831 to the Governor, Pedro Volastero, by an individual whose name is not even mentioned.

It may be noted, in passing, that the Royal decree of May 5, 1768, is not, as has been said, the one which created the province of Guiana, but treats of adding to it the many settlements of the *upper and lower Orinoco and the River Negro* (Black river). The province of Guayana already existed in 1762, as the title bestowed on Colonel Don Joaquin Moreno de Mendoza, the 4th of June of that year, proves, he being named officer for the whole district, said territory being considered a military command. As for the rest, according to Alulo, there had been Governors in Guayana since 1568, when Don Diego Fernandez de Zerpa went there, with the title of Governor, of whatever he might conquer, by means of his men, arms and ammunition. It was then called New Andalucia, and it included Cumaná. Afterwards the latter was separated from Guayana; this occurred in the year 1762.

Going back to Bolivar's decree, it is observed that the Venezuelan government has never made use of it, nor mentioned it at all, and that it is not to be found in any official publication. Neither was it included among the documents collected for the public life of the Liberator, by men as well informed as Señores Doctor Francisco Javier Yanes, General José Félix Blanco y Ramón Azpurúa, nor is it cited in the respective histories of Restrepo, Montenegro, Baralt, Austria, O'Leary or Larrazábal.

But there is still more. Bolivar, as the Supreme Chief of Venezuela, did not possess the authority to determine the territorial boundaries. This pertained solely to the Congress that would assemble after the war,

**No. 138.**

and the Colombian Congress, which met in Cucuta, in the year 1821, fixed the boundaries as follows:

The territory of the republic of Colombia will be that comprised between the boundaries of the old Captaincy-General of Venezuela, and the Viceroyship and Captaincy-General of the New Kingdom of Granada, but the determination of its precise limits is reserved for a more opportune time.

This is said in Article 5 of the fundamental law of the union of the peoples of Colombia. The Constitution of the Republic of Colombia, which came later on, said, in Article 6:

The territory of Colombia is the same that was comprised in the old viceroyship of New Granada and the Captaincy-General of Venezuela.

And the 7th says:

The people within the expressed limits, that are still under the Spanish yoke, at whatever time they may become free, will become part of the republic, with rights and representation equal to those of the others, who compose it.

The Government of Colombia, far from believing that the boundary with the British Guiana was at the Moroco, said through its illustrious Minister, Doctor Pedro Gual, five years after the date of the aforementioned decree of Bolivar, viz., July 12th, 1822, to Señor José Rafael Revenga, appointed first-class Minister to the Government of His Britannic Majesty, in the list of instructions:

. . . Allow me, nevertheless, to call your special attention to article 2 of the draft of the treaty on limits. The English are now in possession of Dutch Guiana, being therefore our neighbors on that side. Therefore you must agree as exactly as possible upon the dividing line between one and the other territory, in accordance with the latest treaties between Spain and Holland. The colonists of Demerara and Berbice have usurped a large tract of land that, according to said treaties, *belongs to us on the side of the Essequibo river*. It is absolutely necessary that said colonists either place themselves under the protection of and submission to our laws, or else retire to their former possessions. To this end they should be granted the necessary time according to the provisions in the draft for the treaty.

This passage is taken from the book "Diplomatic Annals of Colombia," by Pedro Ignacio Cadena, official edition, Bogota, published by Manuel de J. Barrera, 1878, and is reproduced as the first document of the "Official History of the discussion between Venezuela and Great Britain, on their Guiana boundaries"; and which was presented to the Commission at Washington.

Another distinguished person, Señor Doctor José Maria Restrepo, Minister of the Interior of the Republic of Colombia, in the Atlas, which accompanied his history of the revolution in Colombia, published for the first time in 1827, wrote this note, brought forward by Dr. Eduardo Calcaño, in his communication to Earl Derby, on the 14th of November, 1876: "*The boundaries of the Guiana, which to day is English, were traced in conformity to the possession that Spain had as far as the Essequibo river, and it is marked in the best maps published in England itself.*"

CARACAS, June 20, 1898.

(Signed) RAFAEL SEIJAS.

**No. 139.**

**Affidavit of Davis Francis Turnbull, of North Cambridge, Massachusetts, U. S. A., Engineer, as to a survey of the Lower Orinoco, April 16, 1897.**

[From the original.]

My name is Davis Francis Turnbull; I am a citizen of the United States, at North Cambridge, Massachusetts. I am an Engineer by profession, and was educated at the Lawrence Scientific School, Harvard University.

I returned a few weeks ago from Imataca, on the lower Orinoco river in Venezuela. I lived there one year engaged upon and in connection with an iron mine owned by my father, Mr. George Turnbull, but at present worked by a syndicate, by whom I am employed.

Our mail station is Barancas, which is on the Orinoco, about five miles above where the Macareo branch leaves the Orinoco, and which is a landing place of the steamers that run from Trinidad to Ciudad Bolivar. Our telegraph place is "the Castle"—"old Guayana." This place is an ancient military post with two forts; one just rebuilt. We have a steam launch and canoe, with which we are in the habit of going for mail, etc., and I have, in one or the other of these, gone up and down the river a very great many times. In doing this I have made running surveys of the river and know it pretty thoroughly from Imataca to Barancas. I have also been down the river to Barima, and part way up the Amacura and the Brazo Barima.

I proceed to give a geographical account, particularly of the South bank of the Orinoco between "Old Guayana" and Barima Point. It can be understood from any late map of the region; but even the best maps which I can find of it do not give the course of the river, nor the islands in it with entire correctness, and do not intelligently represent the characteristic geographical features of the south side of the Orinoco at this point. I annex to this affidavit a map prepared by myself, which I believe to be correct. Besides my own knowledge, I have availed myself of a running survey made by the U. S. Steamship Kearsarge four or five years ago.

The Orinoco is a river of large volume and is subject to periodical rises. It begins to swell about April or May, remains high throughout the summer, falls in the autumn, and reaches its lowest point in the early part of March. At Ciudad Bolivar it rises sometimes 60 feet; usually near 50 feet. Near the sea and below the head of the passes, where the water-ways are much larger and from proximity to the sea, the water has a better chance to run off, the rise is much less; the rise at Imataca is not far from fifteen feet. The river is heavily charged with mud, and in the region I am speaking of it makes large deposits very rapidly in edies and slack water spots; and, upon a slight change in force or direction of the current, will rapidly cut away what has previously been deposited by it—the alluvial banks as well at the flats and bars. Below Las Tablas the main river is divided into channels separated by islands, or it may be looked at as being very

**No. 139.**

wide and much filled with large islands. Of course, in some of these channels the current is strong and there is considerable scour.

The Orinoco has a delta on its north side and on its south side consisting of the usual delta swamp formation, intersected with bayous generally large and deep in proportion to the amount of water which passes through them, but more or less obstructed by mud banks or bars, and, in the case of the smaller ones, by fallen trees. Pretty much the whole seems to be covered with a dense growth of swamp trees. The banks of the water-courses where the current is more active are often or perhaps for the most part raised into natural dykes, behind which the ground slopes off and is under water in the wet season.

On the North side and in descending the river, the really firm land stops about at the head of Brazo Macareo; below that is the delta. At Barancas the land is a little above high water; thence, in following the Macaroo pass, for example, the surface rapidly falls to below high water, and at the ocean ends in flats, which run well out to sea below low water.

On the South side there is firm land down as far as Imataca. It does not consist of a continuous firm bank to the river, but of a series of spurs which run out east-northeast from the main Imataca range of mountains. The river runs to the north of east; the main Imataca range trends to the south of east, so that it recedes from the river. These spurs run out obliquely towards the river. As the general course of the Orinoco is to the east, these spurs approach it obliquely, and thus serve to keep the river from cutting to the south. Between these spurs there are what one may call bays filled with river mud more or less consolidated into swamp or firm savannah, and sometimes bayou branches or arms start off from the river, follow the foot of the hills for a while and then rejoin the river. Near Sta. Catalina this arm which follows the foot of the hills is so large as to be virtually a main stream, which thus seems to make a great bend at its south side, leaving large islands between it and the northern channel. As this channel runs about east-northeast, the spurs, which run in about the same direction, seem to lie parallel to the river. Amongst these ranges of hills, none of which are high, and which, so far as I have learnt, are rather rolling, there are savannahs of grass, under water in their lower portions in the wet season, but dry and firm in the high parts. The ridges are generally timbered. Near the river and streams the undergrowth of bush and vines is very thick; when the ground is drier the forest is more open and comparatively easy to pass through.

These spurs which, on the south bank, reach down the river as far as the town of Imataca (back of which the main range of the Imataca mountains trends off more to the south), the ends of these spurs seem to stop further off to the south and the sort of great natural bay thus left by them has been filled up with mud and sand, making the great southern delta of the Orinoco.

**No. 139.**

Thus, if a person coming down the river, finds on the south bank of the river more or less firm land until he gets to Imataca; below that nothing but delta swamp, largely under water in the wet season, with an occasional bank of hummock where a few Indians live. The spurs terminate too far back from the river to be visible.

Imataca town is in  $8^{\circ} 29'$  north latitude and  $61^{\circ} 18'$  longitude west from Greenwich.

Thus from the Imataca range a series of spur-like formations run out in an E-N-E. direction towards the Orinoco; these prevent the river, in general terms, from cutting away its south bank. Between each of these low ridges there is a drainage stream which finds its way into the Orinoco; and the lower portion of each of these streams generally flows through an alluvial swamp-like region.

Opposite and on the south side of Tortola Island the southern branch of the Orinoco has a large bend flowing E-N-E; and here the river and ridges are approximately parallel. Sta Clara (the American Balata factory) and Sta. Catalina (a Venezuelan village—*i. e.*, white people and mixed white and Indians) are on this channel. This south bank here is firm, except occasionally there is the mouth of a creek with a bit of swamp. Sta. Clara and Sta. Catalina are the ends of two subordinate spurs which come out to the river. These two towns stand on two ledges with wet land between them. Sta. Clara is about 60 feet above the river and Sta. Catalina is 50 feet. In high water the river here rises 15 to 18 feet.

Piacoa is two or three miles up stream from the Tortola cross-channel, about 20 miles above Sta. Catalina. This is above the oblique spurs which I have spoken of; and here there is a low range forming the true river bank, with a little alluvial deposit in front of it at places. Behind this low range, which is parallel to the river and also to the main range far inland, there is a stretch of savannah, and then another rolling range, and so on. The "Castle" (Old Guayana) is on a strong and rocky headland, forming part of this same range. This rocky range seems to cross the Orinoco river at the Castle and is the first rock large enough to cross the river which one meets in ascending. Piacoa stands on the lower northern slope of the most northern of these parallel rolls, about a mile back from the main river, but is reached by a waterway about 20 feet wide, deep enough for light draught steam launches. The main-water way from Piacoa by Santa Catalina is about a mile wide. Not far below Piacoa caño a ledge crosses the river emerging as the high land at the western end of Tortola island and making a bad whirlpool where it crosses the river.

The oblique spur which I have been speaking of and which may be considered the most westerly one, reached the Orinoco finally at St. Helena; but long before reaching there, it breaks down into a mere succession of low hills connected by slight ridges. At St. Helena it ends in a very low ledge, 10 or 15 feet above the river and runs under the river. This rocky termination is called Punta Piedra by the pilots.

**No. 139.**

Next east of this is another of these E-N-E spurs. Between these two ridges is a considerable drainage stream the precise position and character of which I do not know. Men have crossed it pretty well up in passing from one ridge to the other.

The ridge back of Sta. Catalina is heavily-wooded with much balata—balata is a tree which sometimes reaches 100 feet in height. Generally speaking the ridges are wooded, and after you get back a few miles back from the river or stream the vines and underbush ceases and there is comparatively clear walking through the forest. There are also, near the streams, savannahs, wet or dry according to the season.

East of the last ridge I have spoken of comes the Toro river. The next considerable spur or ridge to the east is the one which terminates at the town of Imataca, close to Corisimo caño and island. Between the Toro river and Corasimo is a large stretch of savannah (flooded in the very highest water, but good for grazing), intersected with some caños.

Considering now Imataca town: It stands on the north slope of the last end of the spur from the Imataca mountains. This spur is here about 175 feet high. Beyond it however are some low detached hills which might be considered as prolongations of it—some on Corisimo Island, and one a little lower down, say 100 feet high. These are the last hills seen in descending the Orinoco. About here the main Imataca range (consequently its spurs) trend off towards the south and therefore appear to recede from the water. The intervening land is Orinoco delta. The hill on which the town of Imataca is situated has an iron mine now worked in metamorphosed rock; all these hills are of a similar formation. There is much clay hardened with iron thereabouts.

Below this to the ocean, the banks of the Orinoco are entirely alluvial swamp or delta.

Imataca town, which rises directly from the water, stands strictly speaking not on the Orinoco but on the Corisimo. The Corisimo is however not a drainage stream simply but rather a part or arm of the main river. It makes in from the Orinoco proper as a waterway 350 yards wide, with a wide channel carrying 30 feet of water and more. This reaches to the town of Imataca, about 2½ miles from the river proper, and then bends to the east-northeast, and gets back to the Orinoco. This waterway is, at Imataca town, as large and deep as I have stated and so continues, substantially, until it again reaches the main river. I have been through it in a steam launch. The Orinoquito, a caño which joins the Corisimo with the Aquire, appears to be about 100 feet wide, but is so clogged with fallen trees that steam launches do not use it. It is a good canoe stream.

On the north side of the Orinoco proper from the Macareo down to about opposite Sacapana, there were, a few years ago, a string of conucos or farms on the natural dyke of the river edge, worked by half-breeds. We do not call these people Indians; the principal population hereabouts is of these persons; St. Catalina is full of them. They are Venezuelans in

**No. 139.**

this district. They are a mixture of Spanish and Indians, with sometimes a little negro. Pure whites are generally called *Castillanos*. In the Piacoa district there are some very good families of pure blood—some of the Della Costas, for example.

This strip of ground which I have spoken of as cultivated is marked on the "Kearsarge" survey as cultivated ground. But in 1892 (a year of great flood) it was flooded and drowned out, and has not been cultivated since. The people mostly moved to Sta. Catalina and Piacoa. The "Kearsarge" survey is a running survey made by the United States steamship *Kearsarge* when she went up the Orinoco to Ciudad Bolivar about 1892 or 1893.

(Signed) D. F. TURNBULL.

Sworn to before me April }  
16th, A. D., 1897. }

ROBERT LEVI,  
[SEAL.] Notary Public.

**No. 140.**

**Affidavit of Eugenio J. Monge as to a journey from Trinidad to Angostura and thence down the Cuyuni, June 27, 1898.**

[From the original.]

DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA, ss.:

E. J. MONGE, being duly sworn, deposes and says:

In the early part of 1896 I made a trip from Trinidad to Angostura, entering the Orinoco by way of the Macareo. The southern bank of the Orinoco from the head of the delta upstream is generally open country, with here and there bits of wood, but free from forests. After remaining a short time at Angostura, I descended the Orinoco as far as the Caroni and San Felix. Leaving San Felix and traveling in a southeasterly direction, our party crossed a range of hills somewhat wooded, but easy to traverse. Descending on the other side of this range we reached Upata, which lies in a savannah country. From Upata we proceeded through savannahs to Guacipati. From the latter place we continued to El Callao and from there to Tumeremo, traveling all the time through savannahs. During the latter part of this journey, and before reaching Tumeremo, a well defined line of thick forest was visible on our left, running in a general direction from northwest to southeast. After bearing Tumeremo we traveled in a southwesterly direction, some fifteen or twenty leagues to a place called Boca del Monte, where a stockyard is located. Boca del

**No. 140.**

Monte is situated at the entrance to the forest region, the line of the forest here running from northeast to southwest. From Boca del Monte we traveled in a southerly direction though a little to the east, for a distance of about ten leagues through a country covered by an impenetrable forest. The road is cut directly through this forest and connects Boca del Monte with the Venezuelan town of El Dorado at the junction of the Cuyuni and the Yuruan. El Dorado is built upon ground which has been cleared of the forests, and on the opposite side of the Cuyuni is the British frontier station, which has also been built upon cleared ground.

(Signed) EUGENIO J. MONGE.

Sworn to before me this }  
27th day of June, 1898. }

EDW. A. MOSELEY,

[SEAL.] Notary Public.



## APPENDIX

### PART 7.

Documents printed in the Venezuelan Case and here printed again accompanied by the original Spanish text.

---

The following documents bear the same numbers as in the Venezuelan Case Vol. 2, viz.: 438, 463, 464, 467, 468 and 471. They are printed from certified copies which have been procured at the request of the Agent of the British Government, made in accordance with Article VII of the Treaty of Arbitration.



## No. 438.

## Diary of Matheo Beltran, Commander of the Revenue Cutter in the Orinoco, 1785.

[Printed from a certified copy of the original in the Antiguos Archivos de la Capitanía General é Yntendencia de Caracas.]

*Diario. Guayana y Junio 23, de 1785.*      *Diary. Guiana, June 23, 1785.*

Dia 23. Haviendo salido de esta Capital por mandado del S<sup>o</sup> Gov y Com<sup>o</sup> Grál D<sup>o</sup> Miguel Marmion haciendo la derrota á la boca grande de Orinoco, y de allí pasarme al caño de Barima el mismo dia á las diez de la noche llegamos al Puerto de San Miguel.

Ytt. 24. Al amanecer embarcamos el Cazabe, y en aquellas mismas horas salimos del dho Puerto, y á las doze del dia llegamos al Presidio, y empezé á componer la Lancha.

Ytt. 25. Al amanecer compusimos las Armas, y hizimos los cartuchos del cañon, y de los Pedreros, y el mismo dia á las dos de la tarde nos largamos á nuestro destino con cuatro Indios tres mios, y uno que me dio el S<sup>o</sup> Comt<sup>o</sup> D<sup>o</sup> Anton<sup>o</sup> Perella, p<sup>r</sup> que los que saqué del Capital se fueron, y aunque el S<sup>r</sup> Comt<sup>o</sup> le escribió al Padre no las quiso mandar.

Ytt. 26. Amanecimos en las Islas de Portuguesas, y á las ocho del dia encantramos dos curiaras de Indios Guaraunos, y me dieron por noticia que estaba una Goleta pescando en la boca de Guayna, y spre. voy siguiendo mi derrota. El mismo dia á las onze de la noche dormimos en la buelta del Diablo.

23d day. Having left this capital by order of the Governor and Commander-General Don Miguel Marmion, steering in a straight course to the great mouth of the Orinoco, from thence passing into Barima creek, on the same day, at ten o'clock at night, we arrived at the Port of San Miguel.

24th day. At dawn we took on board the cassave, and at that same hour we left the said port, and at twelve o'clock we arrived at the Presidio, and I began to put the launch in order.

25th day. At daybreak we put our arms in order and made the cartridges for the cannon and for the swivel guns; and, on the same day, at two o'clock in the afternoon, we set forth on the way to our destination, with four Indians, three being mine and one being given to me by the Commander, Don Antonio Perella, because those whom I took out of the capital went away, and although the Commander wrote to the *father* he would not send them back.

26th day. Daybreak found us at the Portuguese islands, and at eight o'clock in the morning we found two *curiaras* belonging to Guarauno Indians, who informed me that there was a schooner fishing in the mouth of the Waini, and I steered straight ahead; the same day, at eleven o'clock at night, we slept at the Vuelta del Diablo.

**No. 438.**

Ytt. 27. A las tres de la mañana me lebé y á las ocho de la mañana encontramos quatro curiaras de Indios de la Mission de Morocure en la boca de Arature con el Artillero Jossef-Maria por mandado del S<sup>r</sup> Com<sup>o</sup> hiba el dho Artillero, y dos Indios Guaraunos llebaban de Pratico p<sup>a</sup> el dho caño que heran de una Rancheria de la boca, y me dieron por noticia que estaban tres negros á dentro biviendo con unos Indios, y por cuio motivo les impedi á que entrasen en ella hasta que yo no retornara mi viaje, y les quité los dos Indios para que fueran conmigo: El mismo dia á las tres de la tarde encontramos tres Indios caribes del Pueblo del Cumaco de la Mission de los Padres Capuchinos Cathalanes los quales me dijeron que habian bajado por las cavezeras del caño de Barima en cáscaras de palo á los quales no se les encontro Liz<sup>a</sup> niuguna, y preguntadoles por noticias del caño de Barima me dijeron que no habian visto nada: y no se les encontraron en su curiara nada mas de nueve Achas, y un Mapire de Zirumas, y el mismo dia dormimos en la punta de Cangrejo.

Ytt. 28. A las diez del dia me lebé, y á las dos de la tarde llegamos á la boca de *Macuro*, y estube aguardando las Marea para seguir mi destino y en este tiempo mande á buscar tres capitanejos que el uno vivia á dentro de *Amacuro* en las casas que heran de los caribes el tpo antepassado, y los otros dos vivian en la boca de la Mar entre el caño de Barima, y *Amaruco*, y los hice preguntar que si adentro de

27th day. At three o'clock in the morning I weighed anchor, and at eight o'clock we found four "curiaras" of Indians, belonging to the mission of Morocure at the mouth of the Arature, with the gunner, Josef Maria, by order of the Commander; the said gunner, went, with two Guarauno Indians as guides for said creek; they were from a hut on the mouth, and they informed me that there were three negroes inside living with some Indians, for which reason I forbade them to enter the place until my return from the trip, and I took the two Indians from them to accompany me. The same day, at three o'clock in the afternoon, we met three Carib Indians from the village of Cumaco of the mission of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers and they informed me that they had come down from the headwaters of the Barima creek in bark canoes, and no permit was found on them, and having asked them for news of the Barima creek they told me they had seen nothing, and nothing was found in the curiara but nine hatchets and one *Mapire de totumo* [water gourd] and that same night we slept at Cangrejo [crab] Point.

28th day. At ten o'clock in the morning I weighed anchor, and at two o'clock in the afternoon we arrived at the mouth of the Amacura, where I waited for the tide to go on my way; meanwhile I sent for the three chieftains, one of whom lived at Amacura in the dwellings that belonged to the Caribs in time past, and the other two lived at the mouth of the sea, between Barima creek and Amacura, and I ordered them

**No. 438.**

*Amaruco* havia Negros viviendo con Indios Caribes; y me dijeron que no, que aun caribes havia tampoco.

Ytt. 29. Me lebé á las onze de la noche, y á las dos de la madrugada me di fondo en la boca de Barima, y al Amanecer el dia despache al Patron en una curiara con ocho hombres de bijia caño arriba, y á las cinco de la tarde bolvio á bordo, y me dijo que no havia visto nada, solamente que havia visto una Piragua, y dos curiaras que estaban escondidas en el Monte á donde tenian la Rancheria unos Indios Guaraunos tierra adentro, y al cabo de poco rato aparecieron dos curiaras de Indios Guaraunos y hicimos venir uno abordo, y me dijeron que heran Indios de Sacopana que huyendo de los Indios Caribes, y que se hallaban dentro del caño de Barima, y Amacuro cerca de tres mil Indios huyendo del rigor tan grande de Orinoco, y preguntado por el Interprete Indio de la misma Nacion llamado Afortunado, que si en el Rio de Barima havia Barcos de alguna Nacion ó algunos Negros viviendo con los Indios en el monte dijo: que no: que solamente en Guayna entraban Goletas de Demeraria, y Esquivo á Pesqueria, y a cortar Timate para Cobijar, y Fabricar sus casas.

30. Dormimos en la boca de Mura.

1° de Julio. A las cinco de la mañana atravezamos á la boca de Guayma y visitandola toda no se ha encontrado nada mas que adonde estuvieron les Olandeses pescando,

to be asked whether there were any negroes living at Amacura with Carib Indians and they said there were none, nor even any Carib Indians there.

29th day. I weighed anchor at eleven o'clock at night, and at two o'clock in the morning I anchored at the mouth of the Barima, and at daybreak I sent the coxswain in a *curiara*, with eight scouts, up the creek, and at five o'clock in the afternoon he returned, saying that all he had seen was one dug-out and two *curiaras* concealed in the bushes, where some Guarauano Indians had a hut inland; and a short time after that some Guarauano Indians appeared in two *curiaras* and we made them come on board, and they told me that they were Indians from Sacupana fleeing from the Carib Indians, and that on Barima creek and Amacuro there were about 3,000 Indians fleeing from the severity (the floods?) of the Orinoco, and being asked by the Indian interpreter of the same nation, named Afortunado, as to whether there were any vessels of any nation on the river Barima or any negroes living with Indians in the woods, he replied that there were none, and that only in Waini did any schooners enter from Demerara and Essequibo for fishing purposes and to cut *timite* to cover and build their dwellings.

30th day. We slept in the mouth of the Mura.

1st day of July. At five o'clock in the morning we crossed to the mouth of the Waini, and after visiting every part of it nothing was found but the places where the Dutch

**No. 438.**

y salando Pescado, (y vino bien con lo que dijo el Indio), que el dia último que habian estado dos Goletas cargando Timite y una Pescando, y que se habian ido; y pregunté á Silvestre Rodriguez haver si sabrá otra parte alguna donde se podia lograr el encargo que le hicieron, y respondió que no pues havian dicho los Capitanejos de Amacuro que adentro no habia negros ni caribes, que desde que sacaron los caribes que mandaron á sacar los de esta capital desde entonces que no habia ninguno, y el mismo me regresé á la capital.

2. Sali de Guayna y vine al caño de Barima.

3. A las cinco de la tarde me largué de la boca de Barima, y el mismo dia á la tarde vinieron quatro curiaras de Guaraumo á bordo que venian de buscar cangrejos, y dijeron que sus Capitanejos estaban aprontando para venir á esta Capital, y pregunte otra vuelta haver si sabian de algunos negros que estaban en Amacuro ó si sabian si estaban en otros algunos caños cercanos; dijeron que no: que solamente unos dias atras havian bajado unos olandeses con unos Poytos á las cabeceras de Barima; y que ya se los habian llevado á Essequibo: el mismo dia á las siete de la noche me largue de la dicha boca.

4. Amaneci en la boca de Aratures, y despache al patron con la curiara por el caño arriba, con gente á una rancheria de Guaraunos que habia adentro,—y mande que me

were fishing and salting fish (and this agreed with the information given by the Indians), and that the last day of the month there were two schooners loading "timite" and one fishing, and that they had gone; and I asked Silvestre Rodriguez whether he might know of any other place where we might fulfill the commission entrusted to us, and he answered that he did not, for the chieftains of Amacuro had said that there were no negroes there, neither Caribs; that those that were in this capital were ordered to be taken away, and since then there had been none, and on that same day I returned to the capital.

2d day. I left Waini and came to Barima creek.

3d day. At five o'clock in the afternoon I sailed from the mouth of the Barima, and on the same day in the afternoon there came some Guaraunos in four *curiaras*, who were returning from crabbing, and they said that their chiefs were making ready to come to this capital. I enquired once again whether they knew of any negroes dwelling in Amacura, or whether they knew if there were any in the neighboring creeks, and they said no, that only some days previous some Hollanders had come down with a few Poytos to the head-waters of the Barima, and that they had taken them to Essequibo; that same day, at seven o'clock in the evening, I sailed away from said mouth.

4th day. At daybreak I was at the mouth of the Arature, and I despatched the coxswain up the creek in a *curiara*, manned with some sailors, to a hut of Guaraunos,

**No. 438.**

trujieran el Capit<sup>a</sup>. á bordo, y vino con él á las onze del dia, y quando estuvo á bordo, se le hizo preguntar haver si en Arature o en Amacuro ú en otros caños inmediatos habian algunos negros viviendo con la Nacion Cariba, y responde á que no que nunca lo habian oido ni visto: y en las mismas horas segui mi destino, y dormi en la pasa de Juncos.

5°. A las cuatro de la mañana me lebé, y vine á dormir al caño de Loran por no haber tenido viento.

6°. A las cuatro de la mañana me lebé y vine á dormir á la boca de Sacopana.

7. Por la mañana despache al Patron á una rancheria de Indios que habia adentro del caño á saber algunas noticias donde las encontró bacias y se bolvio á bordo, y luego me puse á la vela para la capital, y el mismo dia dormi en la vuelta de la Portugueza porque se calmó el viento.

8. Me levé á las cinco de la mañana y vine al Presidio á las ocho de la noche.

Dia nueve—me mantuve esperando las cartas del Sr. Comt<sup>a</sup>.

Dia diez.

Dia onze. Salimos del Presidio, y venimos á amanecer á la boca de Caroni.

El dia doce. Subimos á San-Joaquin en busca de un poco de tabaco que se hallaba en el Puerto para la Administracion, el mismo dia dormimos en la dicha boca: el dia trece al amanecer me levé para la Capital.

that was inland, with orders to bring the chief to me, and they returned with him at eleven o'clock in the day, and when he came on board I had him interrogated as to whether he knew of any negroes living with Carib Indians either at Arature or Amacura, or other nearby creeks, and he answered that he had neither seen nor heard of any; and at the same hour I went on my way and slept in the *Pasa de Juncos*.

5th day. At four o'clock in the morning I weighed anchor and slept that night in Loran creek, as there was no wind.

6th day. At four o'clock in the morning I weighed anchor and slept at the mouth of the Sacupana.

7th day. In the morning I sent off the coxswain to an Indian hut, which was up the creek, to get information. He found them empty, and came back on board, and then I set sail for the capital, and that same night I slept off the Portugueza, because the wind died out.

8th day. I weighed anchor at five o'clock in the morning and arrived at the Presidio at eight at night.

9th day. I awaited letters from the Commandant.

10th day.

11th day. We left the Presidio and arrived at daybreak at the mouth of the Caroni.

12th day. We went up to San Joaquin for some tobacco, which was at the port for the Administration. The same day we slept in said mouth.

13th day. I weighed anchor at daybreak, bound for the capital.

**No. 438.**

Es copia á la letra del original de su contenido que queda en el Archivo de la Secretaria de este Gobierno.

Guayana 16. de Septiembre de 1785.

(firmado) MARMION.  
(Rúbrica.)

A true copy of the original, which is on file in the archives of the office of the Government Secretary.

Guayana, September 16, 1785.

(signed) MARMION.  
(Rubric.)

**No. 463.**

**Letter from Luis Antonio Gil in Guayana to Pedro de Lerena, dated March 10,\* 1792, as to the Trouble with the Indians on the Cuyuni.**

[Printed from a certified copy of the original in the Antiguos Archivos de la Capitanía General é Yntendencia de Caracas.]

No. 44.

El Gob<sup>o</sup> Int<sup>o</sup> de Guay<sup>na</sup>.

Aviza la novedad ocurrida en el Rio Coyuni y el levantamiento ó fuga q<sup>e</sup> han hecho los Indios del Pueblo de Cura, uno de los que Doctrinan los P. P. Capuchinos Catalanes.

Por la copia que adjunto dirixo á V. S. como lo executo á la capitanía General reconocerá la novedad ocurrida en el Rio Coyuni, que desagua al de la Colonia de Esquibo, la noticia de la reunion de los Indios provistos de Armas de fuego, y abrigados de una Estacada en la Isla, mas abajo de la boca del Rio Masuruni, que se le une al de Coyuni necesita confirmacion; pero no obstante a precaucion, y por lo que pueda suceder, he dado mis providencias de auxiliar en el modo posible que permiten las circunstancias presentes, á aquel Sargento Commandante que está destacado en la casa fuerte ó Garita del Rio Coyuni; encargándole se asegure de la certidumbre del asunto; pues de realizarse es preciso reforzar aquel Puesto, por ser una abenida abierta

No. 44.

The temporary Governor of Guiana, giving information of the trouble which occurred on the river Cuyuni and of the revolt or flight of the Indians of the town of Cura, which belongs to the spiritual jurisdiction of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers.

By the copy which I hereby send to Your Excellency, as I also do to the Captaincy-General, Your Excellency will be informed of the trouble occurring on the river Cuyuni, which flows into that of the Colony of Essequibo; the news of the gathering of the Indians provided with fire-arms and protected by an entrenchment of stakes on the island further down on the mouth of the river Mazaruni, which flows into the Cuyuni, needs confirmation; but, notwithstanding, for the sake of precaution and for fear of what might happen, I have given my instructions for aiding, in case of need, as far as present circumstances will allow, the Sergeant Commander, who is detailed in the stronghold or sentry-post on the Cuyuni river, charging him to ascertain the truth

\* Erroneously printed 1 in Venezuelan Case, vol. 2, p. 480.



**No. 463.**

para la Colonia de Esquivo y paso para los fugitivos y para los que no lo son, y transitan aqual Rio; y debe desbanezarse, tambien es indispensable meditar el modo mejor, y mas seguro de la subsistencia de la tropa que lo guarnece, como sobre esto le hago una insinuacion al P<sup>o</sup> Prefecto de los Capuchinos Catalanes de estas Misiones, en carta de 22 de Febrero ultimo.

Aunque el mismo Preft<sup>o</sup> me avisa la fuga de los Indios del Pueblo de Cura sin decirme el num<sup>o</sup> des Almas, se ha sabido por particulares noticias, que pasaban de ochocientos con algunos que se les agregaron de otras dos Misiones inmediatas, habiendo marchado en seguimiento de estas Gentes el expresado Sarg<sup>o</sup> Bommon con el auxilio de los vecinos de la villa de Upata que le remitió el Tent<sup>o</sup> y los Milicianos de esta Capital que pudo recoger de pronto de los que hacen el servicio en aquella escolta dispersos en diferentes y distintos Pueblos, hasta ahora no se sabe con que resultas ha regresado.

En este estado se hallan las noticias que comprehenden las cartas avisos de la adjunta Copia, y segun respectivamente se fueren realizando ó desvaneciendo, pasaré a V. S. las mas puntualmente.

Dios guarde a V. S. muchos años.

Guayana 10 de Marzo de 1792.

(firmado) Luis Ant<sup>o</sup> Jil,  
(Rúbrica.)

of the matter. In case our fears are realized it will be necessary to strengthen that stronghold, it being an open avenue for the Colony of the Essequibo and a road for the fugitives and for others who are not fugitives and wish to travel by the river to leave the place; it is also indispensable that some means should be devised for the subsistence of the troops who man this place, and to this end I make a suggestion to the Father Prefect of the Catalonian Capuchins of these Missions, in a letter dated February 22d ult.

Although the same Prefect advised me of the flight of the Indians from the village of Cura, without informing me of their numbers, I have had private information that there were over eight hundred of them, together with others who joined them from two other Missions in the vicinity—Sergeant Bommon having set out to pursue the fugitives, aided by such of the residents of the town of Upata as could be collected at that time by the lieutenant, and also the militia of this capital, and who served as a guard, dispersed in various distant towns. Up to the present time I know nothing of the results of the steps they have taken.

This is the state of affairs, as shown by the letters, copy of which is enclosed, and according as events transpire I shall keep Your Excellency promptly advised of the same.

God save Your Excellency many years.

Guiana, March 10, 1792.

(signed) Luis Ant<sup>o</sup> Jil.  
(Rubric.)

## No. 464.

**Letter from the Superintendent-General Sub-Delegate of the Royal Treasury, Don Pedro de Lerena, to the Temporary Governor of Guayana, Don Luis Antonio Gil, dated Caracas, April 11, 1792.**

[Printed from a certified copy of the original in the Antiguos Archivos de la Capitania General é Yntendencia de Caracas.]

Por la representación de V. S. de 10 de Marzo ult<sup>o</sup> N<sup>o</sup> 14 y copia de los avisos dirigidos por el Prefecto de las misiones de Capuchinos de esa Prov<sup>a</sup> y Sarg<sup>t</sup> Comand<sup>te</sup> destacado en la Garita del rio Cuyuni, he visto la fuga ejecutada por los Indios del Pueblo de Cura y sus inmediatas Misiones hasta en num<sup>o</sup> de 800 o más personas, y espero que las acertadas providas que V. S. ha tomado para hacerlos restituir a sus respectivos domicilios, no se malogren, y tengan el buen éxito que apetece, pero para tranquilizar las inquietudes de esas gentes que viven en la oscuridad de su origen, con vendria mucho se esforzase V. S. á persuadir á algunas familias de Europeos o Criollos a que se estableciesen en los Pueblos de Indios á proporcion del num<sup>o</sup> de estos que habiere en cada uno de ellos, que el trato de aquellos les enseñe el idioma Español y las racionales xp<sup>na</sup>. costum bres de que Carecen.

Dios, &c.,

Caracas 11 de Ab<sup>l</sup> de 1792.

(Rúbrica)

S<sup>or</sup> Gob<sup>r</sup> Int<sup>o</sup> de la Prov<sup>a</sup> de Guayana.

By Your Excellency's note of March 10th ult., No. 44\*, and copies of notices addressed by the Prefect of the Missions of the Capuchins of that province, and the Sergeant Commandant detached to the fort of the river Cuyuni, I am in receipt of the information of the flight of the Indians of the village of Cura and the neighboring missions, in number 800 or more, and I hope that the wise provisions you have made for their restoration to their respective dwellings will meet with the success they so well deserve and is so much to be desired, but, in order to calm the anxiety of these people living in the obscurity of their origin, I would advise it as very expedient that Your Excellency should persuade some European families or creoles to establish themselves in the Indian towns in numbers in proportion with those in each one, to the end that, by contact with the former, they may learn the Spanish language and the Christian manners which they lack.

God, etc.

Caracas, April 11, 1792.

(Rubric)

To the Temporary Governor of the province of Guayana.

\* Document number 463 *supra*.

## No. 467.

Letter from the Intendant General of the Army and of the Royal Treasury to the President-Governor and Captain-General, dated Caracas, October 8, 1796.

[Printed from certified copy of original in the Antiguos Archivos de la Capitanía General é Yntendencia de Caracas.]

Incluyo a V. S. el exped<sup>te</sup> sre. la fundacion de la villa de Españoles en la Horqueta ó union de los Rios Cuyuni y Curiamo de la Prov<sup>a</sup> de Guayana al abrigo de una casa fuerte y un Pueblo de Indios Guaicas que con el objeto de imponerse del estado de dha fundacion me pide V. S. por oficio de 4. del pretente mes.

Dios, &c.

Caracas 8 de Oct<sup>a</sup> de 1796.

(Rúbrica)

S<sup>r</sup> Presid<sup>te</sup> Gob<sup>r</sup> y Cap<sup>a</sup> G<sup>l</sup>.

I enclose to Your Excellency the papers [*expediente*] regarding the establishment of the Spanish town on the fork or union of the rivers Cuyuni and Curumo, having for defense a stronghold or fort and a town of Guaica Indians, which Your Excellency asked of me for information regarding the condition thereof, in Your Excellency's official communication of the 4th of the present month.

God, etc.

Caracas, October 8, 1796.

(Rubric)

To the President-Governor and Captain-General.

[*Enclosure in above.*]

Mi más venerado Jefe:

En atención en que en este viaje se ha de concluir la casa fuerte y que han de quedar milicianos como actualmente se hallan cuatro, paso á que VS. me diga, si los bastimentos se han de bajar por cuenta de la Real Hacienda ó de los milicianos, en atención á que para bajar dichos víveres se han de tomar peones de estas misiones por no haberlos en el Cuyuni, aunque me parece sería mui conveniente que á lo menos hubiesen algunas familias no tan sólo para los víveres sino para otra urgencia que se pueda ofrecer; pues los milicianos que están en dicho destino están mui espuestos á muchas contingencias, así de víveres como de otro, por estar mui distantes de cualquier auxilio, y más no teniendo á

My most venerated Chief:

Considering that the block-house must be finished this time, and that there must remain militia-men, there being at present four, I beg Your Worship to inform me whether the provisions are to be brought down at the expense of the Royal Treasury or at that of the militia-men, the transportation of the said provisions requiring peons from these missions as there are none in the Cuyuni, although it seems to me that it would be convenient to have here at least some families, not only for the provisions but for any other emergencies which might arise; for the militia-men thus employed are very much exposed to many contingencies with regard to victuals and in other respects, as they are very

**No. 467.**

quien poder mandar de correo: aunque por ahora no hay novedad, aunque se ha tenido noticia que en una isla que está más abajo de la boca del Maseroni están diferentes naciones de Yndios armados con armas de fuego y una estacada, pero pienso que se habrán armado para en caso que los vayan á coger.

Dios guarde á VS. muchos años.

Upata—29 de enero de 1792.

PEDRO TOMÁS BOMMON.

Señor Gobernador Don Luis Antonio Gil.

far from any assistance, and still more, not having any one to send as messenger; although for the present there is nothing particular, yet news has arrived that in an island which is below the mouth of the Maseroni, there are various nations of Indians armed with fire-arms and a stockade; but I believe that they must have armed themselves in apprehension of an attempt to catch them.

God preserve Your Worship many years.

Upata, January 29th, 1792.

PEDRO TOMÁS BOMMON.

To the Governor, Don Luis Antonio Gil.

*Reservada*—Órdenes y auxilios que se le han remitido al Bargo. Comte. del Rio Ouyuni por el Gobierno.

Conviene que con la mayor eficacia brevedad, y certidumbre en lo posible se asegure V. M. de la noticia que me ha comunicado en carta de 29 de enero último; de que en una isla que está más abajo de la boca de Masaruni están diferentes naciones de Yndios armados con armas de fuego y una estacada; pues en iguales circunstancias aunque falte razón positiva del caso no deben despreciarse sino mientras pueda realizarse la verdad del suceso, tomar todas aquellas providencias precautelativas de alguna sorpresa que intenten los Yndios sea en esas misiones ó en otra parte de la provincia, como de ordinario lo acostumbran; y es más de recelar cuando como V. M. me previene se hallan provistos de armas de fuego en contravención de las ordenanzas generales que nos rigen, y mucho más si se atiende con madura reflexión á la cualidad y cir-

*Private*—Orders and assistance sent by the Government to the Sergeant commanding the River Ouyuni.

It is convenient that with the greatest efficacy, brevity, and certainty, you should assure yourself of the information you have communicated to me in your letter of January 29th, ultimo, viz., that in an island which is below the mouth of the Mazaruni there are various nations of Indians armed with fire-arms and a stockade; for in such circumstances, although the facts have not been proved, and while the truth is being ascertained, no measures of precaution should be neglected, in provision of any surprise projected by the Indians against those missions, or against any other part of the province, as is generally their custom; and their is more reason for distrust when, as you tell me, they are provided with fire-arms in contravention of the general ordinances which govern us, and still more if serious attention is paid to the quality and circum-

**No. 467.**

cunstancias de unas naciones vagantes, que sin abrigo de otras más civilizadas no podrían ser habilitadas de semejante armamento, en las fronteras de nuestras posesiones, ó por mejor decir dentro de las nuestras mismas: consideraciones que en calidad de buena providencia y á fin de evitar cualesquiera sorpresa ó tumulto que pueda maquinarse contra nosotros me obligan á tomar la de remitir á V. M. por ahora 250 cartuchos de fusil con el Cabo veterano de milicias José Montanchez para municionar su gente y encargarle estrictamente que V. M. en persona pase á la casa fuerte del Cuyuni, donde subsistirá hasta segunda orden. Que tomando la gente que más á propósito le pareciere de los milicianos que se hallan de escolta en esas Misiones hasta el número de veinte plazas incluso los ocho que Ud. tiene y el expresado Cabo Montanchez, reunidos en aquel puesto continúen el servicio: las que mantendrá Ud. en observancia sin hacer de su parte hostilidad ni movimiento alguno sino en caso que lo ataquen sostener el puesto sobre la defensiva dando aviso de cualesquiera novedad que ocurra. Que absolutamente cierre V. M. el paso hacia la parte de Essequibo sea Yndios ú otras castas de gente, pero los que de aquella colonia suban á las Misiones procurará asegurarlos en la casa fuerte; los examinará con la mayor precaución y sutileza para venir en conocimiento del motivo, asunto ó negocios con que transitan; aprehenderá y embargará, cualesquiera generos, efectos ó frutos que conduzcan y con particular esmero los papeles, cartas ó libros que se les halle,

stances of these vagrant nations, which, if they were not protected by other more civilized ones, could not be provided with such armament on the frontiers of our possessions, or rather, within our own. By virtue of such considerations, and as a good measure, in order to avert any surprise or disorder which may be planned against us, I have decided to send you, for the present, 250 gun cartridges with the veteran militia corporal, José Montanchez, so as to supply your men, and strictly enjoin you to proceed personally to the Cuyuni blockhouse where you will remain until further orders. You will choose from among the militiamen on service in those missions, those you may deem fittest up to the number of twenty, including the eight you have and the aforesaid Corporal Montanchez, so that they continue their service assembled together in that place; and you will remain in observation, without committing, on your part, any act of hostility or making any movement whatever. In case of an attack, you will defend the place and give notice of anything new occurring. You will completely close the passage towards Essequibo, both to Indians and other kinds of people; but you will try to secure in the blockhouse those who come up from those colonies to the Missions; you will examine them with the greatest precaution and tact so as to become acquainted with the motive, matter, or business of their journey; you will seize whatever goods, effects or products they may carry, and particularly the papers, letters or books found upon them; and you will

**No. 467.**

haciendo V. M. el más prolijo escrutinio en el compartimiento de los buques, cajas, ropas, maletas y cualesquiera otra parte donde V. M. considere los puedan ocultar; de modo que por falta de diligencia no llegue el caso de pasarlos; de que le hago á V. M. responsable, sin que en ningún concepto en esta parte le admita excusa, disculpa ni pretexto alguno por fundado que sea. Que esté V. M., tanto de día como de noche, con la mayor vigilancia y adelantadas prevenciones como si de una hora á otra esperase algún golpe de manos del enemigo, para que por omisión ó descuido no suceda una desgracia mediante á que así lo dicta la razón y la prudencia en semejantes casos, mayormente conociendo V. M. por prácticas experiencias, las astutas traidoras asechanzas de los indios salvajes, y mucho más si son inducidos ó dirigidos por alguna oculta mano de distinta penetración que la suya; á este intento pues formará V. M. una estacada de palo á pique á modo de línea de circumbalación, en aquella distancia regular que le parezca, quedando en el centro la garita ó casa fuerte, dejando troneras, ó los claros suficientes para en un caso de ataque defenderse V. M. con la fusilería y rechazar al enemigo, que considero nunca será de fuerzas tan aventajadas que V. M. con honor de nuestras armas no pueda obligarles á desistir de su empeño; y también para que con la oscuridad de la noche no puedan incendiar la expresada garita ó casa fuerte. Todos los días mañana y tarde hará V. M. la descubierta por agua y tierra en distancia que le permita la fuerza de gente y las cir-

make the most minute search in all parts of the vessels, boxes, clothes, trunks, or wherever you think that they may have hidden them; so that the case may not occur that, for lack of diligence, they should pass them, for which I make you responsible, without admitting in any way, in this respect, any excuse, exculpation or pretext whatsoever, however well founded it may be. You will maintain, by day and by night the greatest vigilance and precaution, as if you were hourly expecting a sudden attack from the enemy, so that no omission or carelessness may be cause of a disaster; because it is so ordered by reason and prudence in such cases, and particularly when you know by practical experience the treacherous cunning and artifices of the savage Indians, the more so if they are led or directed by people of greater intelligence than theirs. To this effect, then, you will construct a wooden stockade as a line of circumvallation, at the distance you may deem suitable, having in the centre the block-house or strong-hold, and leaving loop-holes or sufficient spaces, in order that, in case of attack, you may defend yourself by musketry and repel the enemy, who, in my opinion, will never be so strong that you may not, for the honor of our arms, be able to oblige him to abandon his enterprise, and also for the purpose of preventing him from setting fire to the said block-house or strong-hold, under cover of the darkness of the night. Every day, morning and afternoon, you will send for water and earth, to the distance permitted by the force you may dispose of

**No. 467.**

cunstancias, pero nunca alejándose más que un tiro de cañon, y si alguna vez se retirasen con novedad que merezca atención tomará sus providencias á proporción según los accidentes y ocurrencias que aquí no se han podido preveer, atendiendo á su situación, caso y principal objeto de esa comision. Hasta aquí es pensado lo más crítico que pueda suceder según la noticia de V. M. y la propensión natural de los indios á novedades y su conocida inconstancia, pero si llega á desvanecerse ó salir incierta la noticia, siempre se mantendrá V. M. en la garita ó casa fuerte sea con el todo de la gente que se le ha señalado ó la que le parezca basta para el resguardo ó defensa de aquella avenida, manteniéndose siempre con aquella vigilancia y buena disposicion que si por el enemigo estuviese amenazado, dándome aviso de cuanto ocurra. Por separado prevendré á V. M. lo necesario por lo qe. respecta á los víveres y demás puntos concernientes á la subsistencia de la tropa de su mando y conclusion de la garita ó casa fuerte, por ser esta orden reservada y que no debe V. M. descubrir ni manifestar á persona alguna en ninguna parte ni en el todo de ella.

Dios guarde á V. M. mucho años.  
Guayana 17 de Febrero de 1792.

LUIS ANTONIO GIL.

Señor Sargento Comandante  
PEDRO TOMÁS BOMMÓN.

and by circumstances, but never further than a cannon-shot, and if it ever happen that your people are obliged to retire by circumstances worthy of attention, you will take measures proportionate to the accidents and occurrences which cannot be here foreseen, attending to the condition, case and principal object of that commission. Thus far, the most critical circumstances have been taken into consideration, in virtue of the information given by you and the natural propensity of Indians to surprises and their well known fickleness. But if the report proves to be groundless rumors you will always remain in the block-house or stronghold, either with all the force which has been assigned to you, or with such part as you may consider sufficient for the wardship and defence of that road; always maintaining vigilance and good order as if the place were threatened by the enemy, and giving me notice of all that occurs. I will communicate to you separately what is necessary concerning the provisions and other points relating to the subsistence of the troop under your orders, and to the conclusion of the block-house or stronghold, this being a confidential order which you must not disclose or intimate to any person whatever, either partly or totally.

God preserve you many years.

Guayana, February 17th, 1792.

LUIS ANTONIO GIL.

To the Sergeant Commander, Pedro Tomás Bommon.

**No. 467.**

J. M. J. Mi Co y R. P. Luis P. S.

Carta de aviso del Misionero del pueblo de Tupuquen al P. Profeta del levantamiento ò fuga que han hecho los indios del pueblo de Cura, situado á las márgenes d l río Yuruario, que se le reúne al Cuyuni.

Le hago este expreso para que dé aviso luego al P. Manuel de Castell-Tesot de que el viernes en la noche se fué toda la gente del pueblo de Cura, y el sábado al anocheecer vino el mismo miliciano de Cura á darme el aviso, después dice el soldado que volvieron algunos, que puede ser que no lleguen á veinte los que han quedado, estos que volvieron decían que se iban porque los del monte los querían matar al pueblo; estos son los motivos que dan por ahora. V. C. R. haga otro expreso en donde se hallare el P. Man' y le pueda mandar esa misma carta, hago este expreso hasta Upata para que no se entretenga la canoa, como acostumbran más que uno los mande por expreso, y lo más este mío que vaya hasta Altagracia para que le den luego las providencias que se pudieren. En esta misma data hago expreso á Bommon al Cuyuni para que pase á Cura con unos soldados.—*Vale.*

Tupuquen y Febrero 12 de 92.

(Firmado)

S. FR. LEOPOLDO DE BARZNA.

Carta de aviso del Padre Prefecto al Gobierno, y remisión del antecedente.

Con la que va adjunta V. S. verá la novedad que ocurre en esta Misión y como se ha levantado el pueblo de mayor número de almas que teníamos, como V. M. podrá

Letter from the Missionary of the village of Tupuquen to the Father Prefect, giving notice of the rising or flight of the Indians of the village of Cura, situated on the banks of the River Yuruario, which joins the Cuyuni.

Jesus Maria Joseph  
—My Dear and Reverend Father Luis, P. S.:

I send you this express so that you may inform Father Manuel de Castell-Tesot

that on Friday night all the people of the village of Cura went away, and on Saturday, at nightfall, the militiaman of Cura came himself to give me the news; and he further told me that a few had returned, that the persons who remained are perhaps not twenty in number, that the fugitives who returned said that they went away because those from the woods wanted to kill the people of the village; these are the reasons they give for the moment. Your Reverence may send another express wherever Father Manuel may be and can forward to him this same letter. I send this express as far as Upata in order that the letter may not be delayed, as usually happens with letters, although they be sent by express, and this one of mine shall go as far as Altagracia, so that all possible measures be immediately taken. On this same date I send an express to Bommon at the Cuyuni, so that he may proceed to Cura with some soldiers.—*Vale.*

Tupuquen, February 12th, '92.

S. FRAY LEOPOLD DE BARZNA.

Letter of notification from the Father Prefect to the Government, and transmission of the antecedent.

The enclosed will acquaint you with the event which has occurred in this Mission, and how there has been a rising of the village which,



**No. 467.**

ver en el censo general; y á punto fijo no se sabe el por qué, aunque se expresa en la carta, es creible habrá (Está roto el papel) he tomado las providencias que me han sido posibles para poder recoger los Indios, aunque dudo de lograr el fin por la poca fuerza y resguardo en que se encuentran nuestros pueblos.

Dios guarde á V. M. muchos años.  
Caroni, Febrero 16 de 92.

FRAY HERMENEGILDO DE WICH.

Señor Gobernador Comandante General é Intendente DON LUIS ANTONIO GIL.

of all of ours, contained the greatest number of souls, as you may see in the general census; and the reason why is not precisely known, for although, as it is expressed in the letter, it is credible that it may . . . [words wanting] . . . I have taken all possible measures in order to bring back the Indians, although I think I shall not succeed on account of the weak and unprotected condition of our villages:

God preserve you many years.

Caroni, February 16th, '92.

FRAY HERMENEGILDO DE WICH.

To the Governor Commandant-General and Intendant, Don Luis Antonio Gil.

Carta escrita por el Gobierno al Prefecto avisándole las providencias que ha tomado para la defensa y resguardo del Rio Cuyuni, (no se entiende).

El cabo Josef Montanchez con dos milicianos y un cajón de municiones para el Sargento Pedro Tomás Bommón, lo despacho en esta ocasión á quien se servirá V. P. R. mandar se le franquee el carruaje necesario para el pronto tránsito hasta su destino. Al Sargento Comandante Simón Denia le prevengo, que si el del Cuyuni Pedro Tomás Bommón le pidiere el auxilio de 12 á 16 hombres de los milicianos de la escolta de su mando, se los franquee sin retardo que atrase el real servicio y al mismo tiempo le advierto á Denia que en case mui urgente y de reconocida necesidad pida al Teniente de Upata el auxilio de gente que baste á remediar lo que ocurra, pues que el corto número de plazas de tropa veterana y mili-

Letter written by the Government to the Prefect, informing him of the measures taken for the defence and wardship of the River Cuyuni.

I hereby despatch the corporal Josef Montanchez, accompanied by two militiamen, and with a box of ammunition for Sergeant Pedro Tomás Bommon; and Your Reverend Paternity will be pleased to see that he is provided with the necessary means of conveyance, so that he may quickly reach his destination. I send orders to the Sergeant Commander, Simon Denia, that in case the Sergeant Commander of the Cuyuni, Pedro Tomás Bommon, should ask him for the aid of twelve or sixteen militiamen of the escort under his command, they are to be given to him without any delay which might hinder the royal service, and at the same time, I instruct Denia that in case of great emergency and of recog-

**No. 467.**

cias que escasamente hay para la diaria fatiga no me permite despachar desde esta capital más retuerzo que el expresado cabo y los dos soldados. Para proveer de víveres al Sargento Bommon y la gente de su mando en Cuyuni, es preciso se tome algún medio más seguro y menos falible, sobre cuyo particular puede V. P. R. prevenirle al Sargento Bommon para que se pongan de acuerdo, de qué modo, y por qué tiempos se hayan de hacer las remesas, con consideración á que un miliciano no tiene más prest que dos reales diarios, de que se ha de mantener y vestirse, de recargarles las conducciones que precisamente han de ser cotosas de modo, que además de no alcanzarles dos reales solos para su alimento, quedarán empeñados y vestidos como Adanes; por esto pues, Mi R. P. y porque el servicio de estas gentes resulta en utilidad y procomún de las Misiones de los naturales y de los Misioneros que los doctrinan, parece que no sería de extrañar que estos mismos en cuyo beneficio resulta el servicio, correspondiesen de algún modo por vía de justa equidad y por una especie de remuneración á lo menos en la moderación de los precios de víveres, sus trasportes y los carruajes en las marchas de los soldados, pues que lo permiten sin perjuicio de tercero los fondos del común: punto en que no dudo que parará V. P. R. la atención y deliberará lo conveniente sirviéndose darme aviso de la resulta.

Dios guarde á V. P. M. R. muchos años.

Guayana, 22 de Febrero de 1792.

(Firmado) LUIS ANTONIO GIL.

nized necessity, he is to ask from the Lieutenant of Upata the assistance of sufficient people for the remedying of the occurrence; because the scanty number of veteran troops and militia-men, which scarcely suffice for the daily routine service, does not allow me to send from this capital a greater re-inforcement than the aforesaid corporal and the two soldiers. In order to supply Sergeant Bommon with provisions and the men under his orders at Cuyuni, it is necessary to adopt surer and less fallible means, and in this respect, Your Reverend Paternity can communicate with Sergeant Bommon, so that both may agree as to the manner, and on what occasions remittances are to be made; bearing in mind that a militia-man has no more pay than two reals per day with which to feed and clothe himself, and if the transportation, which must be costly, be charged to them, not only will two reals alone be insufficient for their food, but they will run in debt and dress like Adam. On this account, my Reverend Father, and for the reason that the services of these people are profitable and of public utility to the Missions, to the natives, and to the missionaries who direct them, it would seem natural that the latter, who derive profit from the service, should, in equitable justice, make some return as a sort of remuneration, at least by moderation in the prices of provisions, their transportation and conveyance during the march of the soldiers; since the funds of the community allow this without prejudice to any one, Your Reverend Paternity will undoubtedly give attention to this point, deciding upon

No. 467.

M. R. P. Prefecto Fray Hermenegildo de Wich.

Contestación del Gobierno á la carta del P. Prefecto sobre avisos del levantamiento, ó fuga de los Indios del pueblo de Cura.

Con carta de V. P. R. de 16 del corriente recibí la en que en 12 del mismo le da á V. R. el P. Fr. Leopoldo de Barcelona la noticia de la fuga de los Indios del pueblo de Cura y las prontas providencias que ha tomado me persuado serán mui adaptadas á las circunstancias del caso, I. V. R. puede estarlo que de mi parte estoy tomando con toda actividad y eficacia las que considero convenientes sobre que comunicaré á V. R. sin pérdida de tiempo; mientras tanto espero se servirá despachar expresos á la ligera á fin de inquirir y asegurarse tanto del paradero de los fugitivos cuanto el motivo y causas que han tenido para semejante resolución; pediré V. R. informes á los misioneros de las fronteras y á cualesquiera otro sugeto que tuviere por conveniente para instruirse circunstancialmente de lo que sucede y descubrir si acaso hay algún resorte oculto que los induce cómo y de dónde nace el principio de esta causa y qué agente la mueve; encargando V. P. M. R. á quienes pida sus informes, lo ejecuten con la mayor eficacia, prudencia, disimulo y prontitud, de modo que pueda descubrirse la verdad si fuese posible; y de todo V. P. R. me pa-

what is most convenient, and will please inform me of the result.

God preserve Your Very Reverend Paternity many years.

Guayana, February 22d, 1792.

LUIS ANTONIO GIL.

To the Most Reverend Father Prefect, Fray Hermenegildo de Wich.

Answer of the Government to the letter of the Father Prefect, relating to news of the rising or flight of the Indians of the village of Cura.

Together with the letter of Your Reverend Paternity of the 16th of the present month, I received the letter dated the 12th of the same month, wherein the Father, Fray Leopoldo de Barcelona, gives Your Reverence news of the flight of the Indians from the village of Cura, and the prompt measures you have taken are, I am sure, well adapted to the circumstances of the case. Your Reverence can also be sure that, on my part, I am taking, with all activity and efficiency, those which I consider convenient, and respecting which I will inform Your Reverence without loss of time. Meanwhile, I hope you will quickly send expresses for the purpose of inquiring about, and making sure of the whereabouts of the fugitives, as well as the motive and cause to which is due their resolution. Your Reverence will ask for information from the missionaries of the frontiers and from any other individual you may think fit, for the purpose of learning circumstantially what is happening, and of discovering if there be any secret influence bearing upon the Indians, how and where is the origin of these circumstances, and by what agent they are set at work. Your Very

**No. 467.**

sará puntuales avisos sin pérdida de instantes para yo en su vista y según las circunstancias más ó menos gravantes exijan dar las providencias más conformes al mejor servicio del Rey.

Dios guarde á V. P. M. R. muchos años.

Guayana, 22 de Febrero de 1792.

(Firmado) LUIS ANTONIO GIL.

M. R. P. Prefecto FR. HERMENEGILDO DE WICH.

Reverend Paternity will enjoin the persons, from whom information is required, to proceed with the greatest efficacy, prudence, caution, and promptness, so that the truth may be discovered if possible. Of all these proceedings, Your Reverend Paternity will send me prompt notice, without losing a moment, so that upon receiving such notice, and according to the circumstances, more or less serious, the most suitable measures may be taken for the better service of the King.

God preserve Your Very Reverend Paternity many years.

Guayana, February 22d, 1792.

LUIS ANTONIO GIL.

To the Most Reverend Father Prefect, Fray Hermenegildo de Wich.

Es copia literal de las cartas originales y de su contenido.

(Firmado) Gil.

A true copy of the original letters and their contents.

Gil.

**No. 468.**

**Letter from the President-Governor and Captain-General to the Intendant General of the Army and Royal Treasury, dated Caracas, October 14, 1796.**

[Printed from a certified copy of the original in the Antiguos Archivos de la Capitanía General é Yntendencia de Caracas.]

Devuelvo á V. S. el expediente que me incluyó á su oficio del dia 8 sobre la fundación de una Villa de Españoles y casa fuerte en la Horqueta, ó unión de los Rios Cuyuni y Curumo in la Prov<sup>a</sup> de Guayana, que solicité por el dia 4.

Dios gne. á V. S. m<sup>a</sup> a<sup>a</sup> Caracas 14 de Octub<sup>o</sup> de 1796.

(Firmado) JOACHIN DE ZUBILLAGA.

(Rúbrica.)

S<sup>r</sup>. Ynt.<sup>e</sup> gral de Ext<sup>o</sup> y R<sup>o</sup> H<sup>o</sup>s.

I hereby return to Your Excellency the papers [*expediente*] which your Excellency enclosed in the note of the 8th in regard to the establishment of a Spanish town and stronghold on the fork or union of the rivers Cuyuni and Curumo, in the province of Guayana, which I asked for on the 4th inst.

God save Your Excellency many years.

Caracas, October 14, 1796.

(signed) JOACHIN DE ZUBILLAGA.

(Rubric.)

To the Intendant-General of the Army and Royal Treasury.

## No. 471.

## Spanish troops in Guiana in 1800 and where stationed.

[Printed from a certified copy of the original in the Antiguos Archivos de la Capitanía General é Yntendencia de Caracas.]

ESTADO QUE MANIFIESTA LA FUERTE EFECTIVA DE LA TROPA QUE SE HALLA SOBRE LAS ARMAS OY DIA DE LA FECHA EN ESTA PROVINCIA DE GUAYANA, Y DESTINOS DONDE SE HALLAN.

No.

Compañías.	En la Capital.						En las Fortalezas de Antigua Guayana.						En Rio Negro.			En Sacau-pana.			En el Cuyuni.			Parime.	Caura.	Misiones.	total.			
	Capa.	Fenta.	Subs.	Sergs.	Tambo.	Cabos y solda.	total.	Capa.	Tenta.	Subs.	Sergs.	Tambo.	Cabos, y solda.	total.	Subs.	Sergs.	Cabos y solda.	total.	Sergs.	Cabos y solda.	total.	Cabos y solda.	Cabos.	Solda.		Gral.		
Compa. del R. Opó. de Artillería.....	1					1	1	1	1		2	1	26	29			1	1								31		
Compañías veteranae.....	2	1	1	1		1	2	1	2	1	3	5	63	70	1	2	16	18	1	10	11	1		9	1	2	114	
Compa de Milicias de Blancos.....	1			3	1	64	68						2	2												70		
Idem de Pardos.....							1	1		3	1	90	94								8	8				102		
Idem de Morenos.....							1	1		2		38	40													40		
<b>totales.....</b>	<b>4</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>4</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>66</b>	<b>71</b>	<b>4</b>	<b>5</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>10</b>	<b>7</b>	<b>218</b>	<b>236</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>2</b>	<b>17</b>	<b>19</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>10</b>	<b>11</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>8</b>	<b>9</b>	<b>9</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>2</b>	<b>367</b>

Guayana, 14 de Octubre, de 1800.

FRANCISCO. PIRAZES, V. B.  
FRANCISCO OBOZCO.

Es copia de su original. Guayana, 16 de Octubre, de 1800.

(Firmado) Ynciarte.  
(Róbricas).

[Translation.]

STATEMENT OF THE EFFECTIVE FORCE OF THE TROOPS IN ARMS AT THIS PRESENT DAY AND DATE IN THE PROVINCE OF GUIANA, AND WHERE STATIONED.

No. 2.

Companies.	In the Capital.						In the Fortresses of Old Guayana.						In Rio Negro.			In Sacu-pana.			In the Cuyuni.			Parime.	Caura.	Missions.	Grand Total.			
	Captains.	Lieuts.	Ensigns.	Sergeants.	Drummers.	Corp. and soldiers.	Total.	Captains.	Lieuts.	Ensigns.	Sergeants.	Drummers.	Corp. and soldiers.	Total.	Ensigns.	Sergeants.	Corp. and soldiers.	Total.	Sergeants.	Corp. and soldiers.	Total.	Corp. and soldiers.	Corp.	Soldiers.		Grand Total.		
Co. of R. Co of Arty.	1					1	1	1	1		2	1	26	29			1	1								31		
Co. of veterans....	2	1	1	1		1	2	1	2	1	3	5	63	70	1	2	16	18	1	10	11	1		9	1	2	114	
Co. of white militia	1			3	1	64	68						2	2												70		
Co. of quadroons							1	1		3	1	90	94								8	8				102		
Co. of mulattoes...							1	1		2		38	40													40		
<b>Total.....</b>	<b>4</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>4</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>66</b>	<b>71</b>	<b>4</b>	<b>5</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>10</b>	<b>7</b>	<b>218</b>	<b>236</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>2</b>	<b>17</b>	<b>19</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>10</b>	<b>11</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>8</b>	<b>9</b>	<b>9</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>2</b>	<b>367</b>

Guayana, October 14, 1800.

A copy of its original. Guayana, October 16, 1800.  
(Signed) Ynciarte.

(Rubric.)

FRANCISCO PIRAZES, Viced.  
FRANCISCO OBOZCO.

